

THE GREAT RULER

BOOK 03

Heavenly Silkworm Potato

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

The Great Ruler

(大主宰)

by

Heavenly Silkworm Potato

Tian Can Tu Dou

(天蚕土豆)

Synopsis

The Great Thousand World. It is a place where numerous planes intersect, a place where many clans live and a place where a group of lords assemble. The Heavenly Sovereigns appear one by one from the Lower Planes and they will all display a legend that others would desire as they pursue the road of being a ruler in this boundless world.

In the Endless Fire Territory that the Flame Emperor controls, thousands of fire blazes through the heavens.

Inside the Martial Realm, the power of the Martial Ancestor frightens the heaven and the earth.

At the West Heaven Temple, the might of the Emperor of a Hundred Battles is absolute.

In the Northern Desolate Hill, a place filled with thousands of graves, the Immortal Owner rules the world.

A boy from the Northern Spiritual Realm comes out, riding on a Nine Netherworld Bird, as he charges into the brilliant and diverse world. Just who can rule over their destiny of their path on becoming a Great Ruler? In the Great Thousand World, many strive to become a Great Ruler.

Acknowledgement

All rights reserved.

English Translation by Thyaeria @ WuxiaWorld

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ Hasseno Blog

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

Chapter 201 – Breakthrough

Mu Chen sat at the bottom of the lake for half a day as he waited for the audience to disperse. Then, he quietly emerged and glanced around. Once he'd confirmed that Su Ling'Er had departed, he was relieved.

"It seems that I can't remain here any longer."

Mu Chen shook his head helplessly. Although he'd managed to deal with Su Ling'Er today, he'd completely angered her. Once she recovered, she'd probably go on a rampage. When that happened, he'd be in trouble once she appeared again.

Moreover, Mu Chen had already completed his Spirit Energy Fusion cultivation. There wasn't any meaning to him cultivating at the bottom of this lake. Therefore, he needed to find another cultivation location, and prepare himself as he broke through to the Heavenly Fusion Stage!

As he'd fought constantly against powerful opponents, Mu Chen was aware of just how large of a gap there was between the Spirit Stage and the Heavenly Fusion Stage. If it wasn't for the fact that he possessed various techniques, he wouldn't have been able to defeat all those enemies.

But even so, he could still faintly feel the powerlessness within him. Therefore, he needed to breakthrough to the Heavenly Fusion Stage as well. When that happened, it would be a lot easier for him to deal with an opponent at the Heavenly Fusion Stage.

If Mu Chen was at the Heavenly Fusion Stage, there would be no need for him to use the sort of means to deal with the situation that he had today. Although it might not be easy to defeat Su Ling'Er, the latter wouldn't be able to obtain the upper-hand against him, even if she were to use a Middle Rank Spiritual Artifact.

Therefore, it was necessary for him to advance to the Heavenly Fusion Stage.

As he thought about this, Mu Chen decided not to hesitate, and directly burst out from the lake. He then headed further into the depths of the Spirit Convergence Array. He needed to find another place to cultivate in peace.

Because Su Ling'Er had come searching for him earlier, he must've left a few trails previously. Therefore, after the previous incident, Mu Chen was quite careful, and did his best to avoid other individuals. He focused specifically on moving throughout the calm mountains and forests.

After approximately half an hour, Mu Chen had finally decided on the place where he'd cultivate. It was the summit of a hidden mountain. The summit wasn't quite visible, and was covered with trees.

Mu Chen's figure descended and landed on the isolated summit. This place was relatively close to the depths of the Spirit Convergence Array. Therefore, the Spiritual Aura of the world was exceptionally dense. Spiritual Mist would emerge from time to time, and was quite a refreshing sight.

Mu Chen glanced around the isolated peak, before he drilled a cave into the edge of a steep cliff. He cleared up the place slightly, before he sat down cross-legged.

Once he sat down cross-legged, his expression gradually became dignified. He knew that it wasn't easy to breakthrough to the Heavenly Fusion Stage, even if he'd made preparations for it.

A clump of white gas was slowly exhaled from Mu Chen. He closed his eyes, and the Spiritual Energy fluctuations that were emitted from his body retracted slightly.

Mu Chen didn't attempt to breakthrough to the Heavenly Fusion Stage immediately. This was because he knew that it was

completely meaningless. He'd reached the peak of the Spirit Stage a while ago, and only needed an opportunity to breakthrough. But sometimes, it was this opportunity that stopped individuals from passing through the door to the Heavenly Fusion Stage.

He slowly cleared his mind of the thoughts of a breakthrough, and allowed his state of his mind to become calm. At the same time, he began to circulate the Great Pagoda Art, and to absorb the dense Spiritual Aura within the world.

At this moment, the Spirit that was sitting above Mu Chen's Spiritual Energy light wheel had also sat down cross-legged. It formed a few cultivation seals with its hands. The so-called Heavenly Fusion Stage was for one to fuse with both heaven and earth. However, the fusion wasn't using one's own body, but their Spirit.

Only by allowing one's Spirit to breakthrough the shackles of the body, and by fusing with the heavens and earth, would one be able to manipulate the Spiritual Aura within the world and become a genuine Heavenly Fusion Stage powerhouse.

Mu Chen's Spirit gradually calmed down and entered a state of selflessness. His consciousness drifted around within his body, yet whenever it attempted to break through his body, it was hampered.

However, Mu Chen wasn't anxious about this obstruction. He maintained a peaceful state of mind, and allowed his consciousness to drift around. He didn't deliberately try to find a feeling to break through the restraints of his body.

He knew that he would only be able to break through the restraints of his body when that feeling emerged. Otherwise, it would be useless no matter how much he struggled.

Right now, there was no need for him to be anxious. He only had to wait quietly.

Just as Mu Chen was immersing himself in his cultivation, and was searching for the mysterious feeling needed to breakthrough the shackles of his body, Su Ling'Er had returned to the island located at the center of the lake grumpily. She pushed open the door and ignored the gentle girl who was staring at her in surprise. She stomped up the stairs angrily, and rushed into her own room. Then, her petite body rolled around as she hammered her bed.

"Bastard! Bastard! Bastard!"

Su Ling'Er's face was completely red under her blanket. She grit her teeth as she cursed constantly. She still felt an occasional pain from her butt, causing her to feel slightly embarrassed.

She never expected that Mu Chen would actually do such an act!

"Bastard, I won't forgive you!

Su Ling'Er gritted her teeth. At this moment, she seemed like a tiny wolf, and she couldn't wait to tear Mu Chen into pieces.

"Who can't you forgive?"

A gentle laugh resounded out. Su Ling'Er hurriedly threw her blanket aside, and noticed Su Xuan chuckling nearby as she stared at her.

"N...Nothing." Su Ling'Er's face was bright red as she quickly responded. She didn't dare mention that she was spanked by Mu Chen. It was far too embarrassing!

"Didn't you say earlier that you would search for that freshman called Mu Chen? How is it? Did you find him?" Su Xuan smiled.

"N...No, I didn't find him." Su Ling'Er shook her head. Although she gnashed her teeth to the point where they were about to shatter, she had to save herself a little bit of face.

Su Xuan stared at Su Ling'Er for a moment. This was a bit strange. Just earlier, she'd been constantly muttering about how to trouble Mu Chen. Yet, right now, she'd acted quite honest.

“What happened to you?” Su Xuan noticed that Su Ling’Er’s posture was strange, and that she’d tilted her body. Her clothes revealed her graceful curves, but it all seemed somewhat unnatural.

Su Ling’Er hurriedly sat up. However, once her butt made contact with the bed, a stinging pain emerged. Tears filled her eyes. However, she endured the pain as she cursed Mu Chen.

“If there’s any problems, feel free to find your sister.” Su Xuan felt that Su Ling’Er’s actions were quite bizarre. However, she didn’t think much about it, and rubbed her sister’s head. Towards this sister of hers, she was always quite protective.

“I know. Hurry and leave. I can deal with my own matters. Isn’t that what you said, sister?” Su Ling’Er pouted. She would only say such words at this sort of moment.

Su Xuan shook her head as she left the room.

Once Su Xuan had left, Su Ling’Er buried her face into her pillow and rolled around. An angry voice rang out from her clenched teeth.

“Mu Chen, I won’t forgive you!”

Although Su Ling’Er was filled with rage, she recovered on the following day. She immediately rushed back into the Spirit Convergence Array, and headed towards the lake. But once she’d arrived, she noticed that Mu Chen had already disappeared, and not even a trace of him could be found.

“Bastard! Bastard!”

In the sky, Su Ling’Er stomped down with her foot. She was fully prepared today, and had brought another valuable Middle Rank Spiritual Artifact, as well as the scarlet whip with her. She planned on capturing Mu Chen and getting her revenge, yet, she’d never imagined that the cunning fellow would actually run away from this place.

“AHHHHH! I don’t believe that you can hide from me forever!”

Su Ling’Er swung her hands around angrily, and caused massive waves to form on the surface of the lake. The students, who were dizzy from the waves, had emerged from the lake. Once they saw that it was Su Ling’Er however, they suddenly shrank back, and didn’t dare to say anything.

Su Ling’Er ignored them and glanced around. Then, she rushed off in another direction. From her appearance, it seemed that she wouldn't stop until she’d managed to capture Mu Chen.

While Su Ling’Er was searching for Mu Chen angrily, the latter had been cultivating quietly and calmly within a cave. At this moment, Mu Chen’s body was completely motionless, and even his breathing was quite weak. It was as if he was gravely injured and was about to die. However, if one were to sense carefully, they would notice that hidden underneath his current facade, was a burning and youthful vitality.

Mu Chen was currently experiencing the wonders of breaking through the shackles of the body. Everything in the outside world seemed to be blocked off by him. At this moment, he was completely immersed in his cultivation.

Time passed while Mu Chen continued this peaceful cultivation. In a blink of an eye, almost a month had passed.

During this month, Mu Chen had basically cultivated the entire time. He would utilize his Spirit to sense the world as he attempted to let it break through his body’s shackles.

And under his calm state of mind as he cultivated, results had gradually emerged. His consciousness would drift around his body, yet it would occasionally break through his body’s shackles. When it occurred, a mysterious, yet memorable feeling emerged within Mu Chen’s heart...

After experiencing this feeling to a certain extent, Mu Chen

finally opened his eyes. A profound feeling flashed through his black eyes.

He gently brushed aside the thin layer of dust on his clothes. At this moment, a faint Spiritual Mist had emerged atop his head. And within this Spiritual Mist, there was a palm-sized Spirit that slowly appeared. Then, it slowly sat down on Mu Chen's head.

In the instant that this Spirit had emerged, Mu Chen's body had trembled. The world in front of him seemed to have changed — as if it had changed from being quite unfamiliar, to being quite close to him...

Bang!

All of a sudden, countless Spiritual Auras within the world swarmed over towards him. It was as if there was a stream of Spiritual Aura that had entered this cave. In the end, it entered Mu Chen's body as he sat quietly.

In that instant, the Spiritual Energy fluctuations emitted from him soared! Compared to before, it was many times stronger!

This was a completely different level!

Chapter 202 – Heavenly Fusion Stage

A powerful gale suddenly emerged above the mountain. The dense Spiritual Aura of the world seemed to be attracted by something and gathered at the summit. In the end, it rushed into cave like a flood and entered Mu Chen’s body.

Buzz.

With the infusion of dense Spiritual Aura, fluctuations emerged near Mu Chen’s body. A faint jade color actually emerged on his body and it seemed quite mysterious.

On Mu Chen’s head, the Spirit also formed a seal. At that moment, the Spirit had a mesmerizing expression. It had sensed the heavens and earth and its body was slowly being fused into it.

It was a completely different realm than the Spirit Stage.

Mu Chen felt that as if his soul had suddenly become quite vast. At the previous stage, he was bound to his body, and it couldn't compare with the vast world outside.

But right now, every single one of his actions could fuse with the world and he could mobilize the dense Spiritual Aura within the world.

Mu Chen’s Spirit also gradually turned clear. Moreover, it did not have an illusory form anymore and seemed like it was real.

Furthermore, a powerful Spiritual Energy fluctuation emanated out from the tiny Spirit.

A clump of white air was slowly exhaled out from Mu Chen’s mouth. Then, he immediately changed seals. At that instant, the Spirit on his head slowly entered his body and returned to the aura sea.

When the Spirit returned to his aura sea, a mysterious and violent fluctuation emerged from the depths of his body. The Great

Pagoda Art had also circulated by itself.

Sensing this change, Mu Chen was surprised. However, he did not obstruct it and instead watched quietly. He could feel that this change was caused by the sealed Spiritual Pulse within his body.

Accompanied by the increase of his strength, the mysterious Spiritual Pulse that was sealed by his mother had slowly revealed its true form.

Zzzt!

When the fluctuation emerged, Mu Chen noticed that the mysterious black lights had emerged within the depths of his body again. The lights emitted out beams of light which had gathered at his Spirit's hand.

When the strange black lights had converged at his Spirit's hand, it gradually twisted around and condensed into a tiny black tower.

The tiny black tower was held by his Spirit and ancient and obscure, dark-golden engravings were on the surface of the tower. A majestic feeling emerged out, which would make one be in awe in front of it.

"This is..."

Mu Chen was shocked as he stared at the tiny black tower within his Spirit's hand. He was aware that the tiny black tower was quite peculiar. It did not seem to be an illusory item that was formed by Spiritual Energy. Instead, it was closer to being a Spiritual Artifact. But if he had to compare them, this item was different to a Spiritual Artifact.

In that instant, even Mu Chen wasn't able to understand exactly what this tiny black tower was.

Mu Chen's heart was filled with surprise. Just what exactly is the sealed Spiritual Pulse within his body? It could actually condense and turn into such a form. This was the first time he had ever heard of it.

He immediately focused and the Spirit waved the black tower in its hand slightly. A brilliant beam of black light burst out from it at this moment and an ancient bell sound resounded out.

A fluctuation that could seal all things slowly emitted out from it.

Mu Chen stared at the tiny black tower and investigated it for a while. However, this did not bear much results and could only shake his head as he withdrew from his aura sea.

In the cave, Mu Chen opened his eyes and his body trembled slightly. The dust that had landed on his body was instantly blown away. Then, he stood up slowly and a creaking noise resounded out from his body.

Mu Chen gripped his hand tightly and sensed the dense Spiritual Energy fluctuation within his body. Delight instantly filled his eyes. After painstaking effort, he had finally advanced to the Heavenly Fusion Stage!

He stood at the entrance of the cave and stared out to the lush forest. At this moment, the world seemed to become much brighter in his eyes. He was also able to perceive the Spiritual Aura fluctuations within the world more accurately.

His gestures could mobilize the nearby Spiritual Aura within the world and this feeling wasn't something that a Spirit Stage could compare with.

"As expected of the Heavenly Fusion Stage..."

Mu Chen could not help but let out a praise. No wonder he had to use up various means while dealing with Yang Hong's attacks. So the difference between the two stages were so large.

"I wonder if Dad managed to break through to the Heavenly Fusion Stage yet."

Mu Chen suddenly smiled. With his current strength, he could definitely become the overlord of the Northern Spiritual Realm. But within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, he was still

quite unworthy. This made him sigh. The Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy wasn't something that the Northern Spiritual Realm could compare with.

Mu Chen stretched his waist for a moment and took a deep breath of the fresh air within the forest. Then, he rushed into the sky and headed towards the exterior of the forest. This time, he had entered the Spirit Convergence Array for approximately one month and a half. He had spent nearly 200,000 Spiritual Values. Fortunately, his Spiritual Values Card possessed around 500,000 Spiritual Values before entering the Spirit Convergence Array. Otherwise, he would have been kicked out of the Rank 6 Spirit Convergence Array halfway through his cultivation.

Although he had consumed a large amount of Spiritual Values, the results of his secluded cultivation were great. Not only did Mu Chen succeed in the Spiritual Energy Fusion, he also managed to break through the Spirit Stage and advance to the Heavenly Fusion Stage that he had dreamed of.

Compared to these results, the 200,000 Spiritual Values was only a minor thing.

Mu Chen smiled. In ten minutes, he had exited the forest. He looked around, then, he headed towards the exit of the Spirit Convergence Array. However, a hint of surprise emerged in his eyes after he flew for a few minutes.

This is because he noticed that there were countless individuals heading in the opposite direction instead. Every one of these individuals had a burning gaze as if there was a treasure in the depths of the Spirit Convergence Array.

"What happened?"

Mu Chen was stunned and he gradually slowed down. His gaze turned towards the depths of the Spirit Convergence Array and he could vaguely sense that the Spiritual Aura within the world was fluctuating violently at that location.

Mu Chen hesitated for a moment and immediately obstructed a student that was charging towards the depth of the Spirit Convergence Array. He smiled: “Senior, may I ask where all of you are heading to?”

The student that was obstructed by Mu Chen had an annoyed expression. He glared at Mu Chen for a moment and planned to rush past him.

Mu Chen flicked his fingers and his Spiritual Values Card emerged. 5,000 Spiritual Values turned into a beam of light as it headed towards that student.

At this moment, the latter’s eyes instantly brightened up. He hurriedly placed away the 5,000 Spiritual Values and turned to look at Mu Chen. His eyes quickly warmed up and he replied: “Judging from your appearance, could you be a freshman? So you didn’t even know about the Spirit Tide within the Spirit Convergence Array?

“Spirit Tide?” Mu Chen was stunned and was quite confused.

“Generally speaking, in a highly rank Spirit Convergence Array like this, extremely dense Spiritual Aura of the world would be accumulated over the years. It would then form what is known as the Spirit Tide.” The student explained.

“Then why are so many people heading towards the so-called Spirit Tide?”

“That isn’t true. The Spirit Tide is considerably violent and it could be quite dangerous if one was sucked in. Normally speaking, it is best to avoid a Spirit Tide if possible.” The student snickered. Then, he responded with his eyes blazing: “However, within the Spirit Tide, a worldly treasure known as the “Celestial Spirit Lotus” would be formed due to the accumulated Spiritual Aura.”

“Celestial Spirit Lotus?” Mu Chen narrowed his eyes.

“Every time a Spirit Tide occurs, there would be one single

Celestial Spirit Lotus that appears. The Celestial Spirit Lotus itself isn't much use. However, the Spirit Lotus Seeds on the Celestial Spirit Lotus are considered a rare worldly treasure. It possesses the miraculous effects of stabilizing Spiritual Energy as well as solidifying your foundations.

"Oh?" A trace of surprise appeared within Mu Chen's eyes. While cultivating Spiritual Energy, the foundations were exceptionally important. If the foundations were weak, it would be difficult to improve no matter how long one would cultivate. Therefore, a worldly treasure that could stabilize Spiritual Energy and solidifying foundations was considerably rare. He never imagined that the "Spirit Lotus Seeds" would possess these effects.

"A single Spirit Lotus Seed is worth at least 200,000 Spiritual Values within the Spiritual Values Hall. Moreover, there is no stock of them. Therefore, who wouldn't try to seize one since the Spirit Tide had appeared?" The student smacked his lips and said disappointedly: "However, there is only one Celestial Spirit Lotus and the Spirit Lotus Seeds are limited. It would definitely be difficult to obtain one with so many people eyeing on it."

"Okay, buddy. If you're interested, you should hurry over. Otherwise, you wouldn't be able to see anything at all. I'm heading over first."

Seeing that he had pretty much explained everything, the student waved his hand and he charged towards the depths of the Spirit Convergence Array.

Mu Chen stood in the sky and stared at the figures that were rushing towards the depth of the Spirit Convergence Array. He pondered slightly before he rushed out in the same directions as the other individuals.

Since he had just advanced to the Heavenly Fusion Stage, he felt that the Spiritual Energy within his body was slightly superficial even though he had attempted to compress it. If he successfully

obtained a Spirit Lotus Seed, he would be able to resolve this situation and he wouldn't need to spend time on stabilizing his Spiritual Energy.

A treasure like this wasn't something that you could wish for. Since it had appeared in front of him, he naturally would have to join in the fun as well. After all, it would be a pity if he just gave up on it.

Chapter 203 – Huo Feng

In the deepest part of the Spirit Convergence Array, the sky was filled with brilliant colors. If one was to look forward, the sky would seem as magnificent as the ocean. A dense Spiritual Aura was converging and forming into many tidal waves. At the same time, rumbling sounds resounded out, causing it to seem like actual tidal waves.

On the ground outside of the deepest part of the Spirit Convergence Array, countless figures were already waiting patiently. Every single one of them were looking at the Spiritual Aura Ocean eagerly. At that location, the Spiritual Aura was surging out like actual tidal waves and a terrifying Spiritual Energy pressure emanated out into the world.

Against this terrifying Spiritual Energy pressure, even a Heavenly Fusion Stage would seem quite miniscule and wouldn't dare to face the tidal waves directly.

In front of the crowd of students, there were a few individuals that were entirely different than the rest. These individuals were all well-known students within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Furthermore, they were all quite powerful and were considerably frightening by just standing there.

When Mu Chen arrived at this location, he noticed this lively scene. Then, he too, landed on a mountain peak in the front. His gaze swept across the terrifying Spiritual Aura Tidal Waves in the distance. From the Spiritual Energy pressure that he sensed, his breathing stopped for a moment.

“As expected from a Rank 6 Spirit Convergence Array.”

Seeing this magnificent scene, Mu Chen couldn’t help but let out a praise. Only a Spirit Convergence Array of this level could actually cause such an amazing Spirit Tide.

Mu Chen looked at the Spirit Tide in the distance before he turned his gaze towards the individuals that were in the front. Then, he noticed a familiar silhouette amongst these individuals.

It was Su Ling'Er.

When he noticed the girl's elegant figure, Mu Chen could not help but rub his nose. His body instinctively shrank back slightly. After all, he had never imagined that Su Ling'Er was currently still within the Spirit Convergence Array.

However, Su Ling'Er didn't seem to notice Mu Chen at all. She crossed her arms as her beautiful face stared coldly out into the sky to her right. From that direction, there was another group of individuals approaching.

The number of individuals weren't small and the one leading was also a beautiful girl. Her appearance was quite pretty and had slightly thin lips. An unconcealable hint of arrogance and superiority could be seen within her eyes.

Although the two girls' beauty was at a similar level, Mu Chen felt that Su Ling'Er made him feel slightly more comfortable.

"Keke, Su Ling'Er. You sure have arrived quite early. The Celestial Spirit Lotus hasn't even appeared and yet you've already arrived." Just as Mu Chen glanced at the two of them, the tall and beautiful girl that was leading the group chuckled as she stared at Su Ling'Er.

"Xu Qingqing. This Spirit Convergence Array does not belong to you. Do I have to report to you, whenever I come here?" It seemed that Su Ling'Er did not possess any pleasant feelings towards this girl and she quickly responded rudely.

"Hmph. How sharp-tongued." The girl called Xu Qingqing snorted before replying mockingly: "I heard that you've tried to cause trouble for the freshman known as Mu Chen earlier. However, it seemed that you've embarrassed yourself instead? Su

Ling'Er. Your sister is quite famous among the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, yet how could you, her sister, fail to teach a lesson to a mere freshman?"

"From what I see, why don't you ask me to help you teach a lesson to that freshman?"

"You're not qualified to intervene with my own affairs," Su Ling'Er said coldly.

"Ohoho, is that it? However, I must obtain the Spirit Lotus Seed today. If you want to steal it from me, then don't blame me for acting quite rude. Others might be afraid of your sister, but I'm not afraid of her." Xu Qingqing curled her lips.

"Then, let's see you try taking it."

Su Ling'Er continued to oppose Xu Qingqing and did not take a step backwards. The confrontation between these two girls also attracted the attention of many individuals. However, many of them were not surprised. After all, everyone within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy knew that Su Ling'Er and Xu Qingqing had a terrible relationship with each other.

Su Ling'Er's sister is Su Xuan, who was ranked third on the Heavenly Ranking. However, Xu Qingqing's brother was also Xu Huang, who was ranked fifth on the Heavenly Ranking. Both of them had a powerful background and not many would dare offend either of them. Therefore, many individuals would stay away from these two girls.

Mu Chen curled his lips as he watched the confrontation between these two girls. Just earlier, Xu Qingqing had dragged him into their conversation. The tone as she talked about him made him quite unhappy. Therefore, he did not like her that much.

It was evident that Mu Chen was not interested in entering their quarrels. Therefore, he stood quietly as he watched the Spirit Tide in the distance. He waited for the moment when the so-called

“Celestial Spirit Lotus” would appear.

“Eh?”

But while Mu Chen was waiting, he suddenly felt a gaze filled with hatred suddenly focusing on him. He immediately frowned and turned around as he stared towards the source of this gaze. When he located the source, he was slightly surprised.

This was because the owner of this gaze was Mo Lun, who Mu Chen had defeated previously.

Ever since that guy had been defeated by him, he had vanished without a trace. Mu Chen had originally thought that he would perform some sort of measures against him, yet he never imagined that Mo Lun would have calmed down. This saved him from a bit of trouble. However, judging from Mo Lun’s appearance, it seemed that he had not given up on revenge.

Mu Chen glanced at Mo Lun before focusing on the people beside him. At that location, there were three other individuals. Mu Chen’s gaze swept across these three individuals and stopped at the one in the front. His eyes instantly became serious.

It was a somewhat burly boy. He had a dull appearance, yet he had a slightly pointed nose. At the same time, he gave off a cold feeling and judging from the Spiritual Energy fluctuations emitted from his body, he was many times stronger than Mo Lun.

This person actually possessed the strength of a Heavenly Fusion Stage Late Phase.

This made Mu Chen somewhat surprised. In general, a person with such strength would be ranked in the top 100s of the Heavenly Ranking. It was impossible for him to be a nobody within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.

Mo Lun stared darkly at Mu Chen before the corners of his lips rose up coldly. Then, he approached the burly boy in front and whispered a few words to him. At the same time, he pointed over

towards Mu Chen.

When he noticed this, Mu Chen had an indifferent expression while he raised his eyebrow. It seemed that he didn't teach him a big enough lesson last time.

As Mo Lun whispered to the burly boy, that boy slowly tilted his head. Then, his cold gaze focused on Mu Chen's body.

Against this cold gaze, Mu Chen did not show any signs of retreating and instead confronted this gaze.

Before he had advanced to the Heavenly Fusion Stage, it might be quite difficult for him to deal with a person at the Heavenly Fusion Stage Late Phase. But for the current him, he wasn't afraid of them anymore. If they were to fight against each other, it wouldn't be easy for his opponent to gain the upper hand.

The burly boy listened to what Mo Lun had to say. However, it was evident that the latter was currently complaining about Mu Chen's actions. After a while, the burly boy nodded and headed straight towards Mu Chen.

When Mo Lun noticed this, he hurriedly followed. A hint of cunning and pride emerged in his eyes as he stared at Mu Chen again.

"Huh, isn't that the leader of the Azure Red Community, Huo Feng? He actually came here."

When the burly boy rushed over towards Mu Chen, it had attracted a lot of gazes and it was clear that others had identified him.

"Azure Red Community's Leader, Huo Feng?" Mu Chen narrowed his eyes slightly. Since Mo Lun was part of the Azure Red Community and he was defeated by Mu Chen, it was no wonder that this boy would take action.

Moreover, from the looks of it, this leader of the Azure Red Community is planning to help Mo Lun get his revenge.

“Swish!”

Huo Feng’s body quickly appeared at the mountain peak where Mu Chen was located at. He stared coldly at Mu Chen and asked: “You’re the freshman known as Mu Chen, right?”

“May I ask what you want from me?” Mu Chen smiled faintly.

“Previously, I was in secluded training. Therefore, I had only heard about Mo Lun’s matters a few days ago.”

Huo Feng stared at Mu Chen and waved his hand. Then, he continued: “Although he had gone overboard, you’ve also taught him a lesson. However, I hope that you will return the Spiritual Values back to him. That was the Spiritual Values that he had accumulated for six months. If you do so, then this matter is truly over.”

He had a calm tone as if he was talking about something that should naturally occur.

Mu Chen smiled and glanced at Mo Lun. Then, he replied: “He prevented so many freshmen from exiting the freshman area. People always say that you shouldn’t hurt one’s pride if you were to hurt someone. However, he stepped directly on so many people’s pride. I’ve always considered that the lesson that I’ve taught him was quite light. But now, you actually want me to return the Spiritual Values back to him?”

“Mu Chen. You actually dare to act this arrogant in front of our leader? Do you actually believe that the Azure Red Community isn’t able to deal with you?!” Mo Lun’s face exchanged between a pale and red color as he sneered. From his tone, it was clear that he had made Mu Chen an enemy of the Azure Red Community.

“It seems that I was too kind last time. Against a bastard like you, there truly isn’t a need to care much about it.” Mu Chen directly a smile towards Mo Lun. However, this smile caused Mo Lun to shiver and retreat slightly. He had seen Mu Chen’s performance at

the Freshmen Competition and knew that he wasn't Mu Chen's opponent.

"To actually threaten members of the Azure Red Community in front of me, it seems that the rumors are true. This year's freshmen are quite arrogant." Huo Feng stared coldly at Mu Chen as he spoke.

This confrontation soon caused a commotion. Since many people were waiting for the appearance of the "Celestial Spirit Lotus", they casted curious gazes over here.

When they noticed the two individuals confronting each other, a hint of surprise filled their eyes. After all, Huo Feng was quite famous within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. His rank of being 91st on the Heavenly Ranking bears a bit of weight.

As for Mu Chen, his fame had started to emerge after the Freshmen Competition and was considered an emerging dark horse within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.

They never imagined that these two individuals would actually confront each other.

Not far away, Su Ling'Er also noticed the commotion and turned her gaze around. Then, her pretty face instantly turned red as she noticed Mu Chen's silhouette. She gritted her teeth tightly and rage filled her eyes. This bastard had finally dared to appear in front of her?!

"Since you're a freshman and perhaps you didn't understand about the rules, I didn't want to bother you. Regarding about the matter with Mo Lun and you, it's true that Mo Lun had done something inappropriate. Therefore, I will ask you once more. Return the Spiritual Values back to him and we will consider this matter over, okay?" Huo Feng extended his hand out as he spoke in a deep voice. His eyes, as he stared at Mu Chen, was razor-sharp.

Mu Chen frowned and laughed faintly as he glanced at Huo Feng.

Then, he slowly shook his head. In his eyes, a hint of coldness emerged.

“I refuse.”

Chapter 204 – Confrontation

"I refuse."

When these two words left Mu Chen's mouth, everyone noticed that Huo Feng's eyes had turned slightly cold. A powerful Spiritual Energy fluctuation slowly emanated out of his body.

It was evident that the leader of the Azure Red Community, who was widely known in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, was angered by this comment.

Seeing this, Mo Lun began to gloat as he stared at Mu Chen. As long as Mu Chen angered Huo Feng, it wouldn't be easy for him to get away. After all, Huo Feng's strength was at the Heavenly Fusion Stage Late Phase. Moreover, he was one of the individuals ranked in the top 100 of the Heavenly Ranking. Even within the entire Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, he was considered to be quite powerful.

Not far away, Su Ling'Er's eyes flashed as she witnessed this scene. She immediately hummed: "You deserve it. Huo Feng isn't an ordinary individual. Did you truly believe that you could get rid of him just by acting like a ruffian?"

Once she said these words, her petite face turned red. She bit down and stared in hatred towards Mu Chen's figure.

"So he's the freshman that was recently in the limelight? Aside from being arrogant, it seems that there is nothing special about him." Xu Qingqing also stared towards Mu Chen as she curled her red lips.

Naturally, she was aware of Huo Feng's strength. Even if she was the one that had to confront him, it would be quite troublesome. Furthermore, it seems that Mu Chen did not possess the abilities to fight against him.

As countless gazes began to focus on the mountain peak, Mu

Chen stared coldly towards Huo Feng. He gently gripped his hands and dark black Spiritual Energy surged out. Within the Spiritual Energy, a black flame quietly appeared.

It was evident that it was impossible for him to return the Spiritual Values back to Mo Lun.

“I refuse…These words are something that you can say just because you want to say them.”

Huo Feng’s glared at Mu Chen and said faintly as he stressed each word: “Sometimes…you have to see if you’re qualified to say these words!”

Against Huo Feng’s aggressive tone, a hint of coldness slowly emerged within Mu Chen’s black eyes. He looked towards at Huo Feng and smiled: “Whether or not I’m qualified…It isn’t something that you can decide.”

“Is that so?!”

Huo Feng’s eyes sharpened and he rushed forward. The powerful Spiritual Energy within his body erupted out. Then, the ground underneath him cracked open and the cracks charged out like a earth dragon. Within the matchless and violent Spiritual Energy, a earth dragon’s growl could be heard faintly.

Seeing Huo Feng attempt to suppress him, Mu Chen also let out a cold sneer deep down inside. He did not have the slightest intention of retreating and instead, he stomped on the ground and took a step forward.

Cracks also emerged out from underneath Mu Chen’s feet. However, the boulders that these cracks passed through had melted completely. A screeching sound resounded out as it charged towards the cracks that were like violent earth dragons.

A massive sound resounded out and gravel erupted out throughout the sky. When the two cracks made contact with each other, the two violent Spiritual Energy within the cracks had

erupted as it attempted to erode each other.

“Eh?”

Huo Feng looked at where the Spiritual Energy made contact and his eyes turned serious. He could sense that his Spiritual Energy was rapidly being consumed when the two Spiritual Energy confronted each other.

Although the density of his Spiritual Energy far exceeded Mu Chen’s Spiritual Energy, the latter’s Spiritual Energy was extremely condensed. It was quite difficult to destroy this condensed Spiritual Energy.

“This brat is quite capable. No wonder he was able to become the Number One Freshman.”

Huo Feng sneered inside his heart. However, he was still an Heavenly Fusion Stage Late Phase powerhouse. No matter what sort of tricks Mu Chen had, it wasn’t possible for them to stop him.

He did not possess any grudges with Mu Chen, but Mo Lun was considered to be his men. Since Mo Lun had came to him and complained about Mu Chen, he naturally couldn’t turn a blind eye to it. Otherwise, he would lose the support of the members of the Azure Red Community.

“Tornado Palm!”

Huo Feng thought quickly and he rushed up into the sky like an eagle. Then, he struck out and rumbling Spiritual Energy erupted out as gales began to blow.

Within the gales, a blue palm of fierce winds was formed. It formed a storm as it tore through the air towards Mu Chen, who was on top of the mountain.

“Vajra Pagoda!”

Mu Chen lifted his head and his eyes sharpened. He did not retreat and smack out as well. A golden light surged out and

formed into a golden palm. Within this palm, a dark black tower engraving emitted out a mysterious glow.

The two Spiritual Energy palms smashed heavily against each other in the sky. In that instant, a storm brew out. Waves of violent Spiritual Energy had emitted out from the two attacks.

The two violent Spiritual Energy attacks attempted to erode each other, but both of them gradually faded. It was evident that the two powerful attacks were evenly matched.

“Mu Chen’s strength…has actually improved again!”

Seeing this result, the nearby crowd could not help but exclaim out loud. Their eyes turned serious. They could sense that Mu Chen was currently much stronger than his previous self when he was facing Yang Hong a month ago. Otherwise, it was impossible for him to be evenly matched against Huo Feng. After all, the latter was at the Heavenly Fusion Stage Late Phase.

“That guy…So he actually managed to advanced to the Heavenly Fusion Stage!”

Not far away, Su Ling’Er witnessed this scene and was surprised. No wonder Mu Chen wasn’t afraid of Huo Feng…It was clear that he had advanced to the Heavenly Fusion Stage within this month. This is because when he had faced Su Ling’Er previously, he was still at the Spirit Stage Late Phase.

“Roar!”

Mu Chen lifted his head and stared calmly at Huo Feng, who was standing in the sky. His palms spun and dozens of Spiritual Seals emerged from his fingertips. These Spiritual Seals quickly integrated with the air and a massive golden Spiritual Array began to form. A disc with both dragon and elephant had emerged. It rushed towards Huo Feng as it issued out a roar.

“He’s actually a Spiritual Array Master as well?!”

Seeing how Mu Chen easily arranged a Spiritual Array, Huo

Feng's eyes turned serious. His body quickly emerged in front of the dragon and elephant disc. He immediately kicked out with his leg and caused the air to be torn apart.

Huo Feng's ferocious kick carried rumbling Spiritual Energy as it collided fiercely against the dragon and elephant disc. It had managed to forcibly destroy the disc apart.

However, just when Huo Feng had destroyed the disc with his kick, a scarlet light suddenly erupted from below. He lowered his head and noticed an even larger Spiritual Array had formed above Mu Chen's head. A Spiritual Energy fluctuation that far exceeded the previous Spiritual Array had emitted out from within the current Spiritual Array.

"Great Ifrit Array"

Mu Chen flicked his fingers with a calm expression. With his current strength, he could arrange this Great Ifrit Array in an instant.

Fierce red light burst out from the giant array. Then, a massive Ifrit erupted out from the array. Soon, it turned into a pillar of flame and charged towards Huo Feng.

"Cyclone Slash!"

Seeing the raging Ifrit charge towards him, Huo Feng hurriedly retreated dozens of steps. He gripped his hands tightly and dense Spiritual Energy surged out. It formed massive blue blade slash as it tore through the sky. With an overwhelming aura, it slashed mercilessly at the Ifrit's body.

Flames erupted into the sky. At this instant, the massive Ifrit body was cut into half by Huo Feng's slash attack.

The audiences nearby could not help but let out praises once they witnessed these two powerful offensives. These two individuals were quite capable.

Huo Feng's expression was quite calm as the blade slash cut apart

the Ifrit's body. But just when the red light faded in front of his eyes, a chill appeared deep down inside. He heard subtle sounds of wind and noticed Mu Chen had actually charged towards him while the red lights were disappearing.

"You're seeking death!"

Huo Feng sneered. As a Spiritual Array Master, this Mu Chen actually did not hide far away and rely on the power of the Spiritual Array. Instead, he had actually taken the initiative to approach him. Is he truly looking down on him and his Heavenly Fusion Stage Late Phase strength?

"Sky Dragon Destruction Fist!"

It was evident Huo Feng did not allow Mu Chen to hesitate at all. He bent his legs slightly and clenched his hand as he fired out a punch.

Rumble!

A storm-like Spiritual Energy suddenly surged out. Then, a dragon's fist formed by the wind had gathered on the surface of Huo Feng's fist. A devastating roar had emerged. This fist carried the power to shatter mountains and it headed fiercely towards Mu Chen.

Once this fist was blasted out, countless people had solemn expressions. It was evident that they had sensed how powerful this attack was.

"Go to hell!"

At this moment, Mo Lun stared excitedly at this scene. The "Sky Dragon Destruction Fist" was one of Huo Feng's trump cards. Once it was used, it could instantly defeat any opponents below the Heavenly Fusion Stage Late Phase. Since Mu Chen was currently rushed towards Huo Feng, it was too late for him to evade it!

The blue dragon rapidly grew larger within Mu Chen's eyes. He immediately took a deep breath and dark black Spiritual Energy

emerged as he, too, fired out a punch.

Buzz! Buzz!

Four Limitless Death Seals instantly condensed on the surface of Mu Chen's fist. But when these four Limitless Death Seals emerged, Mu Chen did not stop it there. Dark black light continued to surge and another Limitless Death Seal quietly condensed on the surface of his fist.

Five Limitless Death Seals!

Since Mu Chen had advanced to the Heavenly Fusion Stage, the Limitless Death Seal that hadn't improved for a long time was finally strengthened.

Once these five Limitless Death Seals emerged, rumbling black light caused the surrounding air to become distorted. An overbearing and matchless fluctuation spread out from these Limitless Death Seals.

"Go!"

Mu Chen muttered. He blasted a punch and the five Limitless Death Seals soared through the sky like a black comet. They connected with each other and under countless gazes, it smashed fiercely against the blue dragon.

Chapter 205 – Celestial Spirit Lotus

Rumbling Spiritual Energy shock waves rippled through the sky. A powerful gale was formed and caused the forest below to sway. At the same time, a sandstorm emerged and caused everybody to shut their eyes.

However, a few individuals infused Spiritual Energy into their eyes in order to look at the collision of the two violent Spiritual Energy.

Boom!

In the sky, the violent Spiritual Energy storm suddenly broke out. A massive Spiritual Energy impact rushed out and caused both Mu Chen and Huo Feng to be blown away.

Bang.

Mu Chen hurriedly placed the soles of his feet on the ground and landed on the peak of a mountain. However, his clothes were torn apart. At the same time, his eyes turned slightly serious. Huo Feng's strength was indeed quite powerful. No wonder he was able to be ranked within the top 100s of the Heavenly Ranking.

From a distance, Huo Feng also landed on top of a towering tree. He, too, had torn clothes just like Mu Chen. This caused his eyes to turn solemn. He never imagined that he wouldn't be able to suppress Mu Chen with his Heavenly Fusion Stage Late Phase strength. The two of them were evenly matched.

After personally facing off this freshman, he knew that the latter possessed incredible strength. It was no wonder that he did not care about him and his threats.

"How could this be…"

Mo Lun's face darkened and his eyes were filled with disbelief. It was evident that he did not expect that Mu Chen would remain undefeated even when Huo Feng had personally taken action.

How could this freshman improve this quickly?!

From afar, Su Ling'Er's eyes were also filled with surprise as she witnessed this scene. Her gaze swept across Mu Chen's body. This boy was actually capable of fighting against Huo Feng to this extent...

At the same time, Xu Qingqing was astonished by Mu Chen's feat. She glanced again towards Mu Chen and curled her lips. She stopped speaking for the moment. However, the disdain within her eyes had faded slightly.

"Do you want to continue fighting?" Mu Chen directly a faint smile towards Huo Feng.

Huo Feng frowned. Just from the earlier battle, he already understood that he must use his full strength if he wanted to defeat Mu Chen. However, the Spirit Tide was about to appear. Therefore, he had to save his strength to seize the "Celestial Spirit Lotus". This place was extremely attractive to the students and there were countless people that even he feared. If he was to consume a large amount of Spiritual Energy now, he would lose the ability to contend with them later on.

"I'll find you after this."

Huo Feng was a decisive person. Once he had made his decision, he would no longer hesitate. Therefore, he replied faintly while dispersing the Spiritual Energy fluctuation from his body.

When the audience heard these words, they understood that Huo Feng had given up on continuing his fight with Mu Chen. It seemed that the strength that Mu Chen had displayed earlier had made him slightly afraid.

Mu Chen smiled and ignored what Huo Feng had said. His strength had already made Huo Feng afraid of him. The latter naturally wouldn't be as rude as earlier. It seems that strength was essential no matter what place it was. If he didn't break through to

the Heavenly Fusion Stage, he probably would have been embarrassed by Huo Feng.

Beside Huo Feng, Mo Lun's expression changed slightly. However, he did not dare to say anything, and could only grit his teeth. RIght now, Mu Chen's strength had far surpassed him. He wasn't his opponent anymore.

Mu Chen also glanced calmly at Mo Lun. This gaze caused the latter to shiver and he hurriedly avoided eye contact with Mu Chen.

Huo Feng also glanced deeply at Mu Chen. Then, he turned away and headed for the depths where the Spirit Tide had become quite violent. At that place, the Spiritual Aura of the world had begun letting out rumblings sounds.

The commotion caused by the Spirit Tide was detected by countless individuals nearby as well. Their eyes were cast over towards that place and within these eyes, a hint of passion and eagerness was revealed.

The value of the Spirit Lotus Seeds was far too great. Even if they were reluctant to use it themselves, they would still be able to sell it for 200,000 Spiritual Values at the Spiritual Values Hall. This was a considerable harvest. After all, it was enough for them to cultivate within the Rank 6 Spiritual Array for a whole month.

Mu Chen also set his sights towards that direction. He, too, was quite interested in the Spirit Lotus Seeds. Since he had just advanced to the Heavenly Fusion Stage, the Spiritual Energy within his body was quite superficial. If he managed to obtain a Spirit Lotus Seed, it would be able to help him stabilize his state and improve the foundations of the Spiritual Aura within his body.

Bang!

Just when Mu Chen's eyes turned dignified, the Spirit Tide suddenly emitted out a devastating sound. Crashing sounds of

thunder resounded out through this space.

The Spirit Tide seemed to have expanded to the limits and was about to explode.

At this moment, everybody started to circulate their Spiritual Energy and protected their bodies. Within their eyes, a hint of alertness had emerged. After all, the power released by the explosion of the Spirit Tide was considerably frightening. If they were sucked into it carelessly, they would probably be gravely injured.

Everybody within this space had became quiet. The only sound that resounded out was the endless rumbling sounds of the Spirit Tide.

Under countless gazes, the Spirit Tide continued to accumulate. Magnificent colors emitted out from it, causing this place to become a splendid sight.

“Boom!”

Finally, the overlapping Spirit Tide had reached its limits. With a massive explosion, it seemed to have suddenly disappeared for a moment. However, this situation did not occur for long as everybody was able to see the vast and endless Spirit Tides shortly afterwards.

A thunderous sound rumbled throughout the entire Spirit Convergence Array!

Boom! Boom!

The massive Spirit Tide was like a brilliant wave of Spiritual Aura as it spread out. Even mountains were crushed into pieces as the Spirit Tide passed by.

The entire earth trembled due to the Spirit Tide!

Swish! Swish!

As they witnessed the Spirit Tide rushing over, numerous people

quickly left the ground and retreated towards the rear at an alarming speed. They were afraid of being swallowed by the tidal wave.

Mu Chen also followed the majority of the group and retreated backwards. However, his eyes were firmly fixed at the massive Spiritual waves. This is because the Celestial Spirit Lotus was hidden within them.

In the sky, countless figures were retreating. Yet, waves of Spiritual Energy had soon caught up with them. A number of these individuals displayed their speed and evaded them. At the same time, they stared sharply at the Spiritual Energy waves.

In that instant, Mu Chen also evaded a Spiritual Energy Wave that had descended from the sky. A few droplets of Spiritual Energy fell down onto his body. Every single one of the droplets felt like a thousand tons and caused Mu Chen's body to sink. He could not help but cluck his tongue. It was this heavy with just a few droplets of Spiritual Energy, then wouldn't he be gravely injured if he was hit by the massive wave...

It seems that it wouldn't be easy to obtain the Celestial Spirit Lotus.

Just when Mu Chen signed, a few screams resounded out from behind him. A few unlucky individuals were smashed by the waves and all of them vomited out blood. Then, they were blown back. Even their chest was slightly crushed and it was evident that it wasn't a light injury.

Hearing these screams, Mu Chen hurriedly concentrated and did not dare to be distracted by other thoughts. He circulated his Spiritual Energy and moved quickly. While he evaded the Spiritual Energy waves, his keen eyes were constantly scanning the massive waves in the sky.

However, it wasn't easy to find the Celestial Spirit Lotus within these massive waves. Mu Chen's eyes had turned slightly blurry,

yet he still haven't discovered any traces of the "Celestial Spirit Lotus".

"Swish!"

Just when Mu Chen was concentrating on his search for the Celestial Spirit Lotus, a swishing sound was heard from behind. He hurriedly turned around and noticed a scarlet whip passing by his body.

Once he noticed the familiar scarlet whip, Mu Chen knew who had attacked him. He immediately curled his lips helplessly…So he was still discovered by her.

He turned his head and stared at the pretty girl, who had been glaring at him angrily. Then, he asked, "Are you finished?"

"You bastard! Pervert!" Su Ling'Er gritted her teeth as she scolded him.

Mu Chen shook his head and could not be bothered to argue with her. He turned around and flew off to another direction.

"You!"

Seeing Mu Chen ignore her, Su Ling'Er stomped down in anger. Her hand shook and the scarlet whip had charged out once again like a fiery python.

Sensing the winds from behind, Mu Chen's body turned slightly. Then, the scarlet whip passed near his body and smashed violently onto a Spiritual Energy wave.

The Spiritual Energy wave swelled slightly before it was burst apart.

Mu Chen closed an eye in response to the destroyed Spiritual Energy wave. But just when he was about to turn around, his eyes shrank. He hurriedly focused and noticed a jade glow slowly emerging from within the depths of the destroyed Spiritual Energy wave. At the same time, a pure Spiritual Energy fluctuation

emanated out. As it flowed outwards, a seductive scent had emerged.

Once Mu Chen smelled this scent, delight instantly filled his eyes. It was the Celestial Spirit Lotus!

When the Celestial Spirit Lotus appeared, a jade light erupted out like a pillar as it rushed into the sky.

Swish!

At this instant, almost everyone casted their gaze towards this direction. Then, their eyes turned red as muffled sounds resounded out.

Countless individuals began to charge towards this place. The swishing sounds as they rushed over had even overshadowed the rumbling sounds from the Spirit Tide.

“Swish!”

As the others approached, Mu Chen’s eyes were also glowing. He did not hesitate and he charged straight towards the Celestial Spirit Lotus.

However, just when Mu Chen had approached the Celestial Spirit Lotus, a sudden gale erupted out from behind as it charged towards his vital points from behind.

This attack was extremely vicious. If Su Ling’Er’s attack earlier was only to obstruct him, then this attack was attempting to take his life.

Mu Chen’s eyes immediately darkened. He blasted out a punch and the dark black Spiritual Energy with the black flame rushed out. Then, it blew away the silver sword that had approached him.

This silver sword flew backwards and finally landed onto a beautiful girl’s hand.

It was Xu Qingqing.

Chapter 206 – Xu Qingqing

Mu Chen glared coldly at the beautiful girl nearby. The latter was currently holding onto a silver sword as her lips lifted up slightly. Then, she directed a smile towards Mu Chen: “Thanks for helping me find the Celestial Spirit Lotus. Next up, just leave it to me.”

“It won’t be easy if you want to get the Celestial Spirit Lotus!”

Su Ling’Er’s beautiful eyes were also filled with a hint of coldness. She had a grudge with Xu Qingqing for a long time. It could not compare with the grudge that she had with Mu Chen. Therefore, she stopped obstructing Mu Chen and, instead, replied coldly towards Xu Qingqing.

“That’s not up to you to decide.”

Xu Qingqing’s lips curled and she waved her hand: “Go!”

Once these words resounded out, a dozen individuals actually rushed up from behind. Every single one of them had a powerful aura. It was evident that Xu Qingqing was quite prepared in order to seize the Celestial Spirit Lotus.

“Swish!”

Xu Qingqing brought the dozen figures and rushed straight towards the location of the Celestial Spirit Lotus. Once the others noticed the menacing aura from these individuals, they hurriedly evaded them.

“Hmph!”

Su Ling’Er let out a grunt and also waved her hands. A group of individuals also emerged from behind her. Then, she brought these individuals and attempted to intercept Xu Qingqing’s group.

Due to this, the two groups were entangled with each other and violent Spiritual Energy fluctuations erupted out. A brutal fight was about to begin.

At this moment, the silver sword that contained a sharp Spiritual Energy fluctuation flew straight like a lightning towards the scarlet whip. Then, Xu Qingqing's sword twitched slightly and a sword beam flew passed the long whip. It headed straight towards Su Ling'Er's chest.

Seeing this vicious attack from Xu Qingqing, Su Ling'Er's eyes were filled with rage. Her slender finger poked the air slightly and a fiery red Spiritual Energy burst out and stopped the sword beam.

"Xu Qingqing. Our strength are quite similar to each other. It won't be easy if you want to break pass me to obtain the Celestial Spirit Lotus!" Su Ling'Er said coldly. She had always hated Xu Qingqing. Therefore, even if she, herself, failed to obtain the Celestial Spirit Lotus, she would not let it end up in Xu Qingqing's hands.

"Is it?"

Hearing this, Xu Qingqing let out a strange smile. Her eyes suddenly turned cold and she gripped her silver sword tightly. At the same time, a powerful Spiritual Energy fluctuation emitted out from her body.

The intensity of the Spiritual Energy had reached the Heavenly Fusion Stage Late Phase!

"You advanced?!" Seeing this, Su Ling'Er's expression changed slightly. Just previously, she and Xu Qingqing were extremely close to reaching the Heavenly Fusion Stage Late Phase. However, she had not yet managed to advance. She never imagined that Xu Qingqing would actually make the breakthrough before her.

"Hmph. Since I knew that you would obstruct me, shouldn't I be prepared to deal with you?" Xu Qingqing smiled tenderly, yet, her eyes remained cold. Then, she waved her hand and the silver sword emitted out a dazzling light. The silver sword expanded exponentially as the wind surged and formed into a massive silver sword. A fierce sword aura rushed through the sky towards her.

“Breeze Blade!”

Xu Qingqing shouted out loudly. In response, the massive silver sword shuddered for a moment before it charged through the sky towards Su Ling’Er.

Seeing this, Su Ling’Er did not dare to act slowly. Her hands trembled and the scarlet whip erupted out overwhelming red light. A massive flame python seemed to emerge on the whip and formed a powerful defence.

A powerful blast erupted out when the massive sword slashed down onto the scarlet whip. However, Su Ling’Er’s face instantly turned pale. Her scarlet whip also turned slightly dim and it was clear that it had been damaged.

At this moment, Su Ling’Er gritted her teeth and quickly placed away the scarlet whip as she quickly retreated.

Noticing Su Ling’Er retreat, a sneer emerged on Xu Qingqing’s face.

A massive wave of Spiritual Energy suddenly emerged from behind Su Ling’Er. Its massive shadow instantly enveloped Su Ling’Er, who had a pale expression.

Considering the size of this Spiritual Energy wave, even Su Ling’Er would be gravely injured if she was struck by it.

However, the Spiritual Energy wave was far too wide. It was impossible for Su Ling’Er to evade it. Her face turned pale as she understood that Xu Qingqing had been cornering her in this direction.

“That wicked girl!”

Su Ling’Er gritted her teeth and cursed within her heart. She could only utilize her Spiritual Energy to protect her body as she watched helplessly as the Spiritual Energy wave enveloped her.

But just when Su Ling’Er watched in despair at the Spiritual

Energy wave, a swishing sound resounded out and a figure rushed over. This individual extended his hands out and held onto the girl's waist as he forced her into his arms. At the same time, a dark-black Spiritual Energy erupted out. On the surface of the Spiritual Energy, a black flame suddenly emerged.

This sudden change of events instantly surprised Su Ling'Er. She turned her eyes quickly and noticed Mu Chen's handsome face. Then, she instinctively struggled violently against him.

"If you don't want to die, then stop moving!" Mu Chen shouted out.

Although things weren't great between Mu Chen and Su Ling'Er, he couldn't just watch as she was enveloped by the massive Spiritual Energy wave. Moreover, Su Ling'Er wasn't as nasty and cold-hearted as Xu Qingqing. At the very least, she wouldn't be as vicious as Xu Qingqing.

Only then, Su Ling'Er recovered and reacted accordingly. She watched as the Spiritual Energy wave rushed over and enveloped them. At the same time, she held onto Mu Chen's neck as her body snuggled up into Mu Chen's arms.

The heavy wave surged over and Mu Chen's body was struck by a heavy blow. However, he gritted his teeth and the black flames emerged as it evaporated the Spiritual Energy wave that approached his body. Then, with a muffled cry, his body turned into a black light that was ignited with black flames and he charged straight through the massive wave.

The dark-black Spiritual Energy gradually faded away. However, Mu Chen frowned even more tightly. After all, the impact of the Spiritual Energy wave was far too heavy. Even though he possessed the Nine Netherflame and burned most of the Spiritual Energy that smashed into him, it had still made his blood tremble within his body. Waves of pain also emerged from the surface of his body.

However, Mu Chen's expression remained calm as she released

the girl from his arms. Then, he said: “I’ve helped you this time. So consider that I’ve settled the matter earlier.”

“You!”

Su Ling’Er frowned. She wanted to say how could that matter be settled this easily, but once she noticed bruises on Mu Chen, she swallowed back these words down. She knew how heavy the Spiritual Energy wave was. Since she was protected earlier, she didn’t have any injuries. But for Mu Chen, he had endured a heavy blow.

“Are you alright?” Su Ling’Er hesitated for a moment before she lowered her voice and asked.

Mu Chen shook his head. However, his gaze remained fixed at the Celestial Spirit Lotus that had gradually emerged from the massive wave. At this moment, countless individuals were rushing over from all directions. But whenever one approached the Celestial Spirit Lotus, they were obstructed by the others. This place was currently quite chaotic and from time to time, a few unlucky people would be blown away while vomiting blood.

“Let’s cooperate.” Mu Chen looked at Su Ling’Er and said: “I’ll help you obstruct Xu Qingqing. You will go seize the Celestial Spirit Lotus. Then, we will split the loot later on, okay?”

His goal was obviously not small. If he were to attempt to seize the Celestial Spirit Lotus, it was likely that he would become a target by everyone nearby. However, Su Ling’Er was different. She had a powerful background. Moreover, she was quite beautiful. Towards such a beautiful girl, most of the people would have an attitude of protecting her. Therefore, this would give Su Ling’Er an opportunity to seize the Celestial Spirit Lotus.

Coupled with the fact that Su Ling’Er had a few helpers, it would help prevent a few troubles for her.

Hearing this, Su Ling’Er hesitated for a moment. In the end, she

nodded. Since Xu Qingqing had advanced to the Heavenly Fusion Stage Late Phase, her strength was beyond her own. Therefore, it wouldn't be easy for her to obstruct Xu Qingqing.

"Keke, a hero saving a beauty. Su Ling'Er, you're truly quite charismatic and charming!" From nearby, Xu Qingqing witnessed Mu Chen saving Su Ling'Er and her expression instantly turned cold. She gritted her teeth and sneered at Su Ling'Er.

"Also, the guy called Mu Chen. I would advise you to stop getting involved with our own affairs. A mere freshman does not have the right to act like a hero!" Xu Qingqing shouted out mockingly towards Mu Chen.

"There's no need for you to be bothered by it." Mu Chen replied faintly. He immediately waved his hand towards Su Ling'Er. Once the latter noticed this, she immediately nodded her hand and rushed towards the Celestial Spirit Lotus.

Seeing this, Xu Qingqing's expression froze. She immediately rushed over, but after taking a few steps, Mu Chen had appeared in front of her.

"A freshman at the Heavenly Fusion Stage Initial Phase actually dared to obstruct me. Who do you think you are?!" Seeing Mu Chen appear in front of her, Xu Qingqing's face was filled with rage and arrogance.

While she spoke meanly towards Mu Chen, her attacks, too, were quite vicious. The silver sword within her hand instantly erupted out numerous sword beams as it burst out to Mu Chen's vital areas.

In response, dark-black Spiritual Energy surged out from Mu Chen's body. He flicked his fingers and several Spiritual Energy with black flames burst out and dispersed the sword beams.

Mu Chen's expression remained indifferent as he dealt with the sword beams. Then, he stared at Xu Qingqing's face that was filled with rage. However, his expression caused the latter to become

completely angered. This indifferent expression was obviously displaying how Mu Chen had looked down upon her.

A mere freshman actually dared to look down upon her, Xu Qingqing?!

“I’ll kill you!”

She gritted her teeth and the Spiritual Energy within her body surged out without reservation. At the same time, her body flew up high into the air. Then, she placed her hands together and the silver sword emanated a dazzling light.

A sharp and frosty sword aura erupted out.

At that instant, Su Ling’Er, who was heading towards the Celestial Spirit Lotus, noticed this powerful fluctuation and instantly turned her head around. Her face immediately changed. That crazy girl is trying to kill Mu Chen?

“Nine Heavens Spirit Sword, Spirit Termination!”

In the sky, Xu Qingqing’s cold eyes stared down towards Mu Chen. Her hand swung down and a cold cry resounded out. In that instant, countless individuals noticed a massive sword light tore through the sky as it slashed down in anger.

Under this slash, even the Spiritual Energy waves were torn apart!

A murderous intent surged within this sword light.

Chapter 207 – Nine-layered Pagoda

Rumble!

The majestic sword beam were like milky way as they fell from the horizon. They brought a chilling cold aura, carrying a momentum of splitting a mountain as they tore the horizon and hack down towards Mu Chen.

Xu Qingqing clearly didn't have the slightest restraint in her attack. If Mu Chen couldn't defend against it, he would probably be heavily injured, at the very least.

When the gazes from the surrounding groups saw this, their complexions slightly changed. When this woman becomes fierce, she's simply unable to be reasoned with. Mu Chen doesn't seem to have any grudge with her, but she was actually so merciless with her attacks.

Close by, Su Ling'er's pretty face also displayed some anxiety. However, it's too late for her to save Mu Chen. Therefore, she could only pray that he doesn't get hacked to death by Xu Qingqing.

Under everyone's gaze, Mu Chen also raised his head. His pitch-black eyes stared at the boundless sword beam as a cold light emerged from his eyes.

He slowly raised his hand and on his palm, black light gathered and turned into a small black-colored pagoda. From the looks of it, that small pagoda appeared extremely ancient, but there wasn't any excessively boundless fluctuations coming from it.

Someone saw the small black pagoda appearing on Mu Chen's hand, and his eyes concentrated on it, while murmuring, "Is that a Spiritual Artifact? With such weak fluctuation of Spiritual Aura, it's probably a Low Rank Spiritual Artifact. Relying on that, it's probably not possible to block that fierce attack from Xu

Qingqing!”

Mu Chen did not pay much attention to those whispers. The Spiritual Energy within his body was injected into the small black pagoda. Thereafter, he gave a flick of his finger and the small black pagoda flew out.

Boom!

The small pagoda flew out and instantly, the wind was dramatically raised. In an instant, it turned into a black coloured huge pagoda with approximately dozens of Zhang [1. A chinese unit of measurement. 1 Zhang is around 3.3m.]. The huge pagoda floated up in the sky and on the pagoda, countless profound dark-gold veined patterns could be vaguely seen.

Wooosh!

Boundless beam of light were whistling as it fell down. Thereafter, it struck the black pagoda. The two collided and, instantly, shocking metallic sounds were resounding as surging waves of aura dispersed.

Countless lines-of-sights gazed at that direction. Even after the black pagoda suffered a strike from Xu Qingqing, it didn’t split open. Black flashes rippled and the sword strike was blocked.

This scene instantly caused shock to show from their eyes. That black pagoda was actually so powerful?

“How can this be?” Xu Qingqing’s face changed upon the sight of this. That strike of hers earlier was sufficient to defeat any Heavenly Fusion Stage Late Phase. How could it be blocked by that small black pagoda from Mu Chen?

Xu Qingqing wasn’t the only one who was shocked. Even Mu Chen was shocked. This small black pagoda was the one that appeared within his body previously. In fact, towards this mysterious small pagoda, he didn’t have much knowledge about it. He only knew that it might be related to that mysterious Spiritual

Pulse that was sealed within his body. As for it's might, he knows nothing about it.

However seeing it now, it seems like it possessed powerful defensive ability...

"However, could it be that this black pagoda could only be used as a shield?" Mu Chen mumbled to himself. He could feel that this small black pagoda wasn't that simple. It shouldn't only possess such simple usage to it, right?

"Xiuu!"

Just when Mu Chen was mumbling to himself, the black pagoda suddenly emitted several black lusters. One of which streaked through the sky and shot towards Mu Chen.

The sudden unforeseen ability caused Mu Chen to be shocked. Before he could evade in time, he was shot by that black luster. Thereafter, he felt that there was some profound intent flowing out from his heart.

"This is...!"

Mu Chen received some mysterious information. A brief moment later, a smear of shock rushed into his eyes. This seems to be some of the controlling methods of the black pagoda.

"Nine-layered Pagoda."

Mu Chen stared at that black pagoda as a strange name appeared in his heart. Shortly after, he let a mouthful of breath out and both of his hands suddenly formed an extremely ancient seal.

Just when Mu Chen formed the seals, the Spiritual Energy within his body seemed to be disappearing with frightening speed.

At the same time the Spiritual Energy was disappearing, the black pagoda in the sky exploded with brilliant beams of light. At the most bottom layer of the black pagoda, the gloomy black colour gradually turned into a bright golden colour.

Ancient golden patterns occupied that layer of the pagoda. The gold patterns wiggled as a golden dragon soared. It soared into the sky with extremely shocking energy. The sky was filled with Spiritual Aura and emitted a huge ripple.

“Pagoda Suppression!”

Mu Chen’s hand seals changed and the Nine-layered Pagoda fiercely soared into the sky. Black light swept and at the first layer of the pagoda, overflowing golden luster swept out. The gold dragon roared as it dragged along with matchless immense shadow, as well as Spiritual Energy ripples and went to suppress Xu Qingqing, who had shock on her face.

His sudden burst of this astonishing attack made everyone’s expressions change. Xu Qingqing hastily retreated, but realised that she wasn’t able to retreat through the envelop of the Nine-layered Pagoda. She immediately mobilised her Spiritual Energy and the silvery long sword in her hands burst out like a silver python, along with silvery sword flashes and stabs towards the suppressing Nine-layered Pagoda.

Boom!

The sword flash clashed with the Nine-layered Pagoda. Those sharp sword flashes rapidly turned dull with shocking speed as fine cracks appeared on the sword.

Puff!

The Spiritual Artifact suffered heavy damage. Xu Qingqing’s face abruptly paled and a mouthful of blood was spurt from her mouth as she was sent flying back in a sorry state.

Wuuum!

It was as though that silvery long sword had issued a wail as her Spiritual Energy turned dull and flew back into Xu Qingqing’s hand. On the sword blade, fine cracks extended. It was a Middle Rank Spiritual Artifact, but was turned into scrap by the Nine-

layered Pagoda!

The entire area was in silence. Every eye that gazed in this direction was filled with shock. Especially Huo Feng, who had exchanged blows with Mu Chen earlier, his face was especially grave. He obviously didn't expect that Mu Chen would have such shocking cards up his sleeve. That suppression from the black pagoda earlier on, even if it was him receiving such an attack, even he would be in a sorry state.

Mu Chen looked at Xu Qingqing, who was sent flying. With a wave of his hand, the Nine-layered Pagoda shot back and landed on his palm, before disappearing.

He was also filled with shock in his heart. The formidability of this Nine-layered Pagoda had far surpassed his imagination. Furthermore, from the information that he had received earlier, this Nine-layered Pagoda had nine floors. Earlier on, he had only managed to mobilise the first layer. If he could mobilize all nine layers one day, wouldn't that kind of might be heaven defying?

Furthermore, it seemed that this Nine-layered Pagoda possessed a weird ability. Like earlier, it had directly laid a Middle Rank Spiritual Artifact to waste. If it was an ordinary clash, it's impossible to accomplish such a feat.

The Nine-layered Pagoda seemed to be the weakness of Spiritual Artifacts. It can simply be said as a Spiritual Artifact killer.

"My Silver Dragon Sword..."

Xu Qingqing held the dull silvery long sword in her hands as her eyes turned dull. Soon after, her pretty face turned extremely cold. Her eyes were fixed on Mu Chen as she spoke in a stern voice, "Mu Chen, I'll shred you to pieces!"

"Lu Long, Liu Xiao, kill him!" She yelled shrewdly. Her pretty face was twisted from her anger.

Close by, two figures flew over as their eyes gloomily stared at

Mu Chen. Both of them were Heavenly Fusion State Late Phase experts. Although they weren't within the top hundredth of the Heavenly Ranking, they're still powerful characters.

Seeing the sight of this, Mu Chen's brows were also slightly frowned. This Xu Qingqing was indeed ignorant, this kind of woman was the most annoying.

"Xiuu!"

However, when those two were about to take action, there was a sudden burst of Spiritual Energy coming from behind. An overflowing green light soared into the sky and everyone turned their attention towards it. In the huge wave, the Celestial Spirit Lotus was gradually blooming.

When the Celestial Spirit Lotus had fully bloomed, a heavy fragrance filled the air. After a whiff, the agitated Spiritual Energy within one's body felt as though it had calmed down.

Someone issued a cry, "The Celestial Spirit Lotus is about to bloom!"

Mu Chen concentrated and looked over at it. Within that "Celestial Spirit Lotus",there were lotus seeds that were flickering with dazzling luster. From the looks of them, they appeared to be as smooth and round as gems.

At this moment, with the blooming of that "Celestial Spirit Lotus", those lotus seeds also had signs of erupting. That Celestial Spirit Lotus had actually matured to the point where it would erupt automatically.

The countless gazes from the surrounding groups were boiling. Once the Celestial Spirit Lotus erupts, the situation would definitely be in chaos. At that time, they would have to depend on their luck to obtain those seeds.

"Get ready to snatch the lotus seeds!"

At the sight of this, Xu Qingqing could only clench her teeth as

she glanced at Mu Chen ferociously. If she were to attack Mu Chen right now, she would lose her chance to snatch the the lotus seeds.

Mu Chen paid no attention to her as he had also directed his gaze at that dazzling Celestial Spirit Lotus.

Practically everyone had their gazes gathered over there.

Those gazes slowly turned blazing.

Boom!

The Celestial Spirit Lotus had blossomed to its limit and, soon after, dark green light beams had fiercely erupted into the sky. The sky looked like it was decorated with jade. At the same time, that Celestial Spirit Lotus had completely exploded.

A surge of frightening Spiritual Energy storms swept forth and scattered the Spiritual Energy waves. In that storm, pearls of jadeite luster shot throughout the surrounding area at an astonishing speed.

Doooon!

The heavens and earth surged violently. Those countless shadows longingly pounced towards those jadeite pearls.

Chapter 208 – Seizing of the lotus seed

Boom!

The entire heaven and earth looked as though they're rumbling at this moment. The dark green rays of light shot throughout the surroundings at an astonishing speed. Countless people had charged at those rays of light with their eyes dyed scarlet red as they attempted to snatch them.

Bang! Bang!

However, these people had evidently underestimated the explosive power produced by the Celestial Spiritual Lotus. Under the impact, those Spiritual Lotus Seeds were like arrows that filled the skies. Some fellas who had ran out of luck ran made a head-on impact with them and before their hands could grab one, that splendid green luster had penetrated their palms and were spraying fresh blood.

Arghhh!

Mournful shrieks resounded incessantly in the ear. That bad luck fella grabbed onto his palm that's flowing with fresh blood as he issued a sharp howl.

Seeing that bad luck fella's situation, those people then cleared their heads a little and no longer dared to reach for the seeds. Instead, they circulated their Spiritual Energy, and control their Spiritual Energy into forms of hands before they tried to grab them.

Pffft! Pffffft!

Even with the obstruction of those Spiritual Energy covered hands, some of the green lusters were like hot knives through butter as they pierced through. Thereafter, they'd streaked across the horizon and after several blinks, they had disappeared to the border of the horizon.

Evidently, these Spiritual Lotus Seeds weren't so easily taken.

Mu Chen looked at the chaotic scene and was also a little shocked at the destructive energy of those Spiritual Lotus Seeds. It seems like these things weren't that easy to obtain.

Wooosh!

Just when Mu Chen was astonished, a surge of rapid wind came over. Raising his head, he saw a green luster. It had already broke through the blockade of everyone and flew straight to him.

Seeing it, Mu Chen flicked his finger and Spiritual Energy that contained black flames shot out and heavily clashed with that green luster.

Bang!

A spiritual aura exploded from the impact, but that green light still managed to pierce through. Its speed wasn't any slower compared to before as it was shot out.

"I'll see where can you still run to!"

Mu Chen smiled. He clenched his fists and that Nine-layered Pagoda had, once again, appeared. He waved his sleeve and that black pagoda flew out. It had appeared before that green luster. With the pagoda aiming for that green luster, its black lights surged and had devoured it.

Bang!

That green luster had charged into the Nine-layered Pagoda. The body of the pagoda trembled and flew over several hundred zhang away. Thereafter, the black pagoda stabilised. With a flash of light, it flew back towards Mu Chen.

Mu Chen extended his palm and the black pagoda landed on his palm. Black light was rushing out, before it dispersed. A green luster appeared on his palm. The light then dispersed again and turned into a thumb-sized green lotus seed. That lotus seed was a

jade-green, smooth and round. A fragrance was followed by a surge of pure Spiritual Energy ripples that constantly spread out.

“This is the Spiritual Lotus Seed?”

Mu Chen looked at the green-coloured lotus seed in his palm. By just holding it in his hand, he sensed that the Spiritual Energy within his body felt as though it had settled down a lot more. It was to the point that even his blood and qi that was disrupted by that Spiritual Energy had also calmed down a lot more.

“Indeed, a wonderful item!” Joy flashed through Mu Chen’s eyes as he exclaimed in admiration. It seems like this Spiritual Lotus Seed does have the effect of solidifying Spiritual Energy.

At this moment, many people in the surrounding area have also seen Mu Chen obtaining the Spiritual Lotus Seed. Jealousy was in their eyes, but no one was covetous to the point of taking actions against him. Previously, when Mu Chen and Xu Qingqing fought, the strength that he revealed made them understand that this newcomer that had just come to the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy for a few months wasn’t any pushover.

The chaos in this zone still continued. However, after Mu Cheng, there were several people that experienced a burst in their luck. Taking advantage of that moment, they managed to stop several Spiritual Lotus Seeds, which attracted the attention of countless scarlet eyes.

Mu Chen kept that Spiritual Lotus Seed and shifted his gaze to another direction. His eyes were burning. With such an opportunity, he definitely can’t let such a chance go.

The Nine-layered Pagoda in his hand was capable of taking these Spiritual Lotus Seeds. Relying on its special characteristic, he doesn’t have to worry about the Spiritual Lotus Seed’s frightening impact.

Thinking about it here, he didn’t have the slightest hesitation.

With a flash of his figure, he exploded and flew to another direction. With a flick of his palm, the Nine-layered Pagoda appeared once again. Black light bubbled and all of a sudden, it was abstruse and mysterious.

Mu Chen carefully searched for his targets. He didn't go snatch for those Spiritual Lotus Seeds that were eyed by others. But had directed his target towards those Spiritual Lotus Seeds that had managed to charge out the blockage of others.

Very quickly, he searched for his targets once again. The Nine-layered Pagoda flew out and the wind sharply increased. It turned into a huge pagoda and was heading towards a green luster.

Dong!! Dong!!

That green light was covered by the Nine-layered Pagoda. The body of the pagoda intensely trembled but very quickly, that powerful resisting force disappeared, bit by bit.

Mu Chen's palm waved and that Nine-layered Pagoda flew back to his hand, along with the Spiritual Lotus Seed.

Another Spiritual Lotus Seed had fallen into his hands.

The gazes of those in the surrounding area all had their eyes turning red. Many of them couldn't even stop a Spiritual Lotus Seed even with so many of them combined. However, Mu Chen was able to obtain it so easily.

There were only ten Spiritual Lotus Seeds in that Celestial Spiritual Lotus and that fella had gotten two of it on his own!

Mu Chen did not bother about those gazes. Those Spiritual Lotus Seeds were extremely rare and were priced at 200,000 Spiritual Value points each. Having this kind of opportunity, how could he miss it?

Thereafter, he kept the Spiritual Lotus Seed with a flip of his hand. Sweeping his eyes, he's already searching for new targets.

“Xiuuush!”

Just when he was about to act, several gales violently brushed over as they headed towards the vital parts of his body.

The sudden attack caused Mu Chen’s eyes to turn cold. The Nine-layered Pagoda in his hands flew backwards as it expanded and shielded him from behind.

Daaang! Daaang!

Metallic sounds resounded and the Nine-layered Pagoda was jolted back some distance. However, those gales from the sneak attacks were all obstructed.

Mu Chen then turned around as he coldly stared at the person that attacked him. It was Xu Qingqing, Lu Long and Liu Xiao, those three.

“Hand over the Spiritual Lotus Seeds; otherwise, I wouldn’t mind offending you!” Xu Qingqing extended her jade-like hands as she made the cold demand.

Mu Chen heard what was said, but smiled instead. He shook his head as his tone carried an undisguisable amount of loathing, “Handing them over to you? Who are you?”

Hearing Mu Chen’s manner of speaking, Xu Qingqing’s face turned ashen as she bit her teeth, “Kill him!”

Hearing what Mu Chen had said, the other two had also looked at Mu Chen with an unkind gaze. Although they wouldn’t go as far as to kill him, beating Mu Chen up was still extremely easy.

Mu Chen’s gaze also turned cold as he issued a cold laugh. If they wished to play, then he’ll accompany them to the end.

“Xu Qingqing, what are you guys doing? You’re bullying with higher numbers?!”

However, just when Mu Chen was about to take actions, a tender bark resounded from the distance. Su Ling’er was seen rapidly

closing in with several people and appeared before Mu Chen.

“Su Ling’er, this has nothing to do with you. Mind your own business!” Xu Qingqing said in hatred.

“Not possible.” Seeing how mad Xu Qingqing was, Su Ling’er smiled like a flower as she turned around towards Mu Chen and said, “Go and take the Spiritual Lotus Seeds. I’ll block them for you.”

Hearing her, Mu Chen slightly hesitated, but had nodded his head in the end. Compared to taking the Spiritual Lotus Seeds, fighting with Xu Qingqing was evidently a waste of time.

“Then, I’ll have to trouble you.”

Mu Chen smiled towards Su Ling’er and flew away.

“YOU!”

Seeing this, Xu Qingqing’s face instantly turned ugly as she barked, “All of you, get lost!”

When she barked, her figure burst out. Behind her, Lu Long and Liu Xiao were closely following from behind. Thereafter, they were obstructed by Su Ling’er’s group and a chaotic battle instantly broke out between them.

Just when Su Ling’er was obstructing Xu Qingqing and her group, Mu Chen was once again, searching for targets. Overall, the amount of Spiritual Lotus Seeds were afterall, limited. There were only a dozen or so of them. Because of that, after a round of everyone snatching them, there weren’t that many targets left that Mu Chen could grab.

As a result, Mu Chen searched for more than ten minutes, before having the chance to harvest another Spiritual Lotus Seed. Thereafter, the chaotic heaven and earth was gradually restored to its original scene. All those Spiritual Lotus Seeds have all been snatched away.

Seeing as the skies have become quiet once again, Mu Chen lightly smiled. Three Spiritual Lotus Seeds is already considered a decent harvest, which can be seen from all those covetous gazes that were cast in his direction.

In both heaven and earth, that surging Spiritual Energy waves had also dissipated bit by bit. In the end, the gorgeous sky was restored to its original appearance.

Su Ling'er's battle had also stopped with the retreat of those Spiritual Energy waves. Xu Qingqing's face was ashened. She was actually unable to even get a single Spiritual Lotus Seed, she'd completely come in vain.

"That brat called Mu Chen, you've obtained three Spiritual Lotus Seeds. Give one to me and I'll forgo today's matters. Otherwise, I'll let my brother know about this and in the future, you can only dream on mingling in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy!" Xu Qingqing said as she stared at Mu Chen with her teeth tightly clenched.

"Ha! You think I'm afraid of you? Get your brother to look for my sister then." Su Ling'er coldly smiled.

Xu Qingqing viciously pierced Su Ling'er a glance. Thereafter her face was looking at Mu Chen with cold glare. The latter lightly smiled, "500,000 Spiritual Value points for one."

Many people in the surrounding were stunned. 500,000 Spiritual Value points? Is this kid insane? No matter how precious the Spiritual Lotus Seeds were, they weren't worth this amount. He's obviously trying to infuriate Xu Qingqing to death.

Looking over, Xu Qingqing's tender body was indeed trembling from the anger. After so many years in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, since when had anyone provoked her like this before?

"You wait! I, Xu Qingqing, will definitely not let this matter go!"

Xu Qingqing's ample bosom was heaving up and down. She left those words of hatred, before she waved her sleeves and left, filled with anger.

Looking at Xu Qingqing's leaving silhouette, Mu Chen lightly smiled. He truly does have a natural life of offending others.

The big brother of this Xu Qingqing should be Xu Huang, right? An existence of Heavenly Ranking's Rank 5... It seems like he has offended another powerful figure. However, there's a saying: 'When there are too many debts, one stops to worry.' Since he's already going against Li Xuantong, there's no difference with having another Rank 5 of the Heavenly Ranking as an opponent.

Chapter 209 – Experts of the Heavenly Ranking

Mu Chen looked at Xu Qingqing's silhouette. Towards her threat, he dismissed it with a laugh. He then turned his head towards Su Ling'er and smiled. "Senior Sister Ling'er, thank you for this matter."

"What Senior Sister Ling'er? That sounds wrong. My age isn't that far from yours!" Su Ling'er rolled her eyes at Mu Chen.

Mu Chen smiled and didn't argue with her on this matter. Seeing how unruly and ridiculous Xu Qingqing was, this Su Ling'er before him seemed like a cute fairy.

"Oh right, this Spiritual Lotus Seed is for you, consider it my thanks." Mu Chen extended his hand and there was a round lotus seed on his palm emitting a green luster. A surge of pure spiritual energy dispersed from it.

"For me?" Su Ling'er was a little astonished. She originally did not think that Mu Chen would be this generous. After all, the Spiritual Lotus Seed was obtained by him. The reason why she had taken action earlier on was simply because of her grudge against Xu Qingqing and her actions couldn't be considered a sincere helping gesture.

"Of course, this can also be considered my apology for my actions before." Mu Chen laughed.

"You!"

Su Ling'er's face flushed red as her eyes were filled with indignation. Her tone carried urgency, "You're not allowed to talk about that matter anymore. You better forget about that, otherwise...otherwise, I will never forgive you!"

Mu Chen helplessly smiled and said nothing further to agitate her. Mu Chen passed the Spiritual Lotus Seed over to her.

Su Ling'er stared at that jade-like lotus seed and hesitated for a brief moment, before she extended her slim and jade-like fingers to take it from Mu Chen's palm.

Su Ling'er fiddled with the Spiritual Lotus Seed in her jade-like hand. Unconcealable joy appeared in her eyes, before raising her shapely brows and smiled. "Consider you knowing what's right. I'll be a person of great moral and not pursue with your offences. I'll not haggle with you anymore."

Mu Chen smiled. "Since that's the case, then I'll leave first."

He had stayed in this Convergence Array for half a month, so it's time that he leaves.

"Let's go, I'm also tired of staying here." Su Ling'er sweetly smiled.

Seeing that, Mu Chen did not refuse and nodded. He turned into a streak of light and flew towards the exit of the Convergence Array. Seeing this situation, Su Ling'er lead her group and followed behind him.

Along the way, the two of them conversed and became more familiar with one another. Without the grudge from before, they could discard the prejudice within their hearts and realised that it's indeed possible for them to be friends with one another.

Mu Chen appeared outside the Convergence Array. Looking at the familiar scenario and the streaking figures that filled the sky, he couldn't help breathing out a mouthful of air in relief. Although there were students cultivating everywhere within the Convergence Array, the feeling that it gave wasn't the same as being in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Over here, the feeling was much more comfortable.

"I'll be returning to the freshmen area. Come and play if you have some time." Mu Chen smiled as he bid Su Ling'er farewell. Right now, he had set his heart on heading home. Although it was

just a month or so from not seeing Luo Li, his heart was filled with yearning.

Su Ling'er nodded and spoke nothing else as she also wanted to return home. These last few days were extremely exhausting for her.

Mu Chen cupped his hands and spoke no further. He turned around and flew towards the freshmen area. Su Ling'er glanced at his silhouette and stared at him for a brief moment, before turning her agile body and flew towards another direction.

...

When Mu Chen returned to the freshmen area, evidently, it had also aroused some uproars. Many eyes from the freshmen were filled with heat.

"Brother Mu has returned from his training?"

"Seeing Brother Mu's imposing manner, it seems like his cultivation has stepped up even more. No wonder he's the number one of our freshmen class!"

"Psh, all you know is bootlicking. However, Brother Mu truly is looking more and more dashing... With him overseeing the Goddess Luo Association, we'll definitely shine in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy in the future....."

Hearing the voices from all different directions, Mu Chen couldn't help showing a smile on his face. These slapsticks made him feel warmth in his heart.

"Okay, okay. Get out of my way!"

A resonant voice resounded from the front and Zhou Ling was seen striding over. He smiled as he called everyone to disperse. Thereafter, his line of sight was shifted to Mu Chen with his eyes filled with amazement.

"You've broken through the Heavenly Fusion Stage?"

Before Mu Chen could reply, Zhou Ling smacked his lips, “Formidable.”

Since Mu Chen was able to go head-on with someone of the Heavenly Fusion Stage Late Phase while at the Spirit Stage Late Phase, now that he had broken through into Heavenly Fusion Stage, doesn’t that mean that he wouldn’t fear even a Heavenly Fusion Stage Late Phase?

Mu Chen gazed speechlessly at Zhou Ling as he shoved him away. His gaze fell towards the plaza before him. Over there, stood a smiling black-dressed girl. Her features were exquisite, peaceful, yet elegant. Her slim figure was beautifully outlined. Her gem-like eyes carried a faint smile as she stared at him.

No matter where she was, she was so outstanding that it makes it hard for others to ignore her. At the plaza, there were many freshmen cultivating and their line of sights were also shifted over uncontrollably. Their eyes had unconcealable adoration.

Looking at her, Mu Chen’s heart had calmed down, bit by bit. Together with her, even if an enormous matter had fallen, Mu Chen could still be able to maintain his calmness.

Zhou Ling looked at both of them and shrugged his shoulders. He gave up, feeling like an irksome light bulb[1. Unwanted third party.]...

Mu Chen breezed forth. He disregarded the gazes of everyone as he extended his hands and pulled Luo Li’s jade-like warm delicate hand. The latter’s face slightly flushed, but made no efforts to struggle.

Seeing Luo Li’s slightly flushed expression, everyone couldn’t help sighing in their hearts. This quiet girl that looked as though she was in her own world. She would only reveal such a girlish appearance before Mu Chen.

This made the others couldn’t help but to be jealous and envious

of Mu Chen, who made her reveal such a charming appearance.

“Have you met any troubles during your cultivation in the Convergence Array? Earlier on, that Su Ling’er came and was overbearingly looking for you, but was kept off by me. She should have gone looking for you.” Luo Li said, lightly.

“Yeah we’ve met. If we didn’t fight, we wouldn’t be friends. Right now, we can be considered as friends.”

Mu smiled before spreading out Luo Li’s hand and placed a smooth and round Spiritual Lotus Seed in her hands. “I snatched this when I was in the Spirit Convergence Array, you can have it.”

“This is a Spiritual Lotus Seed?” Zhou Ling moved in as his eyes were shining with light. He has been loitering in the Spiritual Value Hall recently and, naturally, he had heard of how priceless this seed was.

Mu Chen nodded, “However, I’ve only managed to get two of them, so there’s none for you.”

Hearing what was said, Zhou Ling smacked his lips in regret. “It seems like you weren’t quiet in the Convergence Array. However, Luo Li hasn’t been wasting her time either. Right now, she’s an expert of the Heavenly Ranking.”

“Heavenly Ranking?”

Mu Chen was shocked and, thereafter, shifted his gaze in astonishment towards Luo Li. Those that were able to step into the Heavenly Ranking must be those that possessed strength of Heavenly Fusion Stage Late Phase. Luo Li had actually reached that step?

Mu Chen shifted his gaze onto the distant majestic tablet. His sharp gaze swept through the tablet and saw some familiar words.

Heavenly Ranking Rank 83, Luo Li. Freshman.

“You actually thought about charging into the Heavenly

Ranking?" Mu Chen was a little flabbergasted. With Luo Li's temper, she shouldn't have liked to reveal herself by charging into the Heavenly Ranking.

"Luo Li didn't have that kind of thinking, but was forced without a choice." Zhou Ling shrugged and continued, "You're well aware of how powerful Luo Li's charm is. Few days ago, when you were in your seclusion training, Luo Li met a rather hateful fly in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. The moment that fella saw Luo Li, his eyes were heated and he came around, pestering her."

"Oh?"

Mu Chen narrowed his eyes and his brows were slightly knitted together, appearing to be rather unhappy.

"That fella can still be considered to have some fame in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. He was the former Heavenly Ranking's Rank 83. Afterwards, when Luo Li was a little frustrated with him, she took straightforward actions." Zhou Ling chuckled, appearing to be taking joy in the calamity of others. When he recalled that scene, he was really delightful.

"But who knew that he wasn't Luo Li's match? In just a few rounds, he lost to Luo Li and ran with his tail between his legs and his ranking in the Heavenly Ranking was lost due to this, and was replaced by Luo Li."

Mu Chen only then understood. The placing in the Heavenly Ranking can only be obtained by defeating someone on it. Luo Li had defeated that fellow and, therefore, was able to move into the Heavenly ranking.

"In the future, if there's a similar situation, let me handle it."

Mu Chen held onto Luo Li's hands and said, forging a grave expression. Since someone dared to prey on his corner, he'll definitely get rid of them, no matter how many came.

Luo Li ridiculously glanced at him. Her gaze however, was filled

with joy. No matter what, as long as she could be by him, her heart would then be joyous.

“Let’s return first.”

Seeing so many people around, Mu Chen swung his arms as he pulled Luo Li into their house. Between the two of them, it’s still best not to have those light bulbs around.

Returning back to their house, Mu Chen pulled Luo Li as they came to the top of the building. He then looked at that clear lake and lazily sat down. Luo Li had also sat down beside him as a sweet fragrance was being carried by the wind.

Luo Li raised her head and looked at Mu Chen’s dashing cheeks. She lightly smiled and placed her head on Mu Chen’s shoulder. Her slender and long eyelashes slightly blinked and slowly closed.

Sensing the lean weight coming from his shoulders, Mu Chen shifted his head and looked at those porcelain-like delicate cheeks and was slightly dazed. This simple movement had instantly softened his heart. This kind of feeling was similar to him becoming her reliance in this world.

“Luo Li, there’ll be a day when I will make you feel at ease and able to release your burden. No matter what you’re bearing, even if it’s the heavens or earth, I’ll help you lift it up.” He said in a light tone.

The young girl’s eyelashes slightly moved and her rosy lips were risen into a warm curve. She gave a light ‘En’ as acknowledgement to his words.

Chapter 210 – Training in the Deity Tier Spiritual Art

The night gradually darkened. Mu Chen sat on the bed as the ice-cold moon pierced through the window and shined on him, bringing along a slight chill.

Mu Chen lowered his head and stared at that round and smooth Spiritual Lotus Seed in his palm. The overflowing and pure Spiritual Energy ripples were constantly being emitted from it. The fragrance from the seed had also filled the entire room.

After looking at the Spiritual Lotus Seed for a brief moment, he swallowed it. When the Spiritual Lotus Seed had entered his mouth, it turned into surges of Spiritual Energy and went into his body. Although this Spiritual Energy was forceful, it was mild and pure. It did not cause the slightest inconvenience for Mu Chen. Compared to those violent treasures, the attribute was entirely different.

Surges of Spiritual Energy rippled in Mu Chen's body. He circulated the Great Pagoda Art as he constantly refined these Spiritual Energies. After all, these refined Spiritual Energies were absorbed by his Spirit, as well as the Seed of Fire. The final product was that dark-black Spiritual Energy that was also burning with black flames.

When that surge of Spiritual Energy was absorbed by Mu Chen, a peculiar ripple was being emitted. That ripple was rather mystical. Whenever it fluctuated, the originally flaring Spiritual Energy slowly calmed down. A kind of steadiness and profound intent gradually rippled out.

That steadiness made Mu Chen feel indescribably carefree. It felt like something was suddenly forming while floating in the void or like a collapsing palace suddenly gaining a steady firm pillar. Expelling all of its unsteadiness.

Haaaa

Mu Chen uncontrollably breathed a mouthful of white mist in comfort. A faint luster also emerged from his face. Only the current him as of this moment, could be considered a genuine Heavenly Fusion Stage.

Previously, he could only be considered to have just managed to step into the door of Heavenly Fusion Stage and was not even in thorough control of a phase yet. However, relying on the miraculous effects of the Spiritual Lotus Seed, Mu Chen was able to polish to that level in an instant. This kind of foundation that he possessed far surpassed ordinary Heavenly Fusion Stage.

“It’s indeed worthy of being a rare treasure that even if one possesses 200,000 Spiritual Value points to purchase from the Spiritual Value Hall, there might not even be any of them for sale.” Mu Chen praised. Perhaps the effects of the Spiritual Lotus Seed might not be comparable to other treasures; however, its effect of solidifying foundation was the most realistic. Only with a solid foundation can one have the possibility to dash for a higher level in cultivation.

After absorbing that Spiritual Lotus Seed, and solidified his cultivation, Mu Chen muttered to himself. With a clench of his fist, a black-coloured scroll was appeared in his hand.

That black-coloured scroll was constantly emitting a black luster. This luster formed the illusions of the four primordial beasts around the scroll. The four of them roared. It’s as if their roars had pierced through time and space, coming from the ancient times.

That scroll was the Four Gods Constellation Scripture that Mu Chen had obtained from the Spiritual Arts Hall from before. Because he was in seclusion earlier on, he hadn’t had the time to study it. But now, he finally had the chance to do so.

This Four Gods Constellation Scripture was a little strange. If it wasn’t for that black paper summoning it, it’d definitely be

impossible for Mu Chen to obtain it. This had proved how extraordinary this item was.

The grade of this Spiritual Art wasn't clear, but, at the very least, it was stronger than a Quasi-Deity Tier Spiritual Art.

As time passed, from the two months that was given by Li Xuantong, there's only ten days left. Mu Chen had a feeling that Li Xuantong wasn't joking with him. If he couldn't make a satisfying decision to Li Xuantong, the latter would definitely disregard everything and force him to leave Luo Li.

And that kind of situation was not what Mu Chen wanted to see.

Therefore, to prevent that kind of situation from happening, he had to do his best in increasing the number of cards under his sleeve. There were as many experts as clouds in the sky in this Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. On the Heavenly Ranking, all of them were formidable figures that definitely mustn't be underestimated.

After pondering this, Mu Chen cast his line of sight onto the black-coloured scroll in his hand as his eyes gradually turned grave. After a brief moment later, he slowly shut his eyes.

A faint black luster surged out from the black-coloured scroll. Thereafter, it entwined around Mu Chen's palm. At the same time, Mu Chen's body jolted as he immediately felt a vast amount of information rushing into his mind.

Boom!

When that vast amount of information had rushed into Mu Chen's mind. Intense booming pain came from his mind and in that instant, he lost his consciousness. His surrounding scenery abruptly changed.

Mu Chen swept his astonished gaze around and realised that he seemed to be in a deep starry sky, unable to see the heavens or earth. Before him was an enormous black-coloured scroll as it

slowly pulled open. A black luster surged out as old ancient words flashed into his eyes.

There were four spirits at four directions. They were the Azure Dragon, White Tiger, Vermilion Bird and the Black Tortoise. The four spirits gathered, suppressing even the heavens and earth.

There wasn't excessively complicated introductions, only that simple row of words. However, it had a majestic surge that caused Mu Chen's breathing to turn sluggish.

Roar!

Suddenly, a deep roar resounded in the starry sky. Directing his line of sight over, he saw the luster appearing in the four sides of the starry sky. Vaguely, they formed huge dragon, tiger, bird and tortoise.

At this moment, the starry sky was constantly changing. Mu Chen looked at it, feeling intoxicated. The stars began to turn fuzzy. In the end, it turned into extremely cryptic primordial seals.

Those primordial seals were reflected in Mu Chen's eyes as he firmly memorise them in his mind.

The seals that were formed by stars gradually dispersed after a long time and Mu Chen had woken up. The starry sky gradually vanished and Mu Chen opened his eyes. Within his eyes were gasps of surprise, as well as astonishment.

From those primordial seals, he could sense a towering frightful power.

"This is the Deity Tier Spiritual Art?"

Mu Chen murmured to himself. Shortly after, he deeply inhaled a mouthful of air as his expression became serene. Both of his hands had come together and formed into primordial and bizarre seals.

His seals changed. Even though it was a little unfamiliar and

sluggish, but the changes in the seals also carried a hint of ancient and boundless auras. It incited the Spiritual Aura in the surrounding heavens and earth to be a little boiling.

Mu Chen's seals changed an entirely ninety-nine times and when the last seal was formed, his forehead was already filled with beads of sweat. Within his body, large amounts of Spiritual Energy had also been consumed.

Ohmmm!

When he made ninety-nine changes, the Spiritual Energy within the room abruptly turned violent. Between his palms was an ascending luster that appeared like a bright sun. Within it, was the vaguely contained roars of a tiger.

A frightful ripple spread out.

Mu Chen glanced at that bright sun-like luster gathered within his palm. With a move, he flashed out of the room and appeared on the giant lake at the freshmen area. Pushing his hands out, thunder-like barking came from his throat, "Four Gods Constellation Scripture, Divine Seal of the White Tiger!"

ROOOOAR!

A world-shaking tiger roar resounded. The surrounding Spiritual Energy in the heavens and earth gathered towards him. That white luster in Mu Chen's palm expanded and in the end, a scorching sun surged forth and formed into a enormous white lustered tiger with the size of approximately a hundred feet. That white tiger issued a roar as it flew out and ferociously shot into the lake.

BOOOOOM!

The enormous lake of several thousand feet in radius suddenly vibrated. Huge waves rolled and ferociously hit the surrounding shores, causing booming sounds to linger in one's ears.

Mu Chen looked down at that huge crater as the lake gradually calmed down. Lowering his head to both of his hands, Mu Chen's

brows were tightly knitted together. Although the might of that attack wasn't weak... Mu Chen could feel that he had yet to unleash the true power of the Four Gods Constellation Scripture.

When he was executing it, he could feel that there was something crucial that he was lacking.

Mu Chen submerged into his thinking. Just what was he lacking?

He stood on top of the lake and raised his head, looking at the abstruse night. Caresses of breeze fluttered his clothes as he sunk into contemplation and doubt.

He recalled the forming white tiger earlier on. The Spiritual Energy was violent, but it lacked in grandeur. That was simply an ordinary white tiger form, lacking the grandeur of a genuine white tiger.

Having the shape, but lacking the soul.

Therefore, the real power of the white tiger seal couldn't be unleashed.

Mu Chen's eyes suddenly lit up but very quickly, he became helpless again. Azure Dragon, White Tiger, Vermilion Bird and Black Tortoise were reputed as the spirits of the four directions. They were also superior existences among the Divine Beasts, standing at the pinnacle. Only a few of the superior beasts could be compared to them. Wanting to study such deities was simply impossible for the current Mu Chen.

Mu Chen cast the side of his mouth down in dejection. Deity Tier Spiritual Arts are indeed extraordinary. Even if others obtained it, trying to succeed in training in it wasn't so simple.

He sighed as he shook his head. Mu Chen never thought that he would suffer such a plight when he had just started training in it. Right now, he could only grope about it slowly for the time being.

"Hmm?"

However, when Mu Chen was planning to give up for the time being, his thoughts suddenly moved. Right now, there was nothing he could do to the Four Gods Constellation Scripture. However, he wondered if that mysterious black paper could give him some aid?

Since that black paper could attract the Four Gods Constellation Scripture over, there must be some link between the two.

Mu Chen's gaze faintly flickered and his mind had immediately entered into his aurasea. His gaze was fixed on that mysterious black paper. That paper had no reaction, not even having the slightest light emitted from it. It looked normal and ordinary, like an ordinary object.

Mu Chen stared at that mysterious black paper and pondered for a brief moment. His mind moved and saw the Spirit that was seated on top of the Spiritual Energy Wheel stood up and appeared before that black piece of paper.

His Spirit stood firmly as both of his hand suddenly came together. Primordial and cryptic seals changed shakily. These seals were exactly the same as what Mu Chen had executed earlier on.

As the seals changed, there wasn't any activity from the mysterious black piece of paper. This had made Mu Chen's mind sink. When the last of the ninety-nine seals solidified, he couldn't help sighing in disappointment.

Ohmmm!

However, when Mu Chen's sigh had ended, a mysterious buzzing shook and suddenly spread out in his aurasea.

Mu Chen's Spirit suddenly rose his head and, in his eyes, a dense ecstasy surged out.

Before him, that mysterious black piece of paper that didn't have any movements had finally, at this moment, emitted faint black luster. A buzzing sound resounded in his aurasea.

There's finally a reaction from that black piece of paper!

Chapter 211 – Comprehend

Mysterious black light was released bit by bit from that black piece of paper. Vaguely, he could see some cryptic and ancient light patterns as they slowly spread on the paper, bit by bit.

Mu Chen looked at this scene with a little excitement. So many years had passed since he obtained this black piece of paper and it's the first time he had seen such activity from it.

Ohmmmn! Ohmmn!

Black light constantly gathered on top of that black piece of paper. Shortly after, that black light looked as though it had turned into a starry sky. Countless stars were floating on it. A snow white enormous tiger stepped onto the starry sky as it roared towards the sky. That roar shook the starry sky and an endless killing aura omnipresently engulfed everything. For a brief moment, the Spiritual Energy in Mu Chen's body had actually been intimidated to the point that it had stopped circulating and his entire body froze.

He was overwhelmed with shock as he gazed at that white tiger that stood on the starry sky. Raging waves were rummaging in his heart. This white tiger before him was definitely not any ordinary tiger, as it possessed that grandeur of a supreme divine beast!

Although it wasn't material, that grandeur was sufficient to shake the heavens and earth!

The Four Gods Constellation Scripture that he was training in was lacking this kind of grandeur that was possessed by the original four mythical beasts!

In the aurasea, Nine Netherbird was also flapping its wings, its gaze was fixed on the white tiger that was standing on the starry sky above the black page of paper. Its eyes were filled with restraining fear and grief. As spiritual beasts, it could naturally

sense the genuine might that was released from this white tiger. Even ordinary Divine Beasts were incomparable to its prestige.

White Tiger, one of the four mythical beasts was indeed, a well-deserved reputation!

Mu Chen also inhaled a mouthful of air and gradually restored his calm. This White Tiger before him was just an illusion. However, this illusion was different, as it possessed the genuine killing aura that only the genuine White Tiger possesses.

Mu Chen looked at the White Tiger that was stepping on the starry sky, then slowly closed his eyes, quietly comprehending the killing aura that was emitted from the White Tiger.

He had to integrate this grandeur into his seal, so that he'd be able to unleash the genuine might of the Four Gods Constellation Scripture.

However, it's evident that trying to complete this step wasn't easy. Even if Mu Chen was able to comprehend the killing aura brought from this White Tiger before them, there still wasn't any major results.

On the contrary, Mu Chen wasn't disappointed. Since he had found the way to truly train the Four Gods Constellation Scripture, he only needed a little time and he should be able to truly succeed in training it.

Thinking about it here, Mu Chen restrained all urgency and calmed his state of mind, before exiting from his aurasea. With his exit, the luster from that mysterious black piece of paper had also rapidly dispersed and was restored to its former state. Only the Nine Netherbird was still looking at it in alert.

On the lake, Mu Chen opened his eyes and the sky was already brightly lit. He stretched his body and returned to his small house.

Over the next few days, Mu Chen had been submerged in comprehension. The moment he had time, he would enter his

aurasea and look at the roaring White Tiger figure that stood on the starry sky. That blowing, inexhaustible killing aura was like a cold stream that could even freeze the blood of others.

While Mu Chen was being carried away in his comprehension, over the next few days, although the “Divine Seal of the White Tiger” executed by Mu Chen hadn’t unleashed its full might, it was much more powerful, compared to his first execution of it.

According to this speed, perhaps it wouldn’t be much longer and Mu Chen would be able to truly unleash the might of the “Divine Seal of the White Tiger”.

Towards that day, he’s filled with expectation.

…

At the top of the house, Mu Chen quietly sat down, but he wasn’t cultivating. Instead, he was lazily basked in the sunlight. He had always been comprehending that killing aura of the White Tiger these days, causing his state of mind to be a little influenced by it. The Spiritual Energy within his body was also fluctuating in a peculiar way. But fortunately, he had refined a Spiritual Lotus Seed and therefore, he could pacify that peculiar fluctuation. However, he also knows that this should have been caused by being immersed in that comprehension. Therefore, he’s relaxing a little today, not daring to be completely wrapped up in the comprehension anymore.

Beside him, sat Luo Li. Her originally bundled lustrous long hair had also been untied and was drooping down, dazzling to the eyes, like the milky way. Her slender and tender body had outlined her developed and slightly plumped curves because of her sitting posture. Looking at her, she seemed exceptionally graceful. At this moment, she was holding a scroll and was earnestly going through it. That seemed to be a scroll of Spiritual Art.

Mu Chen held his face up as he leaned his face to the side, looking at the earnest Luo Li. He couldn’t stop grinning. This scene was

indeed beautiful and was calming to the heart. And his state of mind, which was affected by the White Tiger's killing aura earlier, had also gradually calmed down.

Woooosh!

However, that tranquility wasn't long lasting. Suddenly, sounds of sonic booms came and a figure urgently came over, landing on the top of the small house. It was Ye Qingling.

"What's wrong?"

Mu Chen raised his head and looked at Ye Qingling. At this moment, the latter's face was filled with anxiety.

"Something happened. Today, we brought a group of people to cultivate in a Rank 6 Spirit Convergence Array, we ran into a bunch of unfamiliar seniors. They were exceptionally rude and unreasonable, and forcefully chased the members of the Goddess Luo Association out of the Convergence Array. Zhou Ling wasn't willing to comply, and was wounded by them. They even gave Sun'er a slap!" Ye Qingling said with an anxious tone.

"What?!"

Mu Chen's eyes instantly turned cold. Who was it that went so far? Slapping even a small girl like Sun'er?

"Who was it? Our Goddess Luo Association shouldn't have offended anyone. Could it be the Azure Red Community, which Mo Lun is from?" Luo Li had also rolled up the scroll and said with her brows slightly knitted together.

"It wasn't those of the Azure Red Community." Ye Qingling shook her head and bitterly smiled, "They're more troublesome compared to the Azure Red Community. It's the Great Desolate Association."

"Great Desolate Association?" Mu Chen was slightly baffled.

"Is it that Great Desolate Association which Xu Huang of

Heavenly Ranking's Rank 5?" Luo Li asked as she had some understanding towards these matters.

"Yeah."

"Xu Huang?" Hearing this name, Mu Chen was slightly dazed. Thereafter, his eyes had thoroughly turned cold. "Among those bunch of people, was there a girl named Xu Qingqing?"

"Sun'er was slapped by that wretch!"

Ye Qingling immediately nodded her head as her eyes were filled with rage. If it wasn't for Zhou Ling asking her to come back and look for Mu Chen and Luo Li, she would have probably fought with Xu Qingqing.

"So it really was her!"

Mu Chen's eyes had also turned thoroughly cold. This Xu Qingqing was indeed too much. Was she treating him as someone that was easy to mess with?!

His eyes were shady as he stood up, "Sorry about it. The origin of this matter was me. That Xu Qingqing is probably wanting to give me trouble. I've implicated everyone."

Ye Qingling blanked. Although she didn't know how Mu Chen had a grudge with that Xu Qingqing, she still shook her head, "This can't be blamed on you, it's that Xu Qingqing that's gone too far."

"Bring me with you." Mu Chen looked towards Ye Qingling. The chill in his deep voice was unable to be concealed. Anyone can see that Mu Chen are genuinely angry.

In that Rank 6 Spirit Convergence Array, Xu Qingqing had constantly looking to make trouble for him, but Mu Chen was too lazy to bother with her. Therefore, he wasn't bothered about it. However, he never thought that she would actually dare to take action against those of the Goddess Luo Association. Furthermore, she even dared to slap such a cute little girl like Sun'er!

“That Xu Qingqing brought quite a bit of people with her. Among them, there were four that had reached Heavenly Fusion Stage Late Phase. Within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, they still have some fame.” Said Ye Qingling.

“I’m coming along as well.”

Seeing Mu Chen’s gloomy expression and with her understanding towards him, she naturally knew that Mu Chen had gotten truly angry and immediately stood up. Although Mu Chen’s current strength had undergone a huge increase, the other party had greater numbers. She’s afraid that Mu Chen would suffer a loss.

Mu Chen nodded his head and Ye Qingling had immediately flew away, leading them from the front.

The three of them quickly exited the freshman area and swiftly headed towards a corner in the vast Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Approximately ten minutes later, their speed finally slowed down. On the vast stone platform, the Spiritual Aura was distorted. It was a Rank 5 Spirit Convergence Array.

Wooooosh!

The three of them rushed into the Rank 5 Spirit Convergence Array. Not long after they had entered, they saw two batches of people confronting each other on a vast stone platform before them. One of the forces was evidently, more powerful and suppressed the other party.

Around the platform, there was quite an amount of people observing. They could also tell that those on the left side should be freshmen and as for those on the right, they were people of the Great Desolate Association that possessed enormous fame in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Both sides weren’t of the same level to begin with.

This kind of action was undoubtedly bullying, but no one dared

to speak of it. The Great Desolate Association wasn't an ordinary force in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, as their leader was the Rank 5 of the Heavenly Ranking, Xu Huang. Xu Huang was extremely powerful, so there wasn't that many people that would dare to provoke him in the entire academy.

Standing at the front of the group, Xu Qingqing's face carried a trace of a cold smile as she looked at the slightly frightened freshmen.

Over at Goddess Luo Association's side, Zhou Ling's face had some bruises. Previously when they fought, he couldn't go a few rounds with them and was defeated by a Heavenly Fusion Stage Late Phase fellow.

By the side of Zhou Ling, those members of the Goddess Luo Association were also clenching their fists as they stared at Xu Qingqing. Their eyes were filled with fiery rage.

"Big Brother Mu is here!"

Suddenly, someone pleasantly spoke up. Zhou Ling and the rest immediately raised their heads. Indeed, they saw three figures rapidly closing in and landed before them. It was Mu Chen, Luo Li, as well as Ye Qingling, the three of them.

"Mu Chen!" Zhou Ling was also in great joy.

Mu Chen nodded towards Zhou Ling, then looked at the latter's side. By his side, stood a twin-tailed little girl with pitch-black eyes that's currently looking at him with watery eyes. There was also a red palm mark on her snow white cheeks.

"Big Brother Mu Chen."

When Sun'er saw Mu Chen, her hands rubbed her cheeks as she sniffed, trying her best not to let her tears fall. Her grievant appearance made others that looked at her to feel sorry for her.

Mu Chen's expression had also gradually turned ice-cold.

Chapter 212 – Two Slaps

When Mu Chen appeared on that stone platform, quite a few people in the surrounding area had shock smearing across their eyes. Among the freshmen, Mu Chen and Luo Li had the most fame.

Mu Chen rose to fame because of that huge battle during the Freshman Competition, whereas Luo Li had rose up to the Heavenly Ranking previously, which was known to many students in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.

Looking at it right now, both of them seemed to be gathered and were also standing on the side against the Great Desolate Association.

However, although Mu Chen and Luo Li's fame were rising, the Great Desolate Association wasn't any simple force. In the entire Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, those that could surpass them can be counted on one's fingers. Mu Chen, however, was still a fledgling and it'd be difficult for him to contend against them.

"Hoo, you've finally appeared."

Seeing Mu Chen, a smear of a cold smile instantly appeared on Xu Qingqing's face, "Did you really treat my words back then in the Rank 6 Spirit Convergence Array as a joke? You've offended me, Xu Qingqing, and still want to have a good time in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy?"

"Are you the one that hit her?"

Mu Chen didn't have much of an expression on his face as he pointed towards Sun'er. His voice was calm, like water without much ripples of emotion.

Xu Qingqing cast a glance at Sun'er, who had red palm marks on her little face. The little girl's appearance with watery eyes did indeed attract the pamper of others, however, she cast the corner

of her mouth to the side. At such a young age, she already knows how to feign the pitiful victim to attract men.

“I was the one that hit her, who lets her to be so untactful to have the cheek to contradict me. It’s already light that she only got a slap.” Xu Qingqing coldly laughed.

“If I encounter people like you in the Spiritual Road… ”

Mu Chen stared at Xu Qingqing, his handsome face had a smear of smile. However, in that smile, it was filled with chill and a smear of killing intent.

“…I would have killed you.”

When Mu Chen’s last sentence came out coldly, his gaze turned ice cold.

Xu Qingqing felt the deep killing aura within Mu Chen’s words, her face had also changed. But shortly after, she flew into a rage out of humiliation and screamed, “Who the hell are you? Before me, you still dare to act that?!”

Mu Chen’s gaze remained cold as his body slightly leaned forward. However, just when he was about to charge out, the black-dressed girl by his side took a step before him. Her figure was extremely fast and seemed like lightning. Even Mu Chen was only able to catch her fuzzy afterimage.

Luo Li’s figure instantly appeared before Xu Qingqing. At this moment, her delicate face had a faint chill that was spreading out.

“Who are you?” Seeing Luo Li before her, Xu Qingqing’s brows were raised. She looked at her delicate appearance that even a woman would be envious of. A trace of jealousy rose in her heart.

Luo Li’s glass-like eyes faintly stared at her, but she didn’t speak a word. Her jade-like hand was raised and suddenly moved with her palm open.

PAAAAA!

Luo Li's hand was like lightning. She didn't have the slightest mercy and heavily slapped Xu Qingqing's face. That crisp sound resounded from the stone platform.

Xu Qingqing's face turned over from that slap on her face. She opened her mouth and her eyes widened, appearing to be a little blank, as she didn't have the time to respond.

She was actually slapped?

After that crisp slapping sound had resounded from the stone platform, all those who were whispering from before looked as though they had been chopped off. Everyone's expressions were a little solidified as they blanking stared at this scene.

Those members of the Great Desolate Association behind Xu Qingqing were also dazed. They're very clear of how crafty and unruly Xu Qingqing was, borrowing the fame of her brother, Xu Huang. Although there were people within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy that hated her, those people could only restrain their loathe and welcome her with smiling face. And today, Xu Qingqing was actually slapped in front of so many people?

They were in a daze, staring at the black-dressed girl before Xu Qingqing. Her delicate appearance had made them slightly absent-minded.

"You...!"

Xu Qingqing's rosy lips slightly trembled as she slowly turned her face around and looked at Luo Li before her and mutter with a hard to believe voice, "You dared to hit me? You dared to hit me?!"

"That slap earlier, was for Sun'er." Luo Li looked at her with an indifferent expression. Thereafter, her expression turned cold and her jade-like hand was raised, her palm open again.

PAAA!

The crisp sound resounded again and caused everyone's hearts to twitch.

“This slap was for you scolding him earlier on. In the future, when you scold him once, I’ll slap you once.” Luo Li retracted her jade-like hands and faintly declared.

The burning pain from her cheeks had thoroughly woken Xu Qingqing up. However, insanity rushed out from her eyes. He face was a little distorted as she looked at Luo Li. With a grasp of her jade-like hand, a longsword appeared with a flash. After pouring Spiritual Aura into it, she was making a mad attempt to pierce Luo Li’s throat, “I’ll kill you!”

A black-coloured longsword slide into Luo Li’s hand as she abruptly grabbed onto the sword hilt. Images of a sword appeared as the sword stealthily slashed out a profound trajectory and heavily landed on Xu Qingqing’s wrist.

Claaang!

A bruise instantly appeared on Xu Qingqing’s wrist as her longsword fell.

Xu Qingqing issued a shriek as she grabbed her wrist. Her eyes turned red and her originally somewhat pretty face became a little distorted and unsightly. She screamed in insanity, “Kill her! Quick, kill her for me!”

At the current moment, Xu Qingqing had nearly gone insane. Over the years, she had been used to being unreasonable and tyrannical in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Since when has she ever suffered such humiliation before? Those two slaps nearly gave her a kind of fainting feeling.

She knows that if this matter were to spread out, it would definitely be a laughing joke in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. How would she have any face left?!

The large amount of seniors behind Xu Qingqing had also recovered from their shock. After all, this Xu Qingqing was the sister of Xu Huang and today, she was slapped before their eyes. If

they didn't do anything, they wouldn't be able to explain themselves.

"Junior, aren't you a little too heavy with your hand?"

A youth with an ordinary appearance, but with some chill in his expression took a step out as he barked. He extended his hand out as his forceful Spiritual Energy swept out and made a grab towards Luo Li like eagle claws.

"If I'm you, I wouldn't want to touch her!"

However, just when his hand had extended out, a voice with ice in his tone resounded. A figure flashed forth from behind Luo Li and a fist flew out. Surges of Spiritual Energy mercilessly shot towards that youth with rising black flames.

"Hmph!"

Seeing it, that youth's face had also changed. Forming the shape of claws with his hand, Spiritual Energy within his body surged. On his fingertips, Spiritual Energy looked like they had been crystallized as it carried sharpness and heavily collided with that fist of black flames.

Bang!

The two of them collided as violent Spiritual Energy ripples swept out. The face of that youth had changed at that moment as he felt a surge of blazing sensation coming from his fingertips. Those peculiar black flames were actually igniting his Spiritual Energy as it attempted to intrude into his body.

Those black flames seemed to have great harm towards Spiritual Energy.

The gaze of that youth flashed and he urgently retracted his fist as his figure backed off dozens of steps.

Woooosh!

Seeing that youth moving backwards, a low uproar had instantly

spread out in the surrounding. They all knew that youth, his name was Chen Xiu. He can be considered one of the higher ranked members in the Great Desolate Association. Right now, his strength had reached Heavenly Fusion Stage Late Phase and it's said that he possessed the qualification to fight for the top 100 in the Heavenly Ranking. They never expected that he would be knocked back by Mu Chen in a single exchange.

“Chen Xiu, you trash. You can’t even take care of a freshman?! All of you, go! Capture them! I want to kill that little tramp!” Seeing the situation, Xu Qingqing’s body was trembling from the anger. Her sharp voice was flustered and exasperated. The her right now had lost a little of her rational.

Chen Xiu and the rest, seeing that Xu Qingqing was making an unreasonable scene, were making faces that weren’t that nice either. They were from the Great Desolate Association, but they weren’t slaves of Xu Qingqing. If it wasn’t for Xu Huang, they probably wouldn’t even pay any attention to Xu Qingqing.

Mu Chen stood before Luo Li as he looked at Xu Qingqing, who had her face distorted from anger, as well as Chen Xiu and his group with a cold expression.

Luo Li’s jade-like hand was lightly grasping the black longsword. Her glass-like eyes did not show too many ripples. Her gracefulness and calmness was exactly opposite of the unreasonable Xu Qingqing. This caused everyone to have their lips twitch in their hearts. Compared to this Luo Li, Xu Qingqing was lacking quite a bit.

Xu Qingqing made a bursting unreasonable scene, but seeing that no one paid attention to her in the surrounding area, she was trembling from the anger. She pointed towards Chen Xiu’s group and bit her teeth, “Fine, since you guys don’t want to take action, I’ll do it myself. If I’m killed, I’ll see how you guys explain yourselves before my big brother!”

Chen Xiu's group had the corners of their mouths twitching. Within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, killing is forbidden. Only crazed women like you would shout about killing someone.

Xu Qingqing however, did not care about what they were thinking. Grabbing onto her longsword, she was about to charge out as if her life depended on it.

"Qingqing!"

Just when she was about to rush out, a low bark resounded. It was like booming thunder as it resounded on the stone platform. Hearing that voice, joy immediately filled Xu Qingqing's face.

"Big brother!" Xu Qingqing hastily raised her head. She saw a figure flashing not far away and in a several breaths, he appeared above this area. Thereafter, he flashed down and landed beside Xu Qingqing.

When Zhou Ling and the rest had heard Xu Qingqing shouting "Big Brother", their hearts abruptly sank. In this Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, there's only one person that could be called this name by Xu Qingqing.

Their lines of sight shifted to Xu Qingqing's side with a little fear. Over there, a luster dispersed and revealed a thin figure. He was donned in grey clothes. His face wasn't handsome at all and his eye socket was slightly caved in. That pair of eyes had a kind of hawk-like sharpness. When his eyes swept, it caused fear to arise in the heart of others.

This person was Rank 5 of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy's Heavenly Rank, Xu Huang?

Such a person had actually appeared!

Chapter 213 – Two Powerful Figures

When that grey-robed youth appeared on the stone platform, the atmosphere instantly became stagnant. The surrounding observing students also swallowed a mouthful of saliva. They must have never expected that this matter would actually attract such a ferocious person like Xu Huang.

This kind of figure was extremely rarely seen in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.

Mu Chen's line of sight also shifted to that grey-robed youth in an instant. The latter's eyes were caved in and had a sharp and uncomfortable chill.

He stared at that grey-robed youth as his body became slightly tense. He could sense a dangerous aura coming from that person and this person before him, aside from Li Xuantong, was the most powerful person that he had seen in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy so far.

"Boss!"

When Chen Xiu and the rest saw the appearance of that grey-robed youth, they all hastily shouted.

"Big Brother!"

...

Xu Qingqing immediately pounced forth and grabbed onto Xu Huang's arm and cried, "You have to seek justice for me, that little tramp did that to me in the eyes of so many. My face has been thrown away!"

Xu Huang took a glance at Xu Qingqing's reddened cheeks that were slapped and his brows were slightly knitted together. Naturally, he's well aware of his little sister's character. But no matter what, she's still his biological sister and no matter what she'd done wrong, he still had to carry the troubles that she had

landed herself in as her elder brother. This was what was told to him by his father, when he left for the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.

“Explain.” Xu Huang’s said as he looked at Mu Chen’s group with his brows frowned.

Mu Chen’s brows were also frowned and said, without much ripples in his words. “There’s nothing to explain. Ask those people under you. They’ll naturally tell you what had happened. Furthermore, if your mouth is still not clean, then it won’t stop at just two slaps.”

As his words ended, he was already looking at Xu Qingqing. His tone was forbidding and his black pupils were filled with ice-cold murderous intent.

Hearing what was said, Xu Qingqing wanted to scream in anger. However, after seeing Mu Chen’s devouring gaze, her heart suddenly froze and could not speak the words that had reached her mouth.

Everyone couldn’t help slacking their lips inwardly. Such great courage of Mu Chen to actually dare to threaten Xu Qingqing before Xu Huang.

Xu Huang’s caved-in eyes stared at Mu Chen. Along them, flowed with chilling rays of light which also made others understand that he wasn’t someone that could be easily messed with.

“The amount of people within this Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy that could speak such words before me doesn’t exceed the fingers of one hand. Do you think that you’re also among the ranks? Freshman?” Xu Huang’s voice was a little deep as it carried a heart trembling power.

“Even if you’re Li Xuantong, I’d still dare to say it.” Mu Chen said as he smiled indifferently.

“Really?”

Xu Huang coldly smiled. Evidently, he had treated Mu Chen's words to be ignorant jokes. He pointed at Xu Qingqing and continued, "She's my little sister. Even if she was arrogant, considered everyone else beneath her and making trouble without reason, she's still my little sister. I can discipline her, but not you."

"Like sister, like brother." Mu Chen understood why Xu Qingqing's character was like this, it was all caused by Xu Huang's spoiling. Serves her right for being taught a lesson today.

"Hand over the one that hit her. Seeing that you guys are freshmen, I won't have much haggle with you guys." Xu Huang stared at Mu Chen and waved his hand. He's after all, an influential figure of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. If he were to have too much haggle with freshmen, he would be bringing his status down and would also attract the gossip of others. Saying that he's bullying the weak.

Luo Li's eyes were ice-cold as she grab hold onto the black longsword and stepped forth. However, she was stopped by Mu Chen's hand.

"It looks like Senior Brother Xu Huang is going to seek justice for her without finding out the rights and wrongs?" Mu Chen faintly smiled. He originally thought that Xu Huang was someone that could be reasoned with a little, but he never expect that he would still be so imperious and overbearing. No wonder he had such a sister.

"What do you think?" Xu Huang looked at Mu Chen as his caved eyes were slightly covered with a shadow. His sharp gaze made others not daring enough to looking into them.

Mu Chen smiled as he shook his head. "It's impossible for me to hand her over. No matter what Senior Brother Xu Huang wants to do, we'll accept all of it. Except that I still have to offer an advice. Your little sister's character needs some discipline. It's still good within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, but if she were to

go out... haha, I'm afraid that she'd suffer."

Seeing that Mu Chen still dared to lecture her at this moment, Xu Qingqing was instantly angered to the point that she was gnashing her teeth.

"Accept them?" Xu Huang's brows was slightly frowned. His sharp gaze was vaguely like a chilling sword edge as he stared at Mu Chen, "Are you certain that you're capable to accept them?"

Boom!

Just when the last of Xu Huang's words landed, his eyes had thoroughly turned cold as a surge of shocking Spiritual Energy rolled out from his body, like storm. The people in the surrounding area were jolted back in a sorry state.

A powerful Spiritual Energy shrouded over with intense pressure, making it difficult for all of the present students to breathe. Their faces had undergone a huge change. Is this the strength of Heavenly Ranking's Rank 5? He's actually strong to such an extent?!

Mu Chen's expression had also turned grave. That surge of Spiritual Energy's pressure before him caused even his breathing to become stagnant. He immediately circulated the Great Pagoda Art. As if there were sounds of ancient bells resounding within his body and endured this oppression.

Beside Mu Chen, Luo Li's beautiful glance slightly concentrated. Her hand that was grabbing hold onto the black longsword slightly exerted force. Facing the pressure of Spiritual Energy from Xu Huang, she had not taken a step back.

"Heavenly Transform Stage!"

Mu Chen's expression became grave as he stared at Xu Huang, whose expression was sharp as a blade. This kind of oppression was absolutely not something that a Heavenly Fusion Stage could possess. Evidently, Xu Huang has reached Heavenly Transform

Stage!

“Hand her over and I won’t haggle with you guys over this matter. Today’s matter will then end here.” Xu Huang faintly said as he pointed to Luo Li.

Mu Chen smiled. Heavenly Transform Stage was indeed powerful, but that doesn’t mean that he would be afraid. If Xu Huang has really gone too far, he wouldn’t mind borrowing the power of Nine Netherbird to crush him.

Although this would reveal the matter that he didn’t ingest the Soul Essence of the Nine Netherbird, but had formed Bloodline Bond with it. But wanting him to hand Luo Li over was obviously impossible.

“Stubborn.”

Xu Huang’s expression had finally turned ice cold and he had also lost patience to chat with Mu Chen any longer. He took a step forth and was about to take action.

“Boom!”

Suddenly, just when Xu Huang was about to take action, a surge of powerful pressure of Spiritual Energy rolled over omnipresently from far away. A ray of light also flew over.

“Xu Huang, if you want to touch her, I’m afraid that I won’t agree to it.”

A faint voice came from the distance and approached. When everyone had directed their gazes over, a figure appeared above the stone platform and slowly landed down beside Mu Chen and Luo Li.

“Li Xuantong?!”

When everyone saw that handsome youth, they instantly issued alarming sounds. Shortly after, their eyes were burning with fiery light. Who could have imagined that in such a short amount of

time, two of the top 5 rankings in the Heavenly Ranking made their appearance? Furthermore, one of them was the current rank 2, Li Xuantong!

When the number 1 of the Heavenly Ranking, Shen Cangsheng wasn't here, who else can be compared to Li Xuantong?

"Li Xuantong?" Seeing the appearance of Li Xuantong, Xu Huang was also stunned. He had obviously not expected that this guy would appear here. Standing beside him, Xu Qingqing's face was also changing. Originally, she thought that they were just frail and weak freshmen. She never expected them to have some connections with Li Xuantong!

Mu Chen was also a little surprised by the appearance of Li Xuantong. This guy would actually help them? This was indeed strange. However, a majority of it should be for Luo Li. Otherwise, he definitely wouldn't be willing to show himself.

"Li Xuantong, this matter should have nothing to do with you?" Xu Huang said with his brows creased. Towards Li Xuantong, he obviously had some restraining fear for him. If he fought with Li Xuantong today, this matter would be troublesome.

"I won't bother as long as you don't implicate her." Li Xuantong faintly smiled as he continued, "However, the fault in today's matter was indeed not with them. I feel that there isn't a need to enlarge this matter."

Xu Qingqing was gnashing her teeth. Li Xuantong's words had obviously said that she was in the wrong. However, when facing people like Li Xuantong, she knows that she wouldn't dare to offend him no matter how arrogant she was. She could only swallow this grievance.

Xu Huang's brows were creased together. After looking face-to-face with Li Xuantong for a brief moment, he turned to Mu Chen and spoke, "I'll give him face this time. But freshman, there won't always be a time where someone will help you. Next time, I will

definitely not give you this chance.”

“Then, I’ll be looking forward to it, Senior Brother Xu Huang.” Mu Chen smiled as he cupped his hands. Within his smile, there wasn’t the slightest fear.

Xu Huang’s expression was cold as he deeply looked at Mu Chen. He didn’t say anything else as he waved his hand, turned around and headed towards the exit of the Spirit Convergence Array. Seeing him, Xu Qingqing could only stomp her feet in anger and followed up. She knew that it’d be impossible for her to get back her face today.

As Xu Huang and his group left, the surrounding students had also been dispersed bit by bit. They all felt pity as there wasn’t an intense battle. However, being able to see two influential figures of the Heavenly Ranking’s top five had already made their trip worthwhile.

“Thanks.”

Mu Chen looked towards Li Xuantong and thanked him. Although he wasn’t afraid of Xu Huang, it’s naturally good if he could conceal some secrets.

“If it wasn’t for Luo Li, I wouldn’t be bothered with this.” Li Xuantong faintly said. His tone did not give any face which caused Luo Li to have her brows creased. She pulled Mu Chen’s hand and was about to leave.

“Mu Chen.”

Li Xuantong’s gaze fell onto the hands of those two. “The time that I’ve given you will soon end, what’s your answer?”

Mu Chen’s steps stopped as he held onto Luo Li’s delicate little hand and faintly smiled. Tightly grabbing and showing it towards Li Xuantong. The meaning was self-evident and left with Luo Li. A calm and firm voice resounded.

“Senior Brother Li Xuantong, you reveal your sword, I accept

your move.”

Li Xuantong looked at the two of them as their figures moved further away and breathed a mouthful of air out. Raising his head to the azure sky, sharpness slowly turned more and more condensed in his eyes.

What an unresigned kid. Since that’s the case, then let me see if you have the qualification to make the choice.

Chapter 214 – Requesting a Battle

The matter with Li Xuantong and Xu Huang appearing in the Grade 5 Spirit Convergence Array, along with the confrontation, soon spread out in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. The two of them were influential figures and their fame was much more powerful compared to Mu Chen's. All information concerning them had attracted countless attention.

The top ten of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy's Heavenly Ranking were all formidable figures. Regarding this point, everyone was well aware of it. Or to put it this way, those that were ranked in the top ten would rarely take any action, as they are well aware that the other party was not to be trifled with. Therefore, they were considered to be barely harmonious between each other, as long as there weren't any other special reasons.

Li Xuantong and Xu Huang, one of them was Heavenly Ranking's Rank 2, while the other being Rank 5. All of them possessed strength of Heavenly Transform Stage and with such strength, not mentioning the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, even in the entire Northern Heavens Continent, they could still be considered as experts. In some Sects or Forces, they could be considered middle to high rank existences.

If the two of them were to fight, it would definitely shake the entire Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. However, what made others feel pity was that there wasn't any fight between them. Seeing that Li Xuantong had appeared, Xu Huang brought his men and left. Although he said that he was giving Li Xuantong face, he obviously had some fears as well. Even if they were to be tangled over it, it also wouldn't help in the least. Therefore, he might as well leave free and easy.

Therefore, this confrontation had ended with nothing definite, which made everyone more disappointed. However, their disappointment only lasted for a day, before they were shocked by

the storm-like news that spread out in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.

Li Xuantong issued a Battle Notice.

This piece of news had spread throughout the entire Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy in just a few hours. Every student that received this news was shocked for a moment, before they touched their ears, doubting if they were hearing it right.

Heavenly Ranking's Rank 2, Li Xuantong was issuing a Battle Notice against a freshman?

What's with this situation?

Who is Li Xuantong? Who is Mu Chen? One being high up, the influential figure of Heavenly Rank's Rank 2. One being a freshman that had just entered the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy several months ago. Although the latter had resounding fame, how could he be compared to people like Li Xuantong?

Such odd confrontation had actually appeared? Furthermore, it was Li Xuantong who issued the notice?

The entire Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy was bursting with shocking commotion. This could be considered the most unusual thing that has happened in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy this year. It's rarely that Li Xuantong would take action, and no one had expected that this time around, he would actually challenge a freshman as his opponent. Is he trying to have joy brought to him by crushing others?

However, no matter how they guessed, this matter had already been spread out. This caused some ripples for the freshman called Mu Chen. No one knew how that guy offended Li Xuantong to the point that the latter would actually issue such a notice.

This battle would probably be a dull farce. There wasn't any suspense in this battle.

However, to be able to witness the super influential Heavenly

Ranking's Rank 2 taking action again, it's still pretty good. Hopefully, the current number one freshman wouldn't be beaten to the point that he would be dispirited.

...

Somewhere in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, in a huge hall. Xu Huang's brows were knitted together as he heard the report from the guy below and said softly in doubt, "Li Xuantong actually issued a notice to Mu Chen? Didn't he just help them?"

Beside Xu Huang, Xu Qingqing had a face of rejoicing in other people's misfortune. When she heard this news, her eyes couldn't help expressing laughter as she clenched her teeth. "Big Brother, it's evident that Li Xuantong is interested in Luo Li and the one that Luo Li likes is Mu Chen. Yesterday when Li Xuantong came, it was because of Luo Li. There isn't any relationship between him and Mu Chen."

Xu Huang lightly nodded, realising that this made sense. That Luo Li was exceptionally outstanding. Whether it was her appearance or demeanor, they stood at the peak of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. The only one that could be compared to her at this point would probably only be Su Xuan. However, one being sweet-tempered like water and one being quiet and distant. Their demeanors were entirely different.

"This Mu Chen would probably have his face thrown out, this time around." Xu Huang said lightly. This battle didn't have much suspense. If Li Xuantong wished, he could suppress Mu Chen into a dog-like sorry situation. This Mu Chen was evidently, a prideful person. After suffering such a setback, his cultivation in the future would always be in that shadow.

"He deserves it!" Xu Qingqing said viciously. She was impatient as she wanted to see that battle two days later. She wanted to see if that guy would still have that indifferent expression that enraged her when he was being stepped beneath someone's feet.

Xu Huang held onto the teacup and lightly took a sip. He smiled indifferently.

“Go take a look two days later. Although the outcome would be dull.”

...

“This Li Xuantong is too much, to the point of even issuing such a notice!”

Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, on another isle in the middle of a lake. Su Ling’er looked at the red-coloured Battle Notice that was spread out. Her shapely brows instantly creased and said, as she felt injustice for Mu Chen.

At the lakeside in front of Su Ling’er, there was a slender beautiful woman with fine, black hair draped down like a black waterfall. At this moment, she was at the lakeside washing a round jade bead that was also emitting a faint luster. The surface of the jade bead was filled with profound line patterns and vaguely, there was also a type of obscure Spiritual Energy ripples coming from it.

Hearing Su Ling’er’s voice from the back, she slightly tilted her head and revealed a gentle and beautiful face as she asked in doubt, “What’s wrong?”

“Big Sister, this Li Xuantong is too much. He actually issued a Battle Notice to Mu Chen!” Su Ling’er said as she was fuming with anger. What’s Li Xuantong’s strength and what’s Mu Chen’s strength? This Battle Notice is simply meant to bully others.

“Oh? How did this happen?”

Hearing what was said, Su Xuan’s eyes were smeared with astonishment. Li Xuantong was a prideful person. Therefore, it’s rare for him to commit stuff like bullying the weak. But why did he do this?

“It’s rumored that Li Xuantong is fond of Luo Li and Luo Li likes Mu Chen... Thereafter, Li Xuantong did this out of jealousy.” Su

Ling’er said as he cast the corner of her mouth to the side.

Su Xuan glanced at Su Ling’er oddly and felt her tone of speaking was somewhat wrong. However, she still shook her head and said, “I still understand Li Xuantong’s character. Even if he’s jealous of a rival in a love affair, he also wouldn’t do this. There must be another reason for him to do this.”

“No matter what reason it is, issuing this kind of Battle Notice is still bullying.” said Su Ling’er.

“Li Xuantong has long stepped into the Heavenly Transform Stage and Mu Chen is at the Heavenly Fusion Stage Initial Phase. How can he win against Li Xuantong?”

Su Xuan couldn’t bear not smiling. Her smile was gentle and charming, “Sometime ago, weren’t you shouting about finding Mu Chen’s trouble? Why did you suddenly help him to speak up, instead?”

Su Ling’er’s charming face blushed as she mumbled, “Mu Chen this person, is still not bad. Previously, I didn’t understand him. This time, we wouldn’t be able to be friends if we didn’t fight. We could barely be considered as friends and, therefore, I would naturally think a little more for him. Furthermore, he’s on the weaker side. If I don’t help him, am I going to help Li Xuantong instead?”

Su Xuan stored the ancient jade bead and said, “Since the Battle Notice has already been issued, this matter is fixed. There’s no use in fighting it, no matter what’s being said, unless Mu Chen doesn’t take up the battle. If he doesn't take up the battle, others would also find it proper and to be expected as a matter of course.”

“Impossible.” Xu Ling’er immediately shook her head and continued, “Although that guy appears gentle from his looks, he’s actually very conceited. The Battle Notice has already been sent out. Even if he knows that he will lose, he’d still probably fight.”

“Then, there’s no way.” Su Xuan shook her head and continued again. “Right now, we can only wait for two days later and look at the situation again.”

Su Ling’er also sighed. Right now, that’s the only thing that they could do. They hope that Mu Chen would be able to resist this blow. Even if he lost to Li Xuantong, it’s not anything embarrassing.

At the same time, at other places in the academy, those that could be considered as influential figures in the academy were also startled by this Battle Notice. Thereafter, they were surprised. It’s been a while since Li Xuantong fought and this time, he’s actually challenging a freshman?

That’s interesting. Two days later, they can go and have a look to treat it as some fun.

…

“That’s too much. Li Xuantong is simply bullying! Big Brother Mu, don’t be bothered about him. We’ll not accept this Battle Notice!”

The freshmen area was also boiling. In that plaza, Zhou Ling and the rest had their faces filled with rage. In their hands, there’s a red-coloured Battle Notice.

“Right, Big Brother Mu, even if we don’t accept this Battle Notice, no one will say that we’re weak!” someone echoed.

Among everyone, Mu Chen was also looking at the Battle Notice in his hands. Through his expression, he didn’t find it unexpected. Evidently, he had already expected that the actions that Li Xuantong spoke of should be acted upon, personally by himself.

Beside Mu Chen, Luo Li’s delicate charming face slightly had an ice-cold expression. Shortly after, she turned around and was about to look for Li Xuantong, but her jade-like arm was grabbed by Mu Chen.

“Don’t get involved in this matter, let me handle it.” Mu Chen looked at Luo Li. Although his voice was light, it had unquestionable earnest and firmness.

Luo Li nibbled on her lips. Li Xuantong wasn’t Yang Hong and, in this battle, there wasn’t any fairness that can be said. However, when she looked at Mu Chen’s eyes and saw the seriousness, Luo Li understood that it’s impossible to change Mu Chen’s answer and had to endure this matter.

“After this matter, I’ll go look for him.” Luo Li said. She respected Mu Chen, but at the same time, she had her own forbidden lamella[1. There’s a chinese saying that if one touches the forbidden lamella of a dragon, you’ll invite its wrath.]. Li Xuantong interfered with her matter again and again, this had also touched her bottom line. Although she understood that perhaps, he didn’t have any bad intentions.

Mu Chen helplessly smiled, but said nothing. He turned his head towards Zhou Ling, who was showing nervousness on his face. He knows that the countless people in the entire Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy were probably looking towards them, waiting for his reply.

Mu Chen wedged that blood-red Battle Notice between his fingers. Black flame rose between and the Battle Notice was thoroughly ignited. At the same time, his light voice slowly resounded as the black flames grew.

“Zhou Ling, spread the news. Regarding this Battle Notice, I’ll accept it.”

Chapter 215 – Spirit Battle Stage

The matter with Li Xuantong's Battle Notice spread throughout the entire Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Just when everyone was waiting for Mu Chen's reply, the news finally came out from the freshmen area.

And this news caused them to be shocked again.

Mu Chen had actually accepted the battle!

Hearing this reply, countless students were secretly smacking their tongues inwardly in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. What great courage from Mu Chen, to daringly accept the battle. They didn't know if he's courageous or reckless.

Towards Mu Chen's reply, there were some that sneered and mocked, whereas there were some that shook their heads and sighed. There were also people being a little curious. To be able to become the number one among the freshmen, Mu Chen shouldn't be a fool. Since he dared to accept the battle, then he should have some methods up his sleeves. Except, they didn't know if those methods would be able to compete against Li Xuantong.

But, no matter what, this matter had undoubtedly become Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy's sensational major event. Countless students that were originally in the Spirit Convergence Array and Lightning Territory dropped their cultivation and came out upon hearing this matter, preparing to witness the most attractive sparing battle in this half year in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.

When everyone raised their heads in hope, two days quickly passed. In these two days, Mu Chen had been in the small building, cultivating. Even those of the Goddess Luo Association rarely saw him. Clearly, he ought to be making preparation for the upcoming battle that startled countless students in Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.

Although Zhou Ling and the rest were worried, they didn't go and bother Mu Chen. Since he had already accepted the battle, there's no longer any chance to back out. This battle was already unavoidable.

That being the case, they can only allow Mu Chen to make more preparations.

All of them really didn't wish for Mu Chen to beat Li Xuantong, as this matter was too absurd. Li Xuantong wasn't Yang Hong, as he had cultivated in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy for many years. He had long broken through into Heavenly Transformation Stage and Heavenly Fusion Stage students like them, weren't on the same level as him. It's true that Mu Chen had many methods up his sleeves, but the gap between the two wasn't so easily complemented.

And now, everything would be left to the battle that startled the entire Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy and made everyone focus their attention.

In the small building at the center of the freshman area, Mu Chen quietly sat at the top of the building. He raised his head and looked at the endless starry sky with a calm expression. He didn't feel nervous about the approaching battle.

"You still haven't gone to rest?"

A delicate fragrance rushed from his back as Luo Li's soft voice resounded. Mu Chen turned his head over. At this moment, the young girl with her ink-black clothes and long hair that was draped down appeared, with some steam coming from her hair, as she had just finished bathing.. Her exquisite features caused even the moonlight to be inferior.

Mu Chen smiled as he nodded.

Luo Li lightly moved her lotus steps as she got close to Mu Chen and slightly hesitated. She said, "I seem to have brought some

trouble for you."

In the course of two days, Mu Chen had been cultivating and his words have decreased by a lot. Luo Li could obviously sense that Li Xuantong had given great pressure to Mu Chen.

Mu Chen frowned as a gentle light of anger flashed across his eyes. He reached out for her soft and delicate waist and pulled her into his embrace. He raised his hand and heavily smacked her perky butt that was wrap under the black clothes and snorted, "If you say such words again, you'll receive more smacking."

Luo Li's exquisite face instantly flushed red as she gave Mu Chen a shy, yet angry stare.

"In this world, since when is it easy to eat a swan? Not to mention that the one in my embrace is the princess of all swans."

Mu Chen smiled and placed his forehead onto hers. His voice was serious, "Luo Li, I like you. Therefore, I can crush all of the troubles that was caused by you. I did not decline Li Xuantong's request for battle, because I know that this is only the first battle. In the future, perhaps more of these will appear. However, I have to tell you that I will crush whatever hinders us from getting together."

"If I lose such an outstanding wife, where will I go and find another? Furthermore, I still hope to bring you back to Northern Spiritual Realm, letting my father to take a look at his daughter-in-law. I have to let him know that my eyesight is tip-top."

Hearing Mu Chen's words, gentleness appeared at the corner of Luo Li's mouth. But soon after, her face flushed red. She couldn't endure the shyness within her heart and angrily barked, "Who's going back with you?"

"At that time, it'll no longer be your choice." Mu Chen grinned. His smile felt as though a small rabbit had fallen into the mouth of an ash-grey wolf.

Taking a glance at him, her girlish attitude was exceptionally sweet and charming. It was different from her usually quiet and distant attitude and made Mu Chen dazed from looking at her appearance. Shortly, those black pupils made Luo Li feel an uneasy heat rising to her face.

She lightly twisted her body, but her slim waist was embraced even tighter by Mu Chen. She then saw Mu Chen slightly lower his head and his heated breathing was blowing on her lovely cheeks.

As though she knew what Mu Chen was going to do, her delicate cheeks blushed red. She bit on her red lips and lightly shut her eyes.

Let it be. Give him some encouragement since he'll have to fight tomorrow.

Just when she was thinking, with her heart beating fast, Mu Chen's lips went towards those lukewarm lovely lips. Covering those rouge cherry lips.

Luo Li's body had turned stiff at this moment and after a moment later, only then did she soften up. Her slender jade arm unconsciously hooked around Mu Chen's neck. She slightly raised her head, revealing her swan-like white neck.

They were shining under the moonlight and after a long while later, their lips finally separated.

Mu Chen looked at her bewildering eyes. Causing that charming girl to smack her lips.

"You rogue!" Luo Li sobered up. Thinking of her bold actions earlier on, her face instantly became boiling. She hammered her fist on Mu Chen in humiliation and anger. Circulating her Spiritual Energy, she broke free from Mu Chen's arms and returned back to her room hastily.

Mu Chen looked at that girl's silhouette as he lightly smiled. Shortly after, he breathed a deep mouthful of breath out. His black

pupils sparkled as it began to surge. Among them was a surging, blazing fighting spirit.

Li Xuantong, let's battle next!

When the first glimmer of dawn tore through the night sky the next day, it shined onto the vast land of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Astonishing moments broke out in the academy.

Wooooosh! Woosh!

Countless sonic booms resounded in the sky in all directions. They were all heading towards one direction, the Spirit Battle Stage located at the northwest direction of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.

This is the area in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy that's used for sparing. Ordinarily, many students spared here, conducting actual combat to promote their own strength.

And the battle that had been causing a sensation in the entire Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy will be conducted here.

Today, the Spirit Battle Stage appeared especially lively, compared to usual. At the largest stage in the Spirit Battle Stage, a vast crowd was already gathered here. With a glance, it's full of black-coloured heads and the end could not be seen.

In the countless sea of people, it was a vast stage that was approximately several thousand feet in range. It was sufficient to accommodate a brilliant and fiery battle.

"This battle could be the most attracting battle in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy this year." Someone looked at the surrounding mass of people and couldn't refrain from making the comment.

"That, look over there. Didn't you see Su Xuan, Rank 3 of the Heavenly Ranking, as well as Rank 4's He Yao and Rank 5's Xu Huang? Probably only Li Xuantong is capable of making them

show themselves."

"Hehe. You seem to have forgotten the most monstrous one in our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy?" Weird laughter sounded.

"You're talking about Shen Cangsheng? People like him is too heaven-defying. I believe that his position is unshakable, not even Li Xuantong could do it."

"I wonder how long it would take for me to reach that height." Some people sighed. Those that were able to enter into Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy all possessed decent talents. However, even they felt helpless admiration towards that name.

Many whispers came from behind. Su Ling'er was seated beside Su Xuan, as they sat at the front. A pair of beautiful sisters were extremely attractive to the eyes. One of them being lovable and charming, while the other was sweet-tempered, being a great feast to the eyes of others.

Not far from them, was a green-haired youth with devil-like looks. The smile on his face looked a little devilish, but that also attracted the peek of many girls.

This person was He Yao, Rank 4 of the Heavenly Ranking. In the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, this person possessed fame not any weaker to Li Xuantong.

Not far away, at the right side of his direction, was Xu Huang. At the current moment, Xu Huang was resting with his eyes shut. Xu Qingqing sat beside him with a face of excitement. She already couldn't wait to see the look of Mu Chen's suffering.

Indeed, as said by those at the back. This battle had indeed attracted a huge line-up and was certainly extremely grand.

Xiuuuu!

Just when the surroundings of the stage were bustling, a ray of light shot towards this direction from far away. He then appeared

at the center of the battle stage with both of his hands at his back, having a tranquil look on his face.

“Li Xuantong is here!”

Looking at that appearing figure, the surroundings of the stage rumbled and shortly after, their eyes were blazing. One of the protagonists have finally appeared.

Su Xuan, He Yao, as well as Xu Huang, all had their gazes on Li Xuantong. Over here, the only thing that could attract their interest would probably be Li Xuantong.

As Li Xuantong appeared, he paid no attention to the surrounding crowd as his eyes were shut, patiently waiting.

The bustling crowd continued.

When the sunlight began to turn intense, a sonic boom finally resounded in the sky far away from the Spirit Battle Stage. Countless figures flew over. Several of them landed at the seat of the stage, whereas one landed in the stage under the looks of countless eyes.

As a slender youth landed in the stage, he raised his head to look at the person in front of him. The youth cupped his hands and smiled. His moderate, yet fearless, voice resounded.

“Senior Brother Li Xuantong, Mu Chen is here to face you in battle!”

When these words landed, the atmosphere in the surrounding stage abruptly turned boiling.

Chapter 216 – Pact of Three Moves

The atmosphere around the vast stage surged. Countless curious eyes looked to the tall, thin youth standing on that stage. This youth had an outstanding appearance. He wore a light smile on his face, with a fearless demeanor that made many secretly nod to themselves. Regardless of the outcome, at least Mu Chen dared to accept the battle. Many would approve of him simply for such courage.

“Gege[1. Gurgled laughter.], this Junior Brother is rather handsome.”

“It’d be better if he was stronger, instead.” A few pretty girls were gathered, laughing with amorous eyes on that youth.

“So, this is the number one of the newcomer batch? Mu Chen?” Those who were paying attention to Mu Chen’s looks were only a small number of the girls, after all. The majority of the crowd were narrowing their eyes as they examined Mu Chen. A Heavenly Transform Stage Initial Phase strength. Even for the newcomers, there’s no way he’s the best, right? But it looks like he became first, anyways. It looks like Mu Chen has some methods up his sleeve.

Su Ling’er looked over Mu Chen. The latter stood proudly at the center of the stage, fearlessly facing Li Xuantong. Her charming eyes lit up and her tiny mouth quirked as she said, “This fellow really came.”

“So he’s Mu Chen?” Su Xuan was also examining Mu Chen with some curiosity. Then, she nodded, “He’s got a pretty good demeanor, to remain so calm while facing Li Xuantong. Some old-timers can’t even do as much.”

“Big Sister, please don’t underestimate him. Although his cultivation is only at the Heavenly Transform Stage Initial Phase, he’s not weak. Not even a Heavenly Transform Stage Late Phase

could gain an advantage over him." Su Ling'er immediately followed.

"Oh? Looks like things are getting more interesting." Su Xuan lightly smiled and continued, "However, that won't be enough to confront Li Xuantong. I don't know how they're going to spar, but no matter how I look at it, Li Xuantong is still absolute. It'll be extremely hard for Mu Chen to shake that."

Su Ling'er also sighed. Of course she knew the truth in Su Xuan's words, but since things had already progressed this far, things would have to depend on Mu Chen, himself.

Let him last longer.

Even if he lost, no one would ridicule him. After all, the two of them were on entirely different levels. Even if Li Xuantong won, the contest was unfair to begin with.

"So he's the new transfer that everyone's been talking about, Mu Chen?" The grey-haired He Yao stared at Mu Chen with a devilish smile on his face, then gave a light laugh. From the looks of him, the boy wasn't anything special. He Yao didn't know why Li Xuantong bothered to personally issue the Battle Notice. In the entire Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, you could count on one hand the number of people who could get that kind of treatment.

On the other hand, when Xu Qingqing saw Mu Chen, she stared at him with her teeth tightly ground. Hatred filled her eyes. Pretend all you want! I'll see how you're going to pretend after Li Xuantong crushes you!

Xu Huang sat to the side with indifference on his face. His sunken eyes reflected a sharp ray of light as he stared at Mu Chen. Five fingers lightly tapped the stone chair, emitting a sharp and clear rap.

In the areas around the back, Yang Hong, Mu Kui, and Bing Qing

were also present. The matter with Li Xuantong and the Battle Notice to Mu Chen had been widely talked about; how could they not know? They also wanted to witness this confrontation.

Yang Hong was obviously here to see Mu Chen left in a sorry state. On the contrary, Mu Kui and Bing Qing wanted to see how far Mu Chen could go, while faced with the genuine influential figure of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, Li Xuantong. The same Mu Chen who'd made them feel such fear.

Would he be crushed? Or would he create some miracle? They, too, were curious.

All eyes were focused and filled with expectation towards the two figures at the center of the battle stage.

Under the countless watchful expressions, the two at the center of the stage met eyes. The surrounding atmosphere froze.

Li Xuantong still wore calm and tranquil expression as he stared at Mu Chen and said, "Not bad. You didn't reject the Battle Notice. Your courage is still admirable."

"Many thanks to Senior Brother Li Xuantong's praise."

Mu Chen smiled noncommittally. His black pupils, however, didn't have much of a smile in them. Rather, he stared at Li Xuantong with a sharpness in his eyes and slowly said, "How should we spar? Senior Brother Li Xuantong, please say."

Li Xuantong's immediately dropped his indifferent air. "Rest assured, I won't leave a single route for you."

Mu Chen smiled, "Then Senior Brother Li Xuantong can also be rest assured. I've walked quite a lot of death routes and had quite a few experiences. Since I, Mu Chen, have come today, of course I'll accompany you until the end."

Li Xuantong lightly nodded, raised his head, and looked out into the sea of people. His keen sight swept over them and landed somewhere.

Someone like Li Xuantong always attracted attention around here. Many people noticed this action of his. Among the many in the crowd, his attention finally collected on a young girl with a refined complexion and a tranquil air.

“She’s that Luo Li? Rumor has it that Li Xuantong likes her. Seeing it now, it really looks like it’s true.”

“Tsk, tsk. Such an appearance and air, she’s indeed of the best quality. In the entire Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, probably only Su Xuan could compete with her on any level. No wonder the top of the old-timers and that freshman are fighting over her.”

“She’s already caused this at such a young age. What’s it going to be like in the future? Who’s going to let such a beauty go?”

A trace of shock flashed through the eyes that found the girl in black. Afterwards, they only spoke in low voices.

“She’s Luo Li? She’s indeed outstanding.” Su Xuan also turned her head and her eyes flashed with a trace of shock.

“Yeah.” Su Ling’er couldn’t help admitting it, either. She’d fought with Luo Li before and knew that not only was that girl beautiful, she was also amazingly strong. Perhaps she was hiding her strength even deeper than Mu Chen was. Usually, she wouldn’t show her true strength, unless it was some special situation.

As everyone praised her, Xu Qingqing didn’t have such tolerance. She looked at Luo Li with jealous eyes. The latter’s appearance and demeanor made her ashamed of her own inferiority; at the same time, she was angry over the humiliation.

However, Luo Li only disregarded the eyes from every direction. He cold glass-like pupils stared back at Li Xuantong. Her exquisite face had a chilly mask over it.

“It seems that I’ve angered her, yet again.”

Li Xuantong helplessly shrugged and shifted his line of sight back

to Mu Chen. “It’s true that there’s quite a gap between us. But I don’t want everyone to say that I’m bullying the weak with an unfair advantage. So I’ll give you a chance in this battle.”

“Three moves.”

Li Xuantong extended three fingers. He stared at Mu Chen and slowly said, “Take three moves from me and it’ll be your win. However, I’ll do my best. Whether you can receive them depends on yourself.”

“So? Do you dare?”

Everyone narrowed their eyes at the stage. This so-called Pact of Three Moves looked simple enough, but was actually filled with extreme danger. If it was an ordinary fight, Li Xuantong might not be too serious about it. But once the pact had been made, he might really take it seriously. As for Mu Chen, it was an opportunity. But it was also an opportunity filled with extreme danger.

In the entire Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, there weren’t many who could handle three moves from Li Xuantong. But each and every one who had accomplished it had possessed a fame far above Mu Chen’s.

Countless eyes were directed towards Mu Chen, waiting for his choice.

Under everyone’s watchful expressions, Mu Chen lightly breathed out a cloud of white mist, then nodded towards Li Xuantong. “I’ve said before, no matter how you wish to conduct our battle, I’ll accept it.”

“Good.”

Li Xuantong silently nodded as he looked at Mu Chen. Then, he used a faint voice so that only his intended audience could hear. “If you can accept my blows, then I’ll tell you something about the Luo God-Clan. I think you’ll be interested to know.”

Mu Chen stared, ten fingers slowly curled into a tight fist. Li

Xuantong's words had undoubtedly struck a chord in his heart. Based on Li Xuantong's words from earlier, Mu Chen had figured out a few things. In order to come to the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, Luo Li had made a promise to the so-called 'Luo God-Clan'. A promise that was probably wasn't good for her. And evidently, this Luo God-Clan would not permit Mu Chen and Luo Li to be together. Therefore, Mu Chen had to gather information on this Luo God-Clan in order to prepare for future troubles.

"Then, I'll have to ask Senior Brother Li Xuantong for advice."

Mu Chen's two hands came together and the Spiritual Energy within his body began to circulate without reserve. An abyss-black Spiritual Energy, burning with black flames, poured out of his body. The surrounding atmosphere seemed twisted because of it.

A Pact of Three Moves.

There wasn't going to be a warning cry. The moment Li Xuangtong moved, it'd be a torrent of thunder and rain. Mu Chen would have to bring out his best.

Mu Chen's black pupils were filled with attentiveness. He turned his head and glanced at the girl in black. She was biting her cherry lips and looked rather nervous.

"I won't lose!"

If he couldn't even deal with this problem, how would he face the even harder obstacles in the future?

Mu Chen suddenly looked up as black flames rose in his eyes. He looked at the indifferent Li Xuantong and growled with a heart-shaking resoluteness that resounded across the battle stage.

"Senior Brother Li Xuantong, make your move!"

Chapter 217 – Freshmens Number 1 vs. Heavenly Rankings Rank 2

“Senior Brother Li Xuantong, make your move.”

When Mu Chen’s low growl resounded across the stage, the crowd realised that the atmosphere around the vast battle stage had been frozen. It’s as if it’d been stretched to the extreme.

The murmur from around the stage slowly died down. Each pair of eyes was focused on that stage.

Li Xuantong looked at the handsome youth who had unwavering resolution in his eyes. His eyes slightly rippled, but there were no changes to his expression.

He slightly nodded and rolled up his sleeve with his slender hands. Those same slender fingers and fair hands harboured an astonishing lethality.

“I won’t go easy.”

It looked like Li Xuantong mumbled something to himself. Then, everyone felt the Spiritual Aura between heaven and earth turn chaotic in an instant. A shocking surge of Spiritual Aura roiled and collected towards Li Xuantong.

Fwooooooooo. Whoooosh.

A hurricane formed on the stage from the Spiritual Aura that formed between heaven and earth. It was a gorgeous beam of light that twisted itself around Li Xuantong, painting him like a majestic god.

As long as one is able to step into the realm of the Three Heavens Stage, they’d be able to mobilise the heaven and earth’s Spiritual Aura. Evidently, before a Heavenly Transform Stage like Li Xuantong, Mu Chen’s Heavenly Fusion Stage wasn’t able to gain the slightest advantage and was suppressed instead.

Therefore, compared to Li Xuantong's rainbow-like demeanor, Mu Chen's side was much more quiet. His blazing black-flame Spiritual Energy shrouded his entire body. Looking from afar, it was like surges of black smoke was soaring up into the skies. The black smoke was also abnormally concentrated. No matter how forceful the external pressure was, it still remained towering and firm.

Countless eyes were nervously staring at both of them. They were all aware that the battle would soon breakout.

Tap.

Li Xuantong took a step out. That subtle sound caused countless eyes to contract. Li Xuantong was seen slowly raising his right hand. That slender, long and white palm was actually becoming transparent, bit by bit.

Ohmmm. Ohmmmm.

The omnipresent Spiritual Aura violently surged and landed on Li Xuantong's gradually transparent palm. In that transparent palm, there were threads of chalcedony-like luster emerging and in the end, filled his entire palm.

That hand had turned into something like transparent jade and in that jade, chalcedony flowed within.

It was extremely beautiful.

Yet, when some seniors saw Li Xuantong's palm turning transparent, their expressions couldn't help changing drastically. Their hearts trembled. Li Xuantong was really not joking around, he's not intending to be lenient at all.

"Spirit Chalcedony Hands Li Xuantong, the skill that made him famous. It seems like he's truly not intending to be lenient at all." Su Xuan softly said, feeling a little astonished, while looking at the scene.

"This fella is bullying." Su Ling'er said in indignation. Li

Xuantong's strength far surpassed Mu Chen's to begin with, and he had actually used his genuine skill, that's simply bullying.

Su Xuan smiled. "Not exactly bullying. In fact, it's also a kind of recognition that Li Xuantong has for Mu Chen. If he's not going to use his true strength against Mu Chen, then that means that he's looking down on him. Men like them are always concerned about the so-called face, acknowledgement and whatsoever. Otherwise, why would there be so many of those 'fights that leads to friendship', as well as the so-called mutual understanding?"

Su Ling'er flung the corner of her mouth to one side. What acknowledgement is that, beating the other party into a sorry state is the so-called acknowledgement? These men are indeed, incomprehensible.

Low voices of alarm spread throughout the surroundings of the Battle Stage. Clearly, many people sensed the formidability in this attack from Li Xuantong. Does he really intend to end this farce in just one move?

No one knows. How will Mu Chen handle this?

Countless gazes shifted over, towards Mu Chen, who was shrouded within a blazing black-flame Spiritual Energy. They could all naturally sense the peculiarity in Mu Chen's Spiritual Energy. However, if he wanted to use this to contend against Li Xuantong, he's still too naïve. Thinking about it, Mu Chen wouldn't be childish to that extend.

Under countless gazes, Mu Chen who had his entire body shroud in surges of Spiritual Energy, had a grave expression appearing on his face. In his black pupils, black flames appeared and, shortly after, it turned cold and sharp.

"Woooosh!"

Up ahead, Li Xuantong was looking at Mu Chen indifferently. Thereafter, his already transparent slender hands lightly fanned

over.

Bang!

As Li Xuantong's palm fanned, vigorous Spiritual Energy was seen instantly exploding forth, like flood. Huge and deep cracks appeared in the earth up ahead.

Xuuuuosh!

A transparent palm that was roughly several dozens of feet flew out, creating a whistling sound. In that palm, it was also filled with chalcedony-like blood vessels that appeared to be extremely profound.

That palm flew with a frightening speed. Anything that was obstructing its path was instantly crushed. It's to the point that even the air was issuing penetrating explosion sounds.

Everyone could see the huge ravine being ripped open on the ground. Furthermore, at the end of the ravine was where Mu Chen was located.

A transparent chalcedony-like palm rapidly expanded before Mu Chen's eyes. That frightening pressure caused Mu Chen's clothes to flutter. A sharp pain sensation came from his skin.

Huuuuu

Mu Chen spat out a mouthful of white smoke. A sharpness was within his eyes as he abruptly took a step forth, clenching his five fingers into a fist as it burned with black-flame Spiritual Energy. It was as though a black sun had appeared within his fist.

An abyss-black Spiritual Energy twisted and a black light seal rapidly flew out.

One, two... four, five.

Five Limitless Death Seals appeared before Mu Chen. Those Limitless Death Seals were also blazing with black flames. A shocking amount of Spiritual Energy ripples swept out.

Outside the stage, Su Ling'er looked at those five Limitless Death Seals and a smear of concern flashed across her eyes. In the Rank 6 Spirit Convergence Array, Mu Chen had used this move to repel Huo Feng. Although the power wasn't weak, it's still not possible to deal with this move from Li Xuantong!

"Buzzz. Buzzzzz."

Just when Su Ling'er had some worries, a black luster rushed out of Mu Chen's fist again. A berserk of Spiritual Energy ripples violently swept out that could be seen by the naked eye.

An Abyss-black Spiritual Energy rapidly gathered before Mu Chen. Thereafter, everyone could see another black-coloured light seal slowly being formed.

Boom!

The sixth Limitless Death Seal!

The current Mu Chen was actually able to unleash six Limitless Death Seals at the same time!

The Common Tier Spiritual Art that Mu Chen had obtained in the Northern Spiritual Academy had gradually revealed the extraordinariness that belonged to it in Mu Chen's hands!

"Boom!"

When the sixth Limitless Death Seal was formed, Mu Chen also felt the qi and blood within his body boil. The sharpness within his eyes was increasingly more intensely. His five fingers tightly clench and punched a fist out.

Xiuuuu!

As Mu Chen punch his fist out, the six Limitless Death Seal instantly flew out. They were like mysterious black-coloured comets that streaked across the horizon, dragging long light tails behind them. Even some Heavenly Fusion Stage Late Phase experts were alarmed at the overbearing Spiritual Energy ripples. While

ripping the battle stage fearlessly under the various astonished gazes, they flew towards the transparent palm and heavily collided.

Bang!

In that instant of collision, the Battle Stage that was several thousand feet long trembled as if it was in the middle of an earthquake. Everyone could clearly see that the ground which the two forces collided had fierce cracks that were rapidly spreading out like spider-webs.

The two thickest cracks were like earth dragons that were roaring underground and bolting upright. The impact directions were heading for Mu Chen and Li Xuantong's directions.

Li Xuantong looked at the huge crack that was coming towards him. Under that crack concealed an extremely berserking Spiritual Energy.

He stared at that crack and took a step forward. The Spiritual Energy within his body poured out and formed into a Spiritual Energy light wall that was approximately a hundred feet in size before him.

Bang!

The crack violently collided onto that Spiritual Energy light wall. That wall trembled and fluctuated with ripples. Thereafter, the ripples intensified, causing the light wall to scatter. The crack's speed was obstructed and stopped half an inch away from Li Xuantong's feet.

As Li Xuantong stopped the impact, at the opposite side, there was another even more astonishing Spiritual Energy crack. Under the gaze of many, it struck Mu Chen.

Boom!

Dense smoke burst out. Everyone could see that when that crack, which contained a violent Spiritual Energy, touched Mu Chen's

body, he flew out and was sliding across the floor.

Huaaaa.

An alarming voice broke out in the surrounding area. Did he manage to resist it?

Somewhere on the stand, Luo Li was looking at this scene. Her jade-like hands also couldn't help abruptly grabbing onto her black-coloured longsword.

Su Ling'er's hand, which was holding onto Su Xuan's, also clenched tighter. Her other hand covered her mouth with nervousness filling her eyes.

Countless gazes gathered towards the smoke and dust and they were all worried. Did Mu Chen manage to take that move?

Under countless gazes, the smoke slowly dispersed. As the smoke dispersed, the situation there also became clear to everyone's eyes.

On the ground, there was an extremely ferocious crack that was like a huge black dragon. And at the end of the crack, was a figure with one knee on the ground. Both of his hands were thrusted into the ground and dragged a long mark.

That's Mu Chen!

Under the gaze of the entire stage, Mu Chen slowly pulled his hands back with fresh blood dripping down from his fingers. He slowly stood up and raised his head. There was also a trace of blood at the corner of his mouth. He casually wiped it off and looked at Li Xuantong with a light smile, which was dazzling to the eyes.

"Let's carry on with the second move."

Chapter 218 – Four Gods Constellation Scripture VS Profound Sky Divine Technique

“He took it!”

All around the stage, the eyes that’d been watching Mu Chen suddenly issued cries of surprise. Many of the expressions boiled over with amazement.

Mu Chen had actually managed to take an attack from Li Xuantong.

From the looks of it, Mu Chen had paid a price for that. But in the end, he was still standing on that stage. He’d successfully taken the first move.

Luo Li’s nervous jade-like hand, that’d been clutching her black longsword, silently loosened a little. She couldn’t help the heartache she felt as she watched the young man standing upon the stage, as he wiped the blood from the corner of his mouth.

Next to her, Zhou Ling, Ye Qingling, and the others also breathed heavy sighs of relief. Regardless of what anyone said, Mu Chen had taken the first move. So, even if he ended up losing, it’d be a glorious defeat. After all, he’d managed to take a full-on attack from the Heavenly Ranking’s number 2, Li Xuantong, even though he was only a freshman. That was already enough to make others exclaim in admiration.

Su Ling’er sat up front, watching the scene with pleasant surprise. Su Xuan, sitting next to her, was also watching the youth, and her expression flashed with amazement. She lightly nodded her head. “His strength isn’t bad.”

This time around, her words were actually coming from her heart. For someone of her level, Li Xuantong’s attack just now wasn’t anything she couldn’t take. But for a freshman who was only at the Heavenly Fusion stage Initial phase, that was pretty

impressive.

“Interesting.” He Yao said with a light smile, while nodding.

Xu Huang also watched Mu Chen with eyes that crinkled a little. Xu Qingqing, sitting next to him, was gritting her teeth with a face filled with resentfulness. Was that guy born under the zodiac of the cockroach or something? The fact that he could even block that...! How detestable!

Mu Chen had no time for the differing opinions of the crowd. He shook off the traces of blood from his palm and smiled towards Li Xuantong. “Shall we continue?”

Li Xuantong also stared at Mu Chen and, shortly after, nodded. “Not bad, you didn’t disappoint me.”

“No worries. At the very least, I’ll also give you some surprises.” Mu Chen smiled. His youthful and handsome face was full of offensive signs, which was entirely different from his usual gentle look.

“I’m looking forward to it.”

Li Xuantong lightly nodded and followed, “Spirit Chalcedony Hands, that’s my once famed move that made me famous. However, since it’s ‘once’, it also means that it has been replaced. Now, try my new move that has replaced it.”

Mu Chen deeply inhaled a mouthful of air as the smile on his face slowly turned sharp and grave. The Spiritual Energy within his body had been circulated to its peak. Pitch-black Spiritual Energy that’s being igniting with black flames was looking like black smoke and started to surge out.

That move earlier had actually caused some wounds for him. Although it wasn’t anything serious, the might of Li Xuantong’s next move was definitely more frightening.

The situation wasn’t too good for him. As the Heavenly Ranking’s Rank 2, Li Xuantong’s fame was indeed not in vain. That

strength of his should be the strongest that Mu Chen had seen among his generation so far.

Both of Li Xuantong's eyes slowly closed themselves up and, thereafter, a surge of majestic brilliant rays of Spiritual Energy emerged. His figure slowly floated up in the air, as well.

Wooooooosh! Woooosh!

Spiritual Aura from the heavens and earth started surging like a hurricane. A whistling sound resounded around Li Xuantong, along with some muffled thunder.

Both of Li Xuantong's hands lightly came together and formed mysterious seals. As the seals formed, everyone could abruptly feel the concentration of the surrounding Spiritual Aura. It actually had signs of berserking, but thereafter, poured into Li Xuantong's body from all directions.

As the shocking Spiritual Aura poured in, both of Li Xuantong's hands looked as though they had turned illusionary and fuzzy.

"This is..."

"Profound Sky Divine Technique." Su Xuan, He Yao and Xu Huang all said together with their eyes concentrated.

"Profound Sky Divine Technique?"

Hearing these four words, Su Ling'er's face instantly changed drastically. She naturally knew that the tyrannical Profound Sky Divine Technique that Li Xuantong had practiced in was no longer in the category of ordinary Spiritual Arts, but Deity Tier. Its might was even more frighteningly powerful.

Although others didn't have discerning judgements like Su Xuan, through the frightening and berserking Spiritual Energy that they felt, their faces all turned grave.

On the stage, Mu Chen raised his head and looked at Li Xuantong's illusionary and fuzzy hands. The faint frightening

ripples that came from him caused Mu Chen to felt immense danger.

Mu Chen inhaled a mouthful of air as he suppressed his pounding heart. Both of his hands slowly came together as pitch-black Spiritual Energy frantically gathered into his palms. Shortly after, both of his hands abruptly changed, as well. Cryptic and primordial seals were skillfully being formed from his fingertips, one after another.

As Mu Chen's seals changed irregularly, the sky behind him slowly turned dark. Thereafter, light started to appear, like stars.

These changes immediately attracted the attention of everyone. Countless people directed their gazes over in astonishment. Seeing the stellar lights behind Mu Chen, their hearts trembled.

From the stellar lights, they felt astonishing Spiritual Energy ripples.

This Mu Chen truly does have some methods up his sleeves, as well!

"Those seals that Mu Chen has formed...!" Su Xuan shockingly looked at the primordial seals formed in Mu Chen's hands and continued with a soft tone, "It's actually a Deity Tier Spiritual Art."

"Mu Chen also knows a Deity Tier Spiritual Art?" Su Ling'er said in astonishment. Just how much does this fella have hidden?

"Yeah, those that are ranked within the top five of the freshmen all possess the qualifications to enter the Spiritual Arts Hall and choose a Spiritual Art of their own liking. If opportunity is sufficient, they would even get the chance to obtain a Deity Tier Spiritual Art. However, the Deity Tier Spiritual Arts that the majority of people have obtained are all Quasi-Deity Tier Spiritual Arts. I think that Mu Chen has obtained his there." Su Xuan said as she nodded.

“However, even if he has also trained a Deity Tier Spiritual Art, Li Xuantong’s Profound Sky Divine Technique is a Deity Tier Low Rank. Furthermore, his base strength has far surpassed his. With Deity Tier against Deity Tier, he still wouldn’t be able to gain any advantage.”

Su Ling’er sighed. Indeed, even if Mu Chen possessed a Deity Tier Spiritual Art, he still wouldn’t be able to cross that distance. Furthermore, Li Xuantong had been practicing with a genuine Deity Tier Low Rank. In terms of ranking, it’s a level higher than the Quasi-Deity Tier.

Mu Chen was very outstanding with many cards up his sleeves. However, since Li Xuantong was able to become the Rank 2 of the Heavenly Ranking, how would he be ordinary? These fellows were all talented figures.

Up in the sky, Li Xuantong was emitting a light luster. His fuzzy hands rapidly changed. The Spiritual Aura that filled the sky surged forth and poured into both of Li Xuantong’s hands. As the Spiritual Energy became concentrated to the peak, both of his hands gradually calmed down. The light luster faded away and his hands were restored back to their original colour. From looking at them, they seemed to be only an ordinary pair of hands.

However, those with the strength to see, like Su Xuan, could sense the frightening lethality contained in his pair of hands.

Li Xuantong’s eyes indifferently looked below. Looking at the stars forming behind Mu Chen, a little ripple was made within his eyes, but soon disappeared.

Thereafter, under everyone’s gaze, he gradually extend a slender finger and lightly tapped the air.

“Profound Sky Divine Technique, One Profound Finger.”

When Li Xuantong’s finger tapped down, the empty space was suddenly filled with endless ripples. Those ripples rapidly

fluctuated and the entire sky looked as though it had been turned into an enormous mirror with ripples in it.

Boom!

That mirror suddenly distorted as tens of thousands of brilliant rays engulfed it. Soon after, everyone shockingly saw a huge crystallised finger of few hundred feet. It actually came out from the mirror and, like a sky-high pillar, started pressing towards Mu Chen, who was directly below it!

The crystal finger hadn't land, yet a huge crater was already forming on the battle stage as cracks were rapidly spreading out.

Everyone inhaled a mouthful of cold air. That one finger was actually so frightening!

The ground was shaking, but Mu Chen's figure wasn't moving the slightest bit. After raising his head to look at the approaching huge crystal finger, his ever-changing seals abruptly solidified.

ROOOOOOOOOOOOAR!

Endless killing aura poured forth from his black pupils as he roared into the sky. His roar sounded like tiger's as it shook the heavens and earth.

Torrent-like killing aura swept out as the sky became instantly rendered into an intense killing battlefield.

Mu Chen's pitch-black pupils were turning scarlet as the black-coloured Spiritual Energy frantically rush towards the stellar sky behind him. As the Spiritual Energy boiled, a large white tiger with the size of several hundred feet rapidly formed.

The white tiger stood on the stars as it roared towards the sky. Its roar shook the starry skies as torrential killing aura turned both heaven and earth a dull gray colour.

"Four Gods Constellation Scripture, Divine Seal of the White Tiger!"

A deep and low tiger-like roar also resounded in Mu Chen's heart. Soon after, his seals changed and the White Tiger that was standing on the stars abruptly pounced. The White Tiger lunged as though it was striding into the limits of space-time and appeared on the sky.

The White Tiger roared towards the sky as the Spiritual Energy that filled the sky turned frantic and berzerk. Thereafter, under countless gazes, it directly went head-on with torrential killing aura, descending towards the huge finger and heavily collided with it!

BOOOOOOM!

In the instant it collided, it was as if the heavens and earth had gone silence. Everyone was overwhelmed with shock as they looked at this scene. Before they could recover from the shock, that frightening Spiritual Energy impact rushed over like a hurricane.

Bang! Bang!

However, when that hurricane was about to spread to the viewing stands, a light luster suddenly appeared around the surroundings of the battle stage. The light luster shrouded the battle stage within, it was the protective measures of the Spirit Battle Stage.

Boom! Booooom!

That fearsome impact heavily hit one of the Spiritual Energy light barriers and made urgent ripples. After a very long time, it gradually dissipated.

That overwhelming impact gradually dispersed.

Everyone's gazes immediately redirected themselves towards the middle of the battle stage. Thereafter, they couldn't help inhaling a mouthful of cold air as their eyes became filled with shock.

Chapter 219 – My Turn to Attack

Countless pairs of eyes looked upon the battle stage spiderwebbed with ravines. The massive cracks were sinister mouths that spreading through the stage.

That impact had nearly destroyed the stage.

There were numerous exclamations of astonishment, after which all eyes returned to the stage. As the smoke and dust dispersed, the only even ground that was left was revealed. As of this moment, there was a black-light pagoda roughly a few dozen feet in height.

That black-light pagoda quietly stood there like a towering figure on the battle stage, but Mu Chen's silhouette could not be seen.

Upon seeing this, everyone questioned. Where's Mu Chen?

Ohmm Ohmmmmm.

While they were confused, the black-light pagoda flickered with a dark light, then rapidly shrank. A slender figure appeared with a flash.

It was Mu Chen.

However, his face was pale. He extended his hand and the black-light pagoda landed on his open palm where its light dulled before it disappeared entirely.

Cough!

He covered his mouth as he coughed. Fresh blood dripped from his palm. Half of Li Xuantong's frightening attack had been cancelled out by the Divine Seal of the White Tiger. Even with the protection from the Nine-layered Pagoda, his five viscera and six bowels had still suffered quite a jolt. So much that his blood was even showing signs of flowing backwards. But fortunately, he was able to suppress those feelings.

"What a formidable Profound Sky Divine Technique."

Mu Chen wiped the traces of blood from his mouth. The redness of his lips was shocking, even to the eye. He slowly raised his head, smiled lightly at the sky, and said:

“That technique that you’ve practiced is even more formidable.” Li Xuantong scrutinized Mu Chen. His usually indifferent expression finally turned grave. The technique that Mu Chen had executed just now was extremely powerful. That killing aura had even frozen his blood. But fortunately, with his vigorous Spiritual Energy, he’d endured it.

Li Xuantong understood that if Mu Chen had been on par with him, then that attack wouldn’t have won him the slightest advantage.

“You’ve taken the second move.” Li Xuantong said slowly. His pitch fluctuated slightly. He clearly hadn’t expected Mu Chen to come this far.

“He took it again!”

Li Xuantong certainly wasn’t the only one. Countless agreements sounded from around the battle stage, then returned attention to the slender, pale-faced youth with respect in their eyes.

“What a formidable Junior Brother.”

Even some of the beautiful girls exclaimed in surprise. He was able to force Li Xuantong of the Heavenly Ranking’s Rank 2 to use his Profound Sky Divine Technique. And even then, he stayed upright on that stage. Even though he’d suffered some injuries, he never showed the slightest trace of fear. Others found it hard not to be shocked by such discipline.

“Big Brother Mu Chen, f*ck yeah!” Zhou Ling firmly pumped his fist as he flushed red from the excitement. His vulgar language caused Ye Qingling, who was sitting beside him, to glare at him in anger. Only then, did he cover his mouth in embarrassment.

“Formidable!”

In the front seats, Su Xuan focused on the slender figure as she softly made a comment. “Give him two more years, or maybe even less. There will definitely be a place for him in the Heavenly Ranking’s top 3. Who knows, he might even be able to challenge Shen Cangsheng’s Overlord position.”

Su Ling’er was stunned for a moment as her eyes filled with amazement. She clearly hadn’t expected her sweet-tempered, yet prideful sister, to give Mu Chen such a high evaluation.

In all these years at the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, no one had ever been able to shake Shen Cangsheng position as Overlord. There were many people who had their eye on it, but no one had ever succeeded.

Su Ling’er approached her sister and chuckled. “Hehe, Big Sister, I think Mu Chen is quite strong. Aren’t you lacking one person in your mission? Perhaps you can consider him.”

Su Xuan unhappily stared back at her and said, “That mission of mine must be as delicious as a steamed bun. He Yao has also been drooling over it for a long time and I didn’t consent to it. True, Mu Chen isn’t bad, but he can’t be better than He Yao, right?”

“I thought you weren’t fond of He Yao? You kept saying that his scheming was too deep, like a smiling tiger[1. Someone with a big smile and evil intentions.].” Su Ling’er said in a low voice.

Su Xuan softly knocked Su Ling’er on the head, but she didn’t give a clear-cut answer, “Let’s see. If Mu Chen can take three moves from Li Xuantong, I may consider it.”

While they were talking, He Yao sat a short distance away, staring at the battle stage with some concentration. He actually seemed rather serious, compared to his usual absent-mindedness. This sparring match had truly aroused his interest.

Xu Qingqing sat next to Xu Huang, also blankly staring at the stage. The corner of her mouth twitched, but no mockery came

out. She knew that no matter how arrogant she acted, Mu Chen's performance had truly made many people gasp in surprise.

Mu Chen paid no attention to the commotion around the stage. He only held his mouth and coughed, and circulated the Great Pagoda Art to pacify the rampaging blood flow.

He looked up and smiled at Li Xuantong. "There's still one more move, right?"

Li Xuantong slightly nodded his head, then went silent for a brief moment before speaking. "You're already injured. I'm afraid you won't be able to handle the third move in your current situation."

Mu Chen smiled at Li Xuantong, "Why don't we change things for the third move, then?"

"What?" Li Xuantong was briefly taken aback by Mu Chen's suggestion.

Mu Chen extended his slender, blood-stained hands and stared at them for a brief moment. "Why don't I take the initiative for the third move?"

Silence...

When Mu Chen spoke, the uproar around the stage instantly turned into dead silence. Many twisted their necks to stare at that pale, yet smiling youth, wondering if they'd heard him wrong.

"He said he'd take the initiative to attack first?"

Someone muttered and exchanged looks with the person next to them. They felt as though the world was suddenly becoming incomprehensible. Faced with an opponent like Li Xuantong, Mu Chen actually dared to speak such words?

"He must be joking." Someone dryly laughed. But shortly after, he realised that the joke wasn't funny at all. They could only shake their head with a bitter smile. This battle was really impossible to predict.

“What’s Mu Chen trying to do?” Su Ling’er muttered, blankly staring at Mu Chen.

Su Xuan, however, had a grave expression on her face. She looked at Mu Chen with a look of surprise. Mu Chen clearly wasn’t a fool. But even in a normal battle, most people wouldn’t take the initiative to attack. The receiver had the advantage because they always had the time counter. The difference between Mu Chen and Li Xuantong was huge; Mu Chen had only survived because he’d been on the receiving end. The moment he decided to take the initiative, he’d be putting himself at a disadvantage. Unless he was certain his attack would be a real threat to Li Xuantong.

Could he possibly reach that place?

He Yao and Xu Huang had also been taken by surprise. They couldn’t help narrowing their eyes as they stared at Mu Chen on the stage. They laced their fingers and sat up.

“That guy is simply looking for death!”

Xu Qingqing ground her teeth with a lunatic expression as she glared at Mu Chen. Does he think he’d soared into the sky after barely managing to take two moves from Li Xuantong?

She turned to Xu Huang, but didn’t see a single mock or sneer on her brother’s face. One the contrary, she saw bewilderment. That made her heart jump. The words that she was about say suddenly became stuck in her throat.

“You’ll take the initiative to attack?”

In the sky, Li Xuantong stared at Mu Chen with a sharp gaze. It was such a grave expression that even his voice dropped and couldn’t return to its previous calm. “Are you sure?”

Mu Chen lightly nodded his head.

“Alright!”

Li Xuantong’s expression was as sharp as the bladed edge of a

sword. His figure slowly descended. “I truly hope you can surprise me today. The man who’s caught Luo Li’s eyes must have something to distinguish him from the masses.”

“Thanks.”

Mu Chen nodded, then turned around to look at the black-dressed girl that was also looking at him, too. He lightly smiled. That gentle smile paired with his handsome face caused many red faces in the female population. They realised that this Junior Brother of theirs possessed charm no less than Li Xuantong.

Luo Li also saw Mu Chen’s gaze and gentle smile, which burrowed into the deepest parts of her heart. Her face, which had always been cold, slowly turned gentle. The corner of her cherry lips turned into a smile.

Her smile was breathtaking, making many watching eyes green with envy.

Mu Chen looked away as his pitch-black Spiritual Energy slowly gushed out of his body. His body floated up and with a move of his mind, the energy that he and Nine Netherbird shared swept out.

Boom!

An astonishing amount of Spiritual Energy radiated from him, torrenting out as black flames filling half the horizon.

As Mu Chen raised his Spiritual Energy, he slowly closed his eyes. His heart was as calm as glassy pond as he slowly submerged himself into the profound intent of the Heart Array State. Even though his eyes were shut, he could still see the outside world with such clarity that he could even hear the heartbeats of those around the stage.

The Spiritual Energy in the heavens and earth also became exceptionally susceptible.

Watched by countless shocked expressions, Mu Chen slowly put his hands together. Then, his fingers moved, forming Spiritual

Seals all around him.

“Spiritual Seals?!”

The eyes on those Spiritual Seals contracted. Someone finally understood Mu Chen’s intentions. “He’s trying to set up a Spiritual Array!”

However, a Rank 3 Spiritual Array was probably useless against Li Xuantong!

Several Spiritual Seals were suspended around Mu Chen, one after the other. Everyone’s expressions also turned from their initially puzzled looks to shock. So much so that even Su Xuan and those that were seated at the front had grave expressions on their faces.

That’s because the number of Spiritual Seals that was revolving around Mu Chen had already reached the frightening quantity of a hundred!

This was already in the category of a Rank 4 Spiritual Array!

Mu Chen’s eyes slowly opened. With a flick of his fingers, everyone watched the hundred Spiritual Seals suddenly rush forth, blending into the sky.

The heavens and earth turned dull gray and frightening Spiritual Energy ripples fluctuated. Everyone could see a frightening Spiritual Array forming above Mu Chen.

Chapter 220 – Reappearance of the Demonic Lotus

Rumble!

Heavens and earth darkened as the Spiritual Aura gathered. Everyone around stage looked up with shock in their eyes.

Wind and clouds gathered. Between them, a large light array gradually formed, one with an extremely complicated outline, like a masterpiece of nature.

“He can actually set up a Spiritual Array of such a level?!”

Many stared blankly at the complicated light array as their eyes filled with wonder. This Array clearly surpassed a Rank 3 Spiritual Array. Could Mu Chen be a Rank 4 Spiritual Array Master?

Such Spiritual Array Masters were few in number, even amongst all of the students at the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Could this Mu Chen really be at that level?

“It’s the Heart Array State!”

Su Xuan’s eyes were dignified. She stared at the figure in the sky as her eyes glowed. “He’s actually controlling the Heart Array State. Furthermore, it looks like this isn’t the Initial Level of the Heart Array State!”

Su Ling’er was overwhelmed with shock. She understood how important the Heart Array State was for Spiritual Array Masters. Generally speaking, only Rank 3 Spiritual Array Masters could comprehend this kind of ‘Controlling everything in his hands and link to his heart’ Heart Array State. Furthermore, the Heart Array State was further divided into three different levels. In the entire Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, those who practiced in the way of Spiritual Arrays and are able to comprehend the Heart Array State were extremely few in number. The amount of people who could comprehend the Middle or High Level Heart Array State

wouldn't exceed the number of fingers on a single hand!

"Just how many cards does this guy have hidden up his sleeve?" Su Ling'er muttered. This gentle-looking youth was like a bottomless pit, unfathomable.

"Looks like there's finally some fun this time."

Su Xuan lightly smiled. Even Li Xuantong should get a headache from a Spiritual Array of this level. Mu Chen really had gone all out. However, that boy truly was extraordinary, to be able to force Li Xuantong to such a position, even though he only had an Initial Phase Heavenly Fusion Stage cultivation.

He Yao and Xu Huang wore no expressions on their faces. They'd originally regarded Mu Chen with little significance. They'd only come here to see Li Xuantong. They never thought that this insignificant character would make them feel such danger.

Furthermore, they couldn't forget that Mu Chen was still a freshman. If he was given a year to train in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, wouldn't his achievements surpass theirs?

This guy couldn't be underestimated.

The entire arena was shaking due to the appearance of the enormous array in the sky. Li Xuantong, himself, was also staring upwards. His eyes reflected a dark and unclear gleam.

He said nothing, which made it difficult to guess his thoughts. His hands slipped out of his sleeves as a frightening amount of Spiritual Energy ripples fluctuated around him.

The indifference that he'd worn at the start of the match was clearly gone. Now, Mu Chen had far surpassed his expectations.

"Come, let me take a look at your trump card." He lightly muttered inwardly. His expression, however, became sharper and sharper, as though he wanted to shoot through the air and straight through Mu Chen's body.

Huuuuuu.

Under Li Xuantong's sharp blade-like gaze, Mu Chen breathed out a sigh. His face turned even paler and his hand seals abruptly changed.

Boom!

Up in the sky, the huge light array exploded with a loud thundering sound. Rays of light filled the sky, then gathered into a colossal black lotus a few hundred feet in diameter.

The black lotus was suspended in the air, slowly revolving. As it turned, the space around it seemed twisted.

This Spiritual Array was the Butchering Demonic Lotus Spiritual Array, of course. Back when Mu Chen was in the Northern Spiritual Realm, he had relied on this array to kill Liu Jingshan. But back then, he was only at the Spiritual Rotation Stage. It was fundamentally difficult for Mu Chen to bring the array to its full potential. Even after borrowing the power of the Nine Netherbird, he was barely able to execute it. But now that he'd grown stronger, he could comprehend some of the array's profound intent.

Back then, he lacked foresight and treated the Butchering Demonic Lotus as only a Rank 3 Spiritual Array. It was only after he became a Rank 3 Spiritual Array Master did he realize how shallow his understandings were towards this array.

He'd learned from that black scroll that his current 'Butchering Demonic Lotus Spiritual Array' was only a small portion of the array's true form. One day, when Mu Chen became strong enough and he learned to fully unleash this Spiritual Array, its might would definitely be world-shaking.

But now, this portion of the 'Butchering Demonic Lotus Spiritual Array' was already his limit.

Mu Chen's face turned even whiter as weakness washed over his body. This time, he did not rely on the Nine Netherbird's strength,

but rather his own, to lay out the ‘Butchering Demonic Lotus Spiritual Array’.

“Go.”

He extended his palm and lightly tossed it. The enormous black lotus shook as it shot forth with a black luster. As it flew out, the closed lotus flower slowly bloomed.

The Spiritual Energy ripples between the heavens and earth became even more violent.

Ohmmm. Ohmm.

The black lotus reached full maturity. The heart of the lotus slowly directed itself towards Li Xuantong, who was right underneath it. A strange black liquid dripped from the lotus petals, gathering towards the heart of the lotus.

A black luster gathered towards the heart of the lotus. A surge of scalp-tingling Spiritual Energy violently rippled out.

Shhiiiiiinnnggggg!

When the dark glow reached its peak, the black lotus jolted. After that, the crowd watch a ray of black light nearly penetrate through the heavens and pierce the earth, as if the black liquid had formed a black dragon that tore through the sky with its fangs and claws!

Boom! Boom!

The stage, which was already filled with ravines, finally couldn’t endure any longer and started to crumble down in layers. Li Xuantong, however, made no movements. He raised his head towards the black light that penetrated the sky. His slender hands came together as his deep and low voice resounded.

“Profound Sky Divine Technique, Profound Sky Compass!”

Ohmmmm!

A brilliant green light filled the area in front of Li Xuantong. As the light gathered, it turned into a huge compass made of green

light, roughly a hundred feet in diameter. As the compass materialized, even the air seemed to become frozen.

“Li Xuantong’s strongest defence… the Profound Sky Compass…” Su Xuan, He Yao, Xu Huang and the rest all watched that green compass with great focus. To think Li Xuantong had actually been forced to take such measures.

Once the green compass fully formed under the watchful eyes of the crowd, it flew out and collided with the black light falling from the sky!

Boom!

In the instant of collision, brilliant rays of light exploded like fireworks. They outshone any other source of light that one could possibly imagine, forcing everyone to shut their eyes. Even after that, they could all feel a stinging pain from behind their eyelids.

Boom!

The brilliant rays of light shot forth, followed by a storm of Spiritual Energy that changed the expressions on Su Xuan and everyone else’s faces. As if they had been materialized, wreaking havoc. The shockwaves instantly collapsed the battle stage, even though it was several thousand feet wide. The Spiritual Energy barrier surrounding the stage was instantly torn apart, creaking as it went. The sheer destructive force of the impact forced a fear into everyone’s hearts. Several even jumped at the collision. Even a Heavenly Fusion Stage Late Phase would be torn to shreds by such an impact.

The Spiritual Energy tornado on the stage wreaked havoc for several minutes, before it slowly started to disperse.

As the Spiritual Energy tornado dissipated, everyone directed their eyes back to the stage.

The stage itself was already gone, only leaving several huge craters. Two figures towered over them, in the sky.

Mu Chen's face had paled again as the Spiritual Energy ripples around him weakened even further. However, his black pupils were still eye-catchingly bright. He looked at Li Xuantong with a smile. Even his voice had become a little hoarse. "Senior Brother Li Xuantong, I suppose we can say that I've taken the third move, is that right?"

Li Xuantong looked to his right hand with a blank expression, then slowly opened his palm towards Mu Chen. There was a streak of scarlet-red blood. He'd suffered some injuries.

People began whispering around the stage with shock in their hearts. Mu Chen had actually managed to injure Li Xuantong.

"You... you're pretty good." Li Xuantong said as he sighed, glancing at the pale, yet bright-eyed youth.

"You won the pact of three moves. Luo Li's judgement is as good as ever."

Li Xuantong lightly smiled. With his personality, it was beneath his dignity to admit the fact. But the answer was already obvious, especially with so many people looking on.

Mu Chen's performance today was more than enough to shake the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.

"I no longer have any strength left. If this had been a real fight, I definitely would've lost." Mu Chen announced in a light voice. One could say that he'd already exhausted his strength. He'd already spent all his cards to withstand Li Xuantong's three moves.

"That's why we had those rules. If the two of us had been on the same level, then perhaps I would've been the one to lose." Li Xuantong smiled, then cupped his hands towards the crowd as he continued, "In this battle, I, Li Xuantong, have lost."

His voice echoed over the crowd. Everyone opened their mouths with complicated expressions written all over their faces. This outcome had clearly been far beyond their expectations.

Who could've expected a mere Heavenly Fusion Stage Initial Phase to win against Li Xuantong?

"Marvelous!"

Su Xuan lightly smiled as she made a pertinent comment, then began clapping her slender jade-like hands. The crisp sound echoed throughout the arena.

Clap! Clap!

The sounds of one person clapping turned into a thunderous roar, until it rumbled over the Spirit Battle Stage with an earth-shattering intensity. One could even hear it outside the arena.

Even the most narrow-minded person would sigh in admiration at the outcome of this battle.

Somewhere among the spectator seats, Yang Hong's face was ashen. He clenched his fist until he was shaking. The fears buried deep in his heart slowly began to spread. The current Mu Chen had already surpassed him. He felt powerless.

He looked at the youth's pale face and felt helpless. Maybe only Ji Xuan could suppress him.

Mu Kui and Bing Qing also sighed, but there was also admiration in those sighs. Even Mu Kui, who was fond of fighting, had no intentions of fighting Mu Chen. He knew from watching those three moves that he wouldn't be able to take even one of them.

"How can this be?" Xu Qingqing's face changed irregularly. She slouched back with a face paler than before. Fear rose in her eyes.

Mu Chen, who was still up in the sky, only felt exhaustion at hearing the thundering applause. He lightly trembled, then blacked out and fell from the sky.

Swoosh!

A beautiful woman's image flashed through the spectator zone. With a move of her slender waist, she reached out her jade arms

and wrapped them around Mu Chen's waist. She wore a black dress. It was Luo Li.

She hugged Mu Chen and peered into his handsome, yet pale face. A surge of heartache overwhelmed her. She coldly glared at Li Xuantong with glass-like pupils. "I'll settle this with you later."

Li Xuantong bitterly smiled and shrugged.

However, Luo Li was done paying attention to him. She tightly held Mu Chen as she turned into a streak of light. Under numerous pairs of surprised eyes, she flashed out of the Spirit Battle Stage arena and flew away.

Chapter 221 – The Luo God Clan

The curtains closed on the fierce battle that took place at the Battle Spirit Stage, leaving many surprised expressions in the crowd. The spectators studied the tattered remains of the battle stage and couldn't help clicking their tongues. They understood that, from this day onwards, the freshman known as Mu Chen would be renowned throughout the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.

Even though he only had a Heavenly Fusion Stage Initial Phase cultivation, he'd endured two moves from Li Xuantong. Then he'd swapped to offense for the last move, and even then he'd been able to wound Li Xuantong.

Such an accomplishment would make even the seniors exclaim in admiration. A freshman was actually able to do all that! Regardless of whether it was his courage or his methods, they felt admiration towards Mu Chen's qualities.

This didn't mean that Mu Chen was strong enough to take down Li Xuantong, but everyone knew that if he was given another year to train, it might not be impossible.

Within a year, his name would probably appear in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy's top 3 Heavenly Ranking.

The battle was finally over. However, everyone understood that the ripples caused by this battle would influence the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy for a long time. Mu Chen's fame in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy skyrocketed.

He was well-known before, but this pushed his name to much greater heights. Even though Mu Chen had given an outstanding performance at the Freshmen's Competition and attracted the attention of a few seniors, he still couldn't have compared to Li Xuantong. Back then, there was no way he could've achieved as much fame as he had this time around.

After this battle, Mu Chen's name soared within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.

For the few days after the battle, Mu Chen cultivated in a small building. Even though he'd been injured in the battle, it was nothing serious; they were far lighter than the injuries he'd sustained while fighting Liu Jingshan, so he managed to recover in only half a day. However, he knows that this battle had caused huge ripples. He was also too lazy to go out and deal with the people who, undoubtedly, noticed him now.

Mu Chen quietly sat in his room. The Spiritual Energy surged around him. His breathing was as steady as a mountain and had vigour to it. Even though it'd been a desperate battle with Li Xuantong, he'd reaped quite a few benefits from it.

He'd gotten the chance to test the strength of a Heavenly Transform Stage. If he ever faced someone of that cultivation again, he'd know what to expect from his experience. Even though he'd successfully confronted Li Xuantong this time, it also served as a lesson as to how powerful Li Xuantong was.

If it hadn't been for the pact of three moves, Mu Chen would've been forced to borrow the power of the Nine Netherbird to defeat Li Xuantong. However, that wasn't the kind of victory that Mu Chen wanted. Even though Li Xuantong had stood between himself and Luo Li, Mu Chen honestly didn't harbor any ill will towards him. Even though Li Xuantong was his opponent, he was someone worth regarding. If it wasn't a life or death battle, then Mu Chen didn't want to borrow someone else's power to obtain a victory over him. That was his pride, as well as his way of showing respect towards the opponents he acknowledged.

Of course, if his opponent had been someone like Liu Qingshan, then Mu Chen wouldn't have thought twice about whether to play fair or foul.

The reason why Mu Chen treated Li Xuantong as a true

competitor was because he wanted to compete against Li Xuantong in a fair fight. Without any restrictions or aids. He wanted a true victory over Li Xuantong.

However, there was quite a distance between them right now. That's why Mu Chen wasn't slacking off after his so-called victory; instead, he was working even harder on his cultivation, so that he might be able to truly overtake Li Xuantong.

The next time they fought, Mu Chen wanted to tell Li Xuantong that he no longer needed this "pact of three moves".

Mu Chen smiled as he thought about that. He glanced to the area right outside the room. Luo Li had gone out earlier. And Mu Chen knew exactly why she'd gone out. He helplessly shook his head and prayed for the unlucky guy. Then, he closed his eyes again.

Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, a certain towering mountain peak

On that mountaintop was Li Xuantong, helplessly face-to-face with a girl dressed in black and an icy-cold expression, who was wielding a dark longsword.

"Was that fight fun?" Luo Li's glass-like pupils coldly glared at Li Xuantong. Her clear voice flowed like a mountain stream, yet it carried a chill.

"If you didn't have enough fun, I'd be glad to play with you."

Li Xuantong scratched his nose and bitterly laughed at Luo Li's words. Sharp rays of light swords tore through the air in a storm.

Li Xuantong tapped his fingers and rays of Spiritual Energy shot out to meet the light swords.

Shhhiiiinnnngggg!

The Spiritual Energy rays were destroyed by the light swords upon contact and put Li Xuantong on edge. Luo Li's Luoshen Art had been trained to a point past perfection. Indeed, she was

worthy of her reputation as the rare genius of the Luo God Clan that only appeared once in a hundred years.

Li Xuantong heaved a helpless sigh and backed off, dodging the sword rays. He knew that Luo Li wouldn't listen to anyone when she was angry, so the only thing he could do was let her vent.

The light swords and Spiritual Energy whistled on that mountaintop, causing utter chaos. Anyone who saw the commotion would be astonished. They would know that this mountaintop was part of Li Xuantong's territory. Who would dare scale that mountain to cause trouble for Li Xuantong?

Even though the spectators were surprised, they didn't dare to ascend the mountain to check. They only watched as the sharp rays of sword light rained down like a storm upon that peak.

The torrent carried on for several minutes before settling down. Then, all was peaceful.

However, the scene wasn't as elegant and serene as it had been before; rather, it was in complete disorder. Deep ravines spiderwebbed the ground, clean cuts as if they'd been carved by a razor-sharp weapon.

Li Xuantong stood on a stone platform, his previous confidence and ease were nowhere to be seen. Even his clothes had a few tears to them. His hair draped down[1. In ancient China, it was customary for men to have long hair in a ponytail.], giving him a very sorry appearance. However, it wasn't all because he was allowing Luo Li to vent her anger. Luo Li's strength had truly surpassed his expectations.

He inspected his tattered clothes and the girl with the longsword. Then he cautiously asked, "Are you done venting?"

Luo Li combed and twisted her long hair with her jade-like hands. Her exquisitely charming face was expressionless as she spoke. "Li Xuantong, I hope this will be the last time. I still

consider you a friend, but if you take it too far, I may turn hostile."

Li Xuantong bitterly smiled as he seriously replied, "If he couldn't even handle the likes of myself, how could he handle matters in the future? You can't be the one to handle all of it, right?"

Luo Li went silent and didn't respond.

Li Xuantong lightly sighed. "How much longer can your grandfather endure? Two years? Maybe three?"

Luo Li trembled. Her small hands clutched the sword handle so hard that even her fingertips were turning white. Her petite figure suddenly seemed especially frail and pitiful.

"You're the only hope the Luo God Clan has. For how much longer can you remain by his side? You're the Empress of the Luo God Clan and the one with the purest bloodline within the royal family. You have many followers who are loyal to the the Luo God Clan's Royal Family, and they have seen you as the Emperor's successor. With your personality, I know you won't be able to abandon everything. Therefore, when the time comes, you'll definitely go back. And at that time, you'll have to leave him. There's no happy ending for the two of you." Li Xuantong said slowly.

"I'll wait for him," Luo Li replied in a soft voice.

"Wait for him to grow? Let's not even mention whether he can actually reach that stage. Even if it were possible, do you have the time to wait? The other three God Clans[1. Luo God Clan. The 'Shen' also means God.] are also eyeing yours. The Luo God Clan has fallen, the lion has aged. Right now, you are the only intimidating force." Li Xuantong sighed. Reality was always so cruel.

Luo Li looked up towards Li Xuantong. Her voice was soft and slow as she articulated each word with an unquestionable

resoluteness. “I believe in him.”

Li Xuantong speechlessly looked at her exquisite beauty.

Luo Li also spoke no more. Her jade hands waved as she skimmed away from the stone stage, turned into a streak of light, and rapidly disappeared.

For the next few days, if things went as Mu Chen expected, the entire Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy would be talking about that pact of three move that he’d had with Li Xuantong. Even the entire freshmen’s area was talking about it in excitement. There was nothing Mu Chen could do but hole up in the building and seclude himself in cultivation.

Luo Li looked after him for a few days. Only after she was certain he was fine did she head for the Convergence Array to cultivate. Mu Chen could sense that recently, her need to cultivate had become a little more pressing.

Mu Chen could only bitterly smile inwardly at that. Luo Li’s dedication to cultivation made his heart ache for her, but there was nothing he could do.

He had no idea about the details of her life, that cultivating was everything. That she had to, because of her responsibility. That’s why her world had always been monotone and dull. A character created, but nothing in her heart. A dull character.

It was later, after they’d met, that something had appeared in that girl’s heart that allowed her to smile, despite the exhaustion from cultivating.

To her, time was usually the most precious commodity. But she’d still come all the way to the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, just for him.

It was another night. Mu Chen was seated in his room, cultivating, when he suddenly opened his eyes. His figure moved and he appeared on top of the building, where he saw Li Xuantong,

standing, with his hands behind him.

A crease appeared in Mu Chen's brow when he saw Li Xuantong. "What did you say to Luo Li? Why's she cultivating so hard these past few days?"

Li Xuantong turned around, glanced at Mu Chen, and lightly said, "Rather than saying 'she's cultivating so hard', why not say 'she's trying to lighten your burdens'?"

"What do you mean?" Mu Chen's brows were tightly locked together.

Li Xuantong sat down, looked at the round moon, and lightly sighed, "Have you heard of the Luo God Clan?"

Mu Chen listened with full attention.

Chapter 222 – Eastern Heavens Realm

“Luo God Clan!”

Mu Chen’s eyes concentrated on Li Xuantong. Back in the Spiritual Value Hall, he’d heard that elder mention the Luo God Clan. However, he didn’t have much more information on the matter. The Great Thousand World was simply too vast. Forget about knowing all of the Northern Spiritual Realm, even the realm where they were currently located, the Northern Heavens Continent, where the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy was, was only one of the many continents within the Great Thousand World.

There were too many things in this world that Mu Chen was unaware of, nor did he have the necessary connections to learn about them.

“In this Great Thousand World, there are many powerful races with long inheritances. For instance, there’s the Ice Spirit Clan and Fire Spirit Clan. They’re two races that possess great fame in the Great Thousand World.” Li Xuantong lightly carried on. “The Luo God Clan is also one of them. At its height, the Luo God Clan was stronger than any other clan. Even the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, with its deep background, couldn’t claim to be stronger at the Luo God Clan at its pinnacle.”

Mu Chen’s expression was grave. He didn’t have a clear-cut idea of how powerful the Ice Spirit Clan and the Fire Spirit Clan were, but he knew that the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy was an extremely terrifying body. He knew that he’d only been in contact with the tip of the iceberg of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. And the Luo God Clan that Luo Li was from actually possessed such terrifying strength?

“But, of course, I also said that was back during the Luo God Clan’s golden era.”

Li Xuantong glanced at Mu Chen and continued, “The Luo God Clan lives in the Fast East Lands of the Great Thousand World, in the Eastern Heavens Realm. The Eastern Heavens Realm has as many continents and forces as there are stars. Of these forces, the Four Great God Clans rule over the Eastern Heavens Realm. Countless other forces have attached themselves to these clans in order to survive. They are regarded as kings.”

“Four Great God Clans?”

“Yes. The Luo God Clan is one of them.” Li Xuantong nodded his head and continued, “The Four Great God Clans have dwelled in the Eastern Heavens Realm for thousands of years, constantly warring with one another, accumulating mountains upon mountains of blood debts that are impossible to wash off. One could say that there’s an irreconcilable feud between them.”

“The Luo God Clan, from previous eras, stood at the top of the Four Great God Clans. They suppressed the other three God Clans who dared not to come within contact of their sharp blades. Pity, they allowed their luck to flourish too much back then and that led to their current withering state. It’s to the point where they must rely on one girl to save them.” Li Xuantong ridiculed as he shook his head.

Mu Chen’s brows lightly wrinkled together. Is Luo Li the girl that he’s talking about?

“The Luo God Clan’s geniuses have been withering these past few hundred years. Most of the core members of the Luoshen Royal Clan are like maggots gnawing on the declining giant. Most of Luo Li’s relatives were decayed by their reputations, submerged in fantasies of past glories with no idea that their Luo God Clan is already full of holes.” Li Xuantong mocked.

“A few decades ago, Luo Li’s father was the most outstanding amongst the Luo God Clan. If he had been able to take over the Luo God Clan, then he could’ve changed their situation. It’s a pity that

he suffered heavy injuries and fell during a battle among the Four Great God Clans."

"His fall was a heavy blow to the Luo God Clan. Luo Li's grandfather had no choice but to come out to, once again, support the entirety of the enormous clan. At that time, perhaps even he was also in despair. Amongst all the people of the Luo God Clan, there wasn't anyone who could inherit that great responsibility. Fortunately, as Luo Li grew older, she revealed a talent that far surpassed her father's."

"From that point on, even though she was still just a child, it was decided that she'd be the next Empress. She was told that when the time came, she'd receive an inheritance that'd been passed down for thousands of years: that enormous clan with the hopes of billions of people. She will become their Empress and protect them from the cruel Eastern Heavens Realm in order to allow the Luo God Clan to survive."

Li Xuantong narrowed his eyes as he thought about the little girl who should've lived a joyful and carefree childhood without worries, but was, instead, closely supervised by the Luo God Clan. Swinging her longsword under the waterfall, over and over. Huge waves swept over that petite body, wounding her with each impact.

In the end, she'd cried as she held onto her longsword, without consolation but, instead, the strict scoldings of her grandfather. Her father fell when she was very young, leaving a weak-bodied mother to accompany her. Yet, despite her tender age, she was very sensible. Letting her mother see her cry would only cause heartache to her weak-bodied mother; therefore, she endured alone.

The first time Li Xuantong saw Luo Li, she was hiding behind a stone, clinging to her longsword, and crying. But once she finished crying, she dragged her small body and her longsword to embrace the huge waves yet again.

Mu Chen stood on the roof, his heart tightening with indescribable heartache.

“Luo Li won’t have much time by your side...” Li Xuantong said softly.

“Why?!” Mu Chen said in alarm.

“Because Luo Tianshen won’t be able to hold on much longer. His lifespan will come to an end in at most, five years. And before that happens, he will definitely take Luo Li back to accept her inheritance. Furthermore, Luo Li must step into the Sovereign Stage; otherwise, the Luo God Clan will be attacked by the other three Great God Clans. Thanks to that blood feud, the Luoshen Royal Clan will be thrown into utter chaos. Anyone loyal to the Luo God Clan will be slaughtered in a massive bloodbath. These matters are all too common in the Eastern Heavens Realm.” Li Xuantong said lightly.

“Sovereign?” Mu Chen narrowed his pupils. After the Heavenly Completion Stage was the Sovereign Stage. The Sovereign Stage was further split into 9 Grades, from Grade-1 to Grade-9. The stage was further differentiated into Heavenly and Earthly — the so-called Heavenly Sovereign and Earthly Sovereign.

Generally speaking, those who managed to step into the Sovereign Stage were considered true experts inside the Great Thousand World and possessed the strength to become the lord of a continent. Grade-9 Sovereigns were considered the pinnacle of the Sovereign Stage. Earthly and Heavenly Sovereigns were even more fearsome. In the Great Thousand World, anyone who possessed such cultivation would also have renown fame and be hailed as a hero of the present.

And Luo Li had to reach the Sovereign Stage within five years, at the very latest?!

“For powerful clans like theirs, the Sovereign Stage is the minimum requirement for becoming clan leader. Luo Tianshen

once possessed the power of an Earthly Sovereign, but he sustained heavy injuries from prior battles. As of now, his life will soon come to an end. That's why he will resort to any method in order to create a leader who can contain the situation after his death."

"And Luo Li is the one he chose. Only she possesses the purest bloodline to receive this kind of inheritance. That way, their chances of success will be much higher." Li Xuantong said, slowly.

"Higher chance of success?" Mu Chen's face changed. Does that also mean that there are chances of failure?

"In this world, there is no such thing as a power that comes without a price. Everything has its risks." Li Xuantong nodded and continued, "If the inheritance fails, Luo Li will die."

"However, that's still the last resort. Luo Li only needs to return to the clan once Luo Tianshen runs out of time. That might be half a year, or maybe an entire year later. But that time will still come."

Li Xuantong sneered, "Pity. The vast Luo God Clan, at its prime, possessed a Heavenly Sovereign and two Earthly Sovereigns. They were so strong that they intimidated the other three God Clans into submission. They even possessed a great fame throughout the Great Thousand World. Who could've imagined that a thousand years later, they're being supported by one elderly old man who has to put all his hopes on the shoulders of one frail little girl?"

Li Xuantong looked to Mu Chen and spoke with a deep voice. "Now do you know why Luo Li always trains so hard?"

Mu Chen slowly nodded. No wonder Li Xuantong kept saying that he was holding Luo Li back. Time was the most important thing to her. But because of him, she'd come to the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. That's how great her passion was.

"Right now, she's also doing her best to cultivate for your sake. She probably thinks that by the time you learn of this, she'd be strong enough so that you wouldn't have to bear the burden. She'd

take them upon herself."

Li Xuantong looked at Mu Chen as the corner of his mouth turned with an agonized expression. "What's so good about you?"

Mu Chen's hand were tightly clenched in his sleeves. "When the time comes, does she absolutely have to return to accept the inheritance?"

Li Xuantong nodded. "I wouldn't think of obstructing her. Otherwise, she wouldn't be happy at all, just because she's at your side."

Mu Chen laughed to himself. "I'm not that selfish."

"Currently, the Luo God Clan is declining. Their enemies are a pack of wolves and tigers eyeing their properties with greed. However, none of them dare to move. One reason is Luo Tianshen. Even though that tiger has aged, its might is still present. The second reason is because the Luo God Clan landed a piece of good karma a few dozen years ago. They unintentionally saved a young man from the Lower Planes." Li Xuantong explained.

"Oh?" Mu Chen was confused. He clearly couldn't see the relationship there.

Li Xuantong raised his head, his usual indifference was replaced with a trace of reverence. "That young man from back then has become one of the Overlords of the Great Thousand World. He possesses fame that shakes the world."

"Who is he?" Mu Chen was quite curious.

A look of fanaticism flashed through Li Xuantong's eyes. "He once freely roamed the Great Thousand World; even the Old Ancestor, a Heavenly Sovereign of the Fire Spirit Clan couldn't stop him and could only allow him to act as he wished. Right now, he's the lord of the Endless Fire Territory."

"He's the Flame Emperor, Xiao Yan."

Chapter 223 – Flame Emperor

The Flame Emperor, Xiao Yan.

When Mu Chen heard that domineering title, he blanked for a brief moment. This wasn't the first time he'd heard that name; he'd heard of it back in Northern Spiritual Academy. But back then, he'd only had vague impressions of the name; now, he knew a little more about the man behind the name, and what that meant within the boundaries of the Great Thousand World.

The ones who'd shed their shackles, broken through from the Lower Planes, and arrived in this Great Thousand World were all extraordinary figures with top quality characters. Maybe it was because of the ranks of the Planes, but those within the Lower Planes were limited in how high they could reach. However, once they stepped into the Great Thousand World and adapted to it, they would become tigers that'd stepped into the deep mountains, or dragons that'd returned to the sea. They were dazzling figures, even within the Great Thousand World, where great authorities gathered.

This Flame Emperor was one of them, as well as the Martial Ancestor who'd single-handedly challenged the entire Ice Spirit Clan.

The blaze in Li Xuantong's eyes slightly dispersed as he looked back at Mu Chen.

"This good karma casually fell into the hands of the Luo God Clan. Strictly speaking, what they did couldn't be considered 'saving', but, perhaps, more like 'aiding'."

"When the Flame Emperor first broke through the shackles of the Lower Plane and entered the Great Thousand World, he landed in the Luo God Clan's territory by coincidence. You should know, some of the energies practiced in the Lower Planes aren't Spiritual Auras. This Flame Emperor, for example, practiced an energy

called Douqi in his Plane. After entering the Great Thousand World, his Douqi would gradually convert into a purer form of Spiritual Energy. Most of those who've cast away the shackles of the Lower Planes are unfamiliar with this concept. As experts, of course, they'd be unwilling to allow their hard-earned Douqi, or any other energy for that matter, to be converted into something unfamiliar."

"So, of course, there'd be some conflicts. The conversion of Spiritual Energy might pose a danger to them. The rejection of it might do the same. That's the first major problem to those who've managed to break through from the Lower Planes."

Li Xuantong smiled. To people like themselves, this was a rather amusing issue. But to those who'd actually cast aside the shackles of the Lower Planes and entered the Great Thousand World, this was quite a headache.

"Luo Tianshen met the Flame Emperor then and helped him successfully convert his Spiritual Energy. He could also see that even though the Flame Emperor was young, he was knowledgeable and experienced. Luo Tianshen knew that anyone capable of breaking the shackles of the Lower Planes would be someone capable. Even though they wouldn't be too strong when they had just stepped into this Planes, the potential they possessed was extremely frightening. That's why Luo Tianshen dropped their status difference and befriended him."

"However, the Flame Emperor didn't stay in the Luo God Clan for long. He left right after he recovered. It's said that he went to search for his two wives. For a long time after that, Luo Tianshen didn't hear any news of him."

"Not until ten years ago. One day, a certain piece of news spread throughout the Great Thousand World. A man had proclaimed himself the Flame Emperor, fought with the Fire Spirit Clan's Old Ancestor, and had stepped into the Heavenly Sovereign cultivation stage. It was an earth-shaking battle, and torrential flames had

turned the entire abandoned continent into a wasteland. The Fire Spirit Clan's Old Ancestor couldn't even harm the Flame Emperor after exerting all his methods. In the end, he was forced to admit defeat with his hands cupped. The Flame Emperor then asked for a flame from the clan, then left carefree and easy. From that day on, the name of the Flame Emperor was widespread throughout the Great Thousand World."

Li Xuantong's eyes were blazing again. Heavenly Sovereign. Within the Great Thousand World, that kind of level could make one the absolute overlord of a territory. And when faced with this Flame Emperor, even a Heavenly Sovereign had been forced to cup his hands in defeat. A figure as mighty as him was befitting of the title "Flame Emperor".

"After that, the Flame Emperor founded the Endless Fire Territory. Experts rushed over like ducks lining up. Not only is the Flame Emperor in control of all the flames between heaven and earth, his skill in refining elixirs is also unparalleled. My experts seized the opportunity and went begging for those elixirs. Thus, the Endless Fire Territory transformed into a colossal existence in only a few decades."

Li Xuantong clicked his tongue as his eyes filled with admiration. The Great Thousand World was endlessly wide, and all kinds of mighty people were trying to make a name for themselves. However, it wasn't that simple.

Mu Chen sighed as well. The name of Flame Emperor truly wasn't in vain.

"Perhaps even Luo Tianshen was shocked after hearing of the Flame Emperor's accomplishments. He probably never considered the possibility. Back then, that young man had only just arrived in the Great Thousand World, but he'd managed to make a name for himself in only a few decades. However that old man is prideful down to his bones, so he didn't spend effort on associating with the Endless Fire Territory. Maybe to him, that favor was nothing but a

small thing, not worth remembering."

"But ten years ago, when Luo Li's father fell, the entire Luo God Clan was close to death. On Luo Tianshen's birthday, the Flame Emperor sent someone to express his good wishes. The gesture shocked the other three God Clans, who were like tigers staring down their prey. Perhaps none of them expected the Luo God Clan to have such an ally."

"After that, Luo Tianshen had to borrow the Flame Emperor's prestige in order to barely keep the Luo God Clan afloat for another ten plus years."

Li Xuantong sighed and carried on, "However, once Luo Tianshen's lifespan comes to an end, the situation will definitely collapse. Even though the Flame Emperor's name is far-reaching, the Endless Fire Territory is, after all, still too far from the Eastern Heavens Realm. Furthermore, the three God Clans aren't that easy to deal with. Even if they're afraid of the Endless Fire Territory, if the Luo God Clan has declined to the bottom, they definitely won't hesitate to move."

"It'd also be tricky to try and solve the Luo God Clan's situation with outside force. You could save them once or twice, but not forever." Li Xuantong faintly summed up. Right now, most of the core members of the Royal Family were useless, aside from Luo Li who possessed the qualifications to inherit the clan as Empress. Such vermins. If Luo Tianshen passed away before Luo Li assumed full control, then the Luo God Clan would probably be in danger.

The situation was simply awful. Mu Chen felt heartache as he thought of the burden Luo Li carried on her tender shoulders. However, he knew that there was no way he could keep Luo Li from going back.

Mu Chen clenched his fist. In the end, he was still too weak to help Luo Li.

It looked like he had to speed up his cultivation over the next five

years. He had to be of some real help once Luo Li took control of the Luo God Clan! Even though that'd be difficult, he wasn't going to give up.

Li Xuantong saw Mu Chen clench his fist and spoke, "You have five years, at most. However, I don't think you'll be able to truly help her within only five years."

"Who knows what the future will bring?"

Mu Chen only smiled. The future was too unpredictable and difficult to judge. But he knew that he'd do his best to reach his target. No matter how rough the road might be, he definitely wouldn't give up.

Otherwise, how would he fit next to such a lovable and dear girl?

Li Xuantong looked at the youth before him. The latter's smile was faint, but there was an unquestionable resolve in his eyes. Li Xuantong knew that it was impossible to get Mu Chen away from Luo Li.

Once in a while, this youth does show some charm. His resolve and confidence. Maybe that's why he obtained the favor of that girl who bears so much on her shoulders.

"I promised Luo Li that I wouldn't interfere in your matters anymore. However..."

As he spoke, his expression turned sharp as he glared at Mu Chen, "I hope that you won't let me down. I'm not asking you to provide much help to Luo Li. I only ask that you don't drag her down. Her responsibilities are too large and cruel that the slightest pause will mean destruction."

Mu Chen raised his head to the starry skies and slowly declared, "I feel more sorry for her, than you do."

"Li Xuantong."

He lowered his head then looked back towards Li Xuantong with

a serious expression. This was also the first time he'd called Li Xuantong's name without a prefix. "There'll be a day where I'll stand beside her once more. Anything that grieves her, I will reduce to ashes!"

Li Xuantong looked at the youth's face, which was calm, but held an endless ripple in his eyes. He wanted to say something, ended up only nodding. "I hope you'll actually be able to accomplish that. There's still time for you to grow."

Mu Chen replied with a small nod and a smile. Then his expression recovered as he inhaled a deep breath and inquired, "What's the Flame Emperor's level? If you compared him to the Martial Ancestor who challenged the entire Ice Spirit Clan, who's stronger?"

"The Flame Emperor made that Old Ancestor of the Fire Spirit Clan, a Heavenly Sovereign, admit defeat with cupped hands. However, this isn't a kind of news that's heard often. With his talent and a few decades to cultivate, there's no way he's still stuck in the same spot. Who knows, he might've even surpassed the Heavenly Sovereign stage and stepped into an even higher level. After all, the Great Thousand World is endlessly vast. The road to the peak is long, even for heroes like the Flame Emperor."

Li Xuantong smiled. "As for that Martial Ancestor, he's also extremely frightening. He managed to single-handedly overturn such a large existence like the Ice Spirit Clan. However, those guys from the Ice Spirit Clan are also very cunning. After the Martial Ancestor broke through their defences and invaded their grounds, they managed to suppress their anger and did their best to comply with his requests. After that, the Martial Ancestor established the "Martial Border", one on par with the Endless Fire Territory. Right now, the Ice Spirit Clan has an extremely close relationship with the Martial Border. Those who were planning to attack the Ice Spirit Clan, now have to consider the figures behind them: the Martial Border, as well as that Martial Ancestor.

“It’s not easy to say which one of them is more powerful. After all, the two of them have never fought before. Most people keep their opinions to themselves.”

Li Xuantong rubbed his chin, “However, I’d really like to see which one is stronger, between the Flame Emperor and the Martial Ancestor.”

Mu Chen also couldn’t help laughing as he looked up to the endless starry skies. The Great Thousand World was endlessly vast, filled with many brilliant things he’d never known. However, he believed that one day, he’d be qualified to stand at the heart of the Great Thousand World, and have a great battle with the Sovereigns from the Lower Planes.

Chapter 224 – Heaven Rank Mission

In the end, Li Xuantong left. However, Mu Chen's heart was still beating wildly with all the information that he'd just gotten. What Luo Li had on her shoulders was far heavier than he thought, giving him even more of a heartache.

Towards that silly girl who could put down such an important matter to meet him in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, he was deeply moved. Nothing could be greater than a beauty's grace.

Siiuuuuu!

Shortly after Li Xuantong left, a streak of light flew over under the night. A slender figure landed on the building. It was Luo Li, who'd just returned from cultivating.

When Luo Li saw Mu Chen standing there, she was slightly baffled. Yet, she still showed him a gentle smile as clear as a spring flowing across the mountains, softening the hearts of any who saw it.

Mu Chen's eyes were fixed on the beautiful girl before him, who gave off a distant sense of tranquility. The deep emotion within his eyes made the girl's face flush red.

"What happened?" Luo Li asked as she touched her exquisite face.

Mu Chen slowly approached Luo Li under her bashful gaze. He extended his arm and embraced her slender and delicate waist.

Luo Li's face blushed red as she glanced around. Only after making sure that there was no one else there did her struggles weaken as she buried herself into his embrace. That familiar scent lightened the exhaustion that she'd accumulated from cultivating for the past few days.

"Sorry." Mu Chen lightly said as he buried his face into her long,

fragrant hair.

Luo Li was slightly startled. “What are you saying, all of a sudden?”

“Before, you told me that falling in love with me would hinder your cultivation. I thought that was a joke. I never imagined that it’d truly bring you trouble.” Mu Chen still recalled their time on the Spirit Road— This girl’s reason for chasing after him for half a year. Back then, he’d found it rather amusing. But after learning Luo Li’s situation, he realised that she hadn’t been joking when she’d said those words. Because of him, she sacrificed much of her important cultivating time.

Luo Li used her slender arms to push herself away from Mu Chen’s chest. However, her delicate face remained in a frown as she stared at him and said, “I don’t like what you’re saying.”

It was easy to see that she was upset with the way he was mocking himself, saying he was only hindering her.

“What did you hear?” After all, Luo Li was an intelligent woman. She could tell that Mu Chen was acting strange. She swept her charming eyes over the roof and asked, “So, Li Xuantong visited you? What did he say?”

Her anger flared as soon as she finished those words. What did that Li Xuantong do?! Did he really think I would have a fall-out with him?

Mu Chen smiled, extended his hand, and brushed Luo Li’s exquisite face. His voice was gentle as he replied, “Don’t blame him. I should’ve known all of that. One fine day, I’ll be able to stand beside you and tear all those matters to shreds!”

Luo Li softly sighed as she threw herself back into Mu Chen’s chest and lightly nipped him[1. Something like a love bite, but probably not strong enough to leave a hickey.], “Let’s not talk about that.”

Those words were too heavy; she felt tired just thinking about them. She also didn't want to drag Mu Chen into this anymore.

Mu Chen smiled as he tightened his arms around her. "Rest assured. What's done is done. I won't let you go. In this lifetime, you're already mine. Mu Chen's woman."

"What do you mean by 'what's done is done'? That sounds so horrible. This has nothing to do with you." Luo Li lightly laughed as she rolled her eyes at him. Her charming air made Mu Chen restless.

"You're in my arms, and still you dare to say that 'this has nothing to do with me'? Someone needs a smack." Mu Chen darkly chuckled. The hand that'd been tangled around her waist casually slipped down to her backside and gave a light tap.

Luo Li's tender face stiffened and turned red. She bashfully bit Mu Chen's chest again, this time a little harder.

Mu Chen held the girl, raised his head to the starry skies, and sighed a deep breath. When he spoke next to Luo Li's ear, his voice was filled with resolve. "Luo Li, I might be weak right now, and you cannot depend on me. But trust me, one day, I'll truly stand by your side. When that time comes, I'll handle all the waves coming at you. Anyone who's bullied you and aggrieved you, I'll shred to pieces!"

"Luo Li, please wait for me. Wait for me to become an absolute expert."

Towards the end, his voice was as soft as a whisper; however, it conveyed an unswerving determination from the deepest parts of his heart.

Luo Li's eyes turned red at the soft whisper in her ears. A warmth rippled through her body from the deepest parts of her heart.

She extend her jade-like arms, embraced Mu Chen's waist in return, and made a soft "en" in acknowledgement. She then raised

her face towards Mu Chen, stood on tiptoe, and kissed him on the lips.

Mu Chen, I will wait for you. I don't care if you're an ordinary or an absolute expert. I'll still be waiting for you.

...

The next day, Su Ling'er paid a visit to the freshmen's area and found Mu Chen, who was still cramped up in his building.

"You have something for me?"

Mu Chen was rather surprised by Su Ling'er's sudden appearance. The girl held her hands behind her back as she looked at the small building with interest. A smile filled her face.

"I came looking for you with some good news." She smiled and continued, "Can you take a trip with me? My big sister wants to see you."

"Your big sister? Su Xuan?" Mu Chen blanked. Su Xuan was looking for him? The two of them had never really interacted before, nor had he been acquainted with her in the past.

"En."

Su Ling'er nodded. "Rest assured, it's nothing bad. Other people might not even get such an opportunity, even if they begged," she said as she walked. Mu Chen hesitated, then followed after her.

Under Su Ling'er's lead, the two of them left the freshmen's area and headed towards the north area of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. After about half an hour, Mu Chen followed Su Ling'er as they descended towards a lake. At the heart of the lake was a small island that was populated with only a handful of neat houses.

At this moment, a white-clothed girl stood in front of one of the bamboo houses. Her charming face held a sweet-tempered smile as she watched the two descend.

“Big sister.” Su Ling’er waved towards the girl in white.

Mu Chen was rather taken aback by the appearance of this astonishing beauty within the grounds of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Her white dress was delicately wrapped around her exquisite, yet full, body. Her long her was as dark as ink, and her sweet demeanor was truly beautiful.

“Senior Sister Su Xuan.” Mu Chen cupped his hands towards the girl.

“You don’t have to be so polite.” Su Xuan lightly smiled and continued, “I summoned you today because I’ve accepted a Heaven Rank mission from the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. I wanted to see if you’re interested.”

“A Heaven Rank mission?” Mu Chen blanked and awkwardly replied, “I don’t seem to possess the qualifications to join a mission of this rank, right?”

Of course, he knew about the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy’s Mission Hall, which was in charge of distributing all sorts of missions. Those who could complete these missions would receive huge rewards. The rewards were differentiated into three ranks. The Heaven Rank mission that Su Xuan spoke of was a high rank. This kind of mission not only required strength, but also sufficient experience. Even if a freshman like Mu Chen possessed the requisite strength, he still wouldn’t have the qualifications to accept the mission.

“In terms of strength, you possess quite a bit. As for experience, I can handle that for you.” Su Xuan said lightly.

“Why did Senior Sister Su Xuan ask me?” Mu Chen said in confusion. Heaven Rank missions were rarely seen. Not just anyone could accept one. Even though there were some risks associated with the mission, the rewards were ample. If Su Xuan wanted to advertise that she was looking for partners, there would definitely be mobs of powerful students rushing over.

Su Xuan glanced at Su Ling'er. The reason why she'd asked for Mu Chen personally was because Su Ling'er kept suggesting him, of course. In addition, she didn't have a bad impression of Mu Chen. This offer could be considered her acknowledgement of that; therefore, she had summoned him.

"Your performance during the Spiritual Battle Stage is why I sought you out. Perhaps there are others who also possess sufficient strength; however, I don't have very high opinions of them." Su Xuan lightly shook her head and continued, "This Heaven Rank mission is restricted to a team of five people. Counting you, we already have four. If this mission is a success, then each person receives 1,500,000 Spiritual Value Points."

"1,500,000 Spiritual Value Points? So many?" After hearing that, even Mu Chen had to take in a lungful of chilly air before returning to his usual calm. That was the reward for a Heaven Rank mission? 1,500,000 Spiritual Value Points all at once. If he did that three or four more times, wouldn't he be able to purchase the Northern Sea Dragon's Blood Essence?

"That actually isn't very much. The Heaven Rank mission that we accepted is only a Low Grade. If it'd been a High Grade Heaven Rank mission, the reward could be up to 8,000,000. However, only one person has ever managed to complete such a mission in recent years." Su Ling'er smiled.

"8,000,000..." Mu Chen's mouth couldn't help twitching and he bitterly smiled. "Was it Shen Cangsheng who completed it?"

"En, only that guy could accomplish such a task." Su Xuan lightly nodded. Her tone contained a small amount of lamentation. Even though she was Ranked 3, she understood that there was quite a bit of distance between herself and Shen Cangsheng.

"In addition, this Heaven Rank mission that I accepted is rather special. It's not a kill or arrest bounty mission; it's a spirit treasury hunting mission. In other words, we're supposed to search for

hidden places that's been passed down since ancient times. Generally speaking, there should be many Spiritual Arts, Artifacts and all sorts of treasures left behind by ancient predecessors. The Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy isn't requiring us to hand over everything we find. We can actually keep the treasures."

Su Xuan smiled, "Therefore, spirit treasury hunting missions are the most popular ones within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. We're basically taking information from the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy and reaping all the profits."

Mu Chen was interested in Su Xuan's words. He wasn't really interested in the treasures; it was actually those 1,500,000 Spiritual Value Points that stirred him.

"Senior Sister Su Xuan..."

Mu Chen hesitated for a brief moment, then said, "I'm rather interested in this mission. However, can I take the liberty of making a request?"

"What is it?" Su Xuan smiled.

Mu Chen gave a rather embarrassed smile and said, "Could I reserve an extra spot on this mission?"

Chapter 225 – Spirit Treasury Hunting

“You want another spot?”

Su Xuan was rather surprised by the request. She hesitated for a brief moment before replying, “There is only one spot left and the candidates have already been determined.”

She spoke in a somewhat apologetic tone as she looked at Mu Chen.

There was nothing Mu Chen could do. He originally wanted to recommend Luo Li, but since the team was already full, the only thing he could do was forget it. He was only worried that if he left Luo Li alone in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, she wouldn’t have him to distract her anymore; she’d definitely enter an intense cultivating state. Mu Chen didn’t know whether that was good or bad.

“Aside from from the two of us who are on this mission, there’s also Senior Sister Li Qing, Rank 23 of the Heavenly Rank. She’s the famed ice beauty of our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.”

“The other is Guo Xiong, Rank 20 of the Heavenly Rank. I already chose them a while ago, so it wouldn’t be nice to change it now.” Su Ling’er said.

“Then, it seems I’ve been rude.” Mu Chen smiled.

“Since you don’t seem to have a problem with it, then our teammates are settled. We’ll head out in three days. When the time comes, we’ll gather back here,” Su Xuan said with a nod.

Mu Chen nodded back. It seemed like he’d have to leave the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy for a while. Mu Chen was also curious about the Northern Heavens Continent that laid outside the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. How could he possibly reject such a good opportunity to go outside?

He continued chatting with Su Xuan, until both sides became a

little more familiar with each other. Since this seemed to be the sisters' home, at last, Mu Chen decided to end his stay andwas about to leave after cupping his hands.

However, a sonic boom sounded, forcing him to stop in his tracks. The boom turned into a figure and landed on the small island; it was a slender youth with green hair and a rather demonic facial feature.

This greened hair youth was the Rank 4 of the Heavenly Ranking, He Yao. When he appeared, he only glanced at Mu Chen with a smile on his face. However, there was also a trace of cryptic brilliance hidden deep within his eyes.

"Haha, Su Xuan, how's the matters from before?" He Yao looked at Su Xuan as he smiled.

When Su Xuan saw He Yao, her sweet-tempered face still had a smile on it, but Mu Chen could tell that there was definitely a rather disaffected courtesy. She smiled and replied, "I apologize, but the members for this mission have already been determined. He Yao, you are too strong for this mission to be a challenge to you. If you joined, how could it possibly have any effects to train?"

Mu Chen understood the situation. It looked like this He Yao wanted to join the mission; however, Su Xuan was rather skilled with her words. She was clearly rejecting him, but she was putting it in such a nice way.

But, He Yao wasn't a nobody, either. Of course, he wouldn't lose his temper over such a simple sentence from Su Xuan. He lightly smiled and said, "Don't put it like that. Even though this spirit treasure mission is better suited for profits than training, the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy only provides you with the most basic amount of information. No one knows how difficult the mission might actually be. Besides, if some other powerful experts find out about the treasure, things might get dangerous. If it ended up in a fight, wouldn't it be safer with a second guard?"

Su Xuan's pupils slightly focused as she faintly smiled, "I doubt we'd have the fortune to find a spirit treasure valuable enough to warrant such a situation."

"Everything begs for stability." He Yao smiled. His line of sight shifted towards Mu Chen. A trace of brilliant light flashed through his eyes as he recognized Mu Chen. After all, the battle that day left him with a deep impression.

"Haha! This must be Junior Brother Mu Chen. I'm He Yao."

He Yao approached Mu Chen with a gentle smile. Su Xuan's expression slightly changed as she saw him shift his attention towards Mu Chen.

"So, you're Senior Brother He Yao."

Mu Chen glanced at Su Xuan and noticed the changes in her face. However, he showed a light smile and cupped his hands politely. So, this guy was the Rank 4 of the Heavenly Ranking, He Yao. An influential figure of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.

"I won't beat around the bush." He Yao showed a full smile and politely said, "I wish to join Su Xuan's team on this mission. I believe Junior Brother Mu Chen has a spot. I hope Junior Brother Mu Chen could let me have it. I'd definitely repay you greatly for this favor."

Mu Chen frowned. He Yao had indeed targeted him for the position.

He Yao smiled again when he saw Mu Chen furrow his brows. "Junior Brother Mu Chen, I'm well aware that this mission has a reward of 1,500,000 Spiritual Value Points. You can rest assured. If this mission is successful, I'll share half of the Spiritual Value Points with you. That way, you'd be able to obtain 750,000 Spiritual Value Points without having to do anything. I believe that's not a bad deal, right?"

"How generous."

Mu Chen inwardly smiled. He Yao really seemed to want this spot. Too bad. Mu Chen absent-mindedly looked at the lake, but in reality, he was paying attention to the sisters. He could tell that Su Xuan couldn't stand He Yao. It'd be inappropriate for him to give the spot to him.

"I apologize, Senior Brother He Yao. This spot was given to me by Senior Sister Su Xuan and I do not possess the rights to give it to someone else. If Senior Brother He Yao can convince Senior Sister Su Xuan, then I can give it to you without any conditions. I have no need for that half of the Spiritual Value Points." Mu Chen lightly smiled.

Mu Chen hadn't been very polite about it, he'd blatantly refused the request without leaving He Yao with any face, and he'd thrown the issue back at Su Xuan. But with Su Xuan's personality, He Yao definitely wasn't getting that spot.

"Cunning." Su Xuan's lips slightly curved uprwards. Her charming eyes glanced at Mu Chen, filled with an extremely charming smile.

Of course, He Yao could tell that Mu Chen was only giving excuses. Although He Yao had smile on his face, his eyes flashed with a chill deep down. "Junior Brother Mu Chen should give me some face. In the future, if you need any help in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, I'll definitely do my best to help you."

Mu Chen lightly shook his head while keeping his attention. He could sense the darkness deep within He Yao's eyes. Then, he understood why Su Xuan didn't like him. This person's scheming heart ran deep. Even though he seemed easy to get along with, he actually had a rather dark character. He wasn't someone who was easy to deal with.

He Yao's smile disappeared a bit at Mu Chen's continued rejection. However, he was still courteous as ever. He didn't flare as he replied, "If that's the case, it seems like I was being pushy."

He Yao turned back to Su Xuan and said, “Su Xuan, I will not go this time around. I hope that you all will return safely. If there’s a chance next time, please inform me. With me around, I’ll definitely be able to protect you.”

His facial features were excellent and rather charming when he cared to be gentle. However, none of them were fooled. Of course, they wouldn’t fall for his theatrics.

Su Xuan lightly nodded but said nothing.

“Then, I’ll take my leave first.”

He Yao smiled towards Su Xuan and gave a meaningful look at Mu Chen before, cupping his hands and leaving.

Mu Chen looked into He Yao’s slightly dark eyes and lightly shook his head. It seemed like he’d offended someone, again. Aside from Su Xuan of the top five of the Heavenly Ranking, he’d already fought with Li Xuantong and never even seen Shen Cangsheng. As for Rank 4 He Yao and Rank 5 Xu Huang, they weren’t on good terms with him.

“An unexpected calamity has descended from the heavens.” Mu Chen said helplessly as he sighed.

Su Xuan covered her mouth as she lightly laughed, “Of course, you’d be the one who could challenge Li Xuantong. I was worried that you might let him have the spot.”

“I risked my life just to exchange three blows with Li Xuantong. I don’t consider this a challenge at all.” Mu Chen shook his head and continued with a small amount of doubt in his voice. “Senior Sister Su Xuan, He Yao is much stronger than me. If he went, then the success rate of this mission would be increased by many folds. Why did you reject him? Furthermore, he seems to be interested in Senior Sister Su Xuan, as well.”

“In the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, there are way many people who are fond of my sister. Should she accept them

all?” Su Ling’er snorted.

“At least there aren’t many who can compare to He Yao.” Mu Chen smiled.

Su Xuan lightly shook her head and lightly replied, “He Yao’s scheming runs too deep. I don’t like it. That kind of person isn’t suitable as a trustable companion.”

“Then, it sounds like I’m worth trusting,” Mu Chen smiled. “I’m overwhelmed by the favor.”

Su Xuan laughed and gently said, “You’re still under observation. As for trust, we’ll have to see.”

Mu Chen laughed and said no more. Then, he waved his hand and flew off. Since he might leave the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, he’d have to let Luo Li know about it.

In the forest outside the lake, He Yao’s face was cold as he watched Mu Chen flying overhead. His eyes were filled with a chill and darkness.

“Boss, that Su Xuan didn’t let you join the mission?”

The voice came from a skinny youth next to He Yao. “That woman really doesn’t know how to be tactful. With boss’ help, what kind of mission wouldn’t be easy? But boss, that Heaven Rank mission wasn’t terribly uncommon. I heard that it’s just a spirit treasury hunting mission. Just an ordinary spirit treasury.”

“What do you know?!”

He Yao waved his sleeves and coldly barked, “Su Xuan’s mission is in the White Dragon Hillock. Even though the mission’s description only mentioned “a wealthy Spirit Treasury”, I’ve secretly checked. A few hundred years ago, there was a pinnacle expert who appeared in the White Dragon Hillock. His name was Sovereign White Dragon. He also fell in the White Dragon Hillock. However, his gravesite has never been found. With the spirit treasury appearing now, there’s a possibility that it was left behind

by this Sovereign White Dragon.”

“Wouldn’t that be a Sovereign Spirit Treasury then?!” The skinny youth was shocked.

A spirit treasury of this level wasn’t ordinary; it’d be enough to to make many forces drool. It was far from being a Low Grade Heaven Rank mission.

He Yao sneered and directed his gaze back to the lake. In his eyes flashed a trace of ruthlessness.

“If it really is a Sovereign Spirit Treasury, then Su Xuan’s team isn’t going to have it easy. I’ll see how many of them can come back alive! Hmph! Not knowing how to appreciate favors!”

Chapter 226 – Northern Heavens Continent

The next morning

Mu Chen was prepared to leave. A slender, elegant girl stood before the building, watching him with bright eyes. Last night, Mu Chen had informed her that he was going on a mission with Su Xuan's party. Even though they'd only be apart for a short while, the girl was still rather reluctant to let him go. But ultimately, she didn't hinder Mu Chen. She, too, needed some time to quiet down and cultivate.

"Then, I'll be going."

Mu Chen lightly smiled as he moved closer to the girl.

"Okay. Be careful." Luo Li lightly nodded. Her hands straightened out the wrinkles in Mu Chen's clothes, like a newlywed wife. The gesture filled Mu Chen's eyes with gentleness.

"Don't push yourself too hard in cultivation, while I'm not around. It's true that 'learning is moving forwards and not advancing is moving backwards', but you still can't be too hard on yourself. It'll have a negative effect, instead." Mu Chen sternly reminded.

"I know." Luo Li nodded.

Mu Chen decided it was time to stop loitering around. He waved his hand and his figure turned into a streak of light. Under Luo Li's watch, he flew towards the interior of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.

Mu Chen flew through the skies of Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. About ten minutes later, he arrived at the forest outside the lake and descended.

When he landed on the small island, he noticed that there were two strangers present, aside from Su Xuan and Su Ling'er.

A man and a woman. The man had a towering, ape-like figure, and emitted a sense of barbaric oppression. He had a thick brow and a stern face that held a straightforward smile, entirely different from He Yao's. Even Mu Chen had a feeling that he liked the guy, just by seeing him.

The woman wore tight-fitting cultivation clothing. She had a tall build and was rather well-developed. The cultivation outfit exaggerated her sexy curves — anyone would be dizzy just from looking at her. Mu Chen shifted his line of sight upwards and met an icy face. Her long, naturally curly hair gave her a rather charming air, but the effect was lost in her ice-cold expression.

In terms of demeanor, she was probably less than Su Xuan. But with her fiery figure gave her the capital to compete against Su Xuan.

Upon seeing them, Mu Chen understood what was going on. They must be the remaining two companions for this mission. Guo Xiong and Li Qing.

When Su Xuan saw that Mu Chen had arrived, she lightly smiled, motioned towards the other two companions, and introduced them. Indeed, they were exactly the ones Mu Chen had predicted.

Finally, Su Xuan motioned towards Mu Chen and introduced him to the other two. "This is our last companion, Mu Chen. Even though he's just a freshman, he can't be underestimated."

When Guo Xiong heard that name, he immediately looked back at Mu Chen. A strange look also flashed across Li Qing's icy face as she looked to him.

"Haha, you must be that Mu Chen that took three moves from Li Xuantong! I never expected someone who looks so weak and feeble would be able to attain such a manly achievement." Guo Xiong laughed. His voice was loud like thunder as it resounded near Mu Chen's ears.

Mu Chen helplessly smiled.

“Since Su Xuan invited you, you must have some strength. We’re all in this together. I hope we can attain mutual trust and help each other.” Guo Xiong said with a straightforward laugh.

“Then, I’ll have to trouble Senior Brother Guo Xiong to take care of me.” Mu Chen laughed. He’d developed a good impression of this loud and robust man. He could sense that this Guo Xiong before him definitely wasn’t weak. He’s much stronger than the usual Heavenly Fusion Stage Late Phase expert. Based on the ripples that Guo Xiong were giving off, he probably already had one foot on the path to the Heavenly Transform Stage. You could probably count them as Heavenly Transform Stages, anyways. The only thing hy lacked was the opportunity to fully boost him there. Within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, that was quite decent.

From the looks of it, Mu Chen was the weakest link on this mission. A Heavenly Fusion Stage Initial Phase wasn’t terribly outstanding. Even Su Ling’er had already stepped into the Heavenly Fusion Stage Late Phase. However, Guo Xiong and the rest didn’t underestimate him because of that. Even though they hadn’t personally witnessed Mu Chen’s pact of three moves with Li Xuantong, they’d heard about it through the rumors. That was already enough to surprise them.

Who is Li Xuantong? He’s the Rank 2 of the Heavenly Ranking! Even though Guo Xiong and Li Qing only ranked in the twenties, they were well aware of the gap between themselves and Li Xuantong. If they’d been in Mu Chen’s position, they might not have even been able to withstand those three moves.

“It’s about time. Let’s get ready to move out.”

Su Xuan lightly smiled, “I’ll fill you in on the mission details along the way.”

Mu Chen, Guo Xiong and Li Qing nodded. No objections.

“Let’s go.”

In response, Su Xuan fell silent. Her figure moved and took the lead as she flew towards the exit of Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Mu Chen and the rest followed.

Since coming to the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, Mu Chen had never left the grounds. Therefore, he was unfamiliar with everything that was going on, and could only follow the lead of Su Xuan and the rest. As they flew, he gained a sense of just how vast the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy was, for the first time. They only saw the boundary of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy after flying for several hours. As they approached, Mu Chen looked up at the sky and noticed the peculiar ripples of Spiritual Aura. Upon a closer look, he could sense the clouds rushing about through those strange ripples. These ripples were from Spiritual Arrays.

These Spiritual Array ripples were as broad as the ocean, cryptic, and extremely complicated. Mu Chen’s face changed with just a glance. He could feel his Spiritual Energy turning chaotic; he immediately suppressed it.

“This is where the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy intersects with the outerworld. With this Spiritual Array protecting the academy, it’ll be easy to leave the grounds, but not the other way. In order to enter, you’ll have to obtain the “Institution Guide” to enter the Northern Heavens City. Otherwise, you’d be slaughtered by the Academy Guarding Spiritual Array.” Su Xuan explained to Mu Chen, when she saw him looking up at the sky.

“The Northern Heavens City?” Mu Chen immediately asked in doubt after nodding to her explanation.

“It’s an enormous city that stands outside of our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. It’s well-known throughout the Northern Heavens Continent. It’s also considered the academy’s

number one defence."

"We're heading to the White Dragon Hillock, which is located at the center of the Northern Heavens Continent. It's about a three-day journey from here. We should hurry straight there."

Su Xuan looked at Mu Chen and said, "Mu Chen, this is your first time outside of the academy grounds. I should fill you in with some information about the Northern Heavens Continent."

Mu Chen nodded, with eyes filled with interest.

"The Northern Heavens Continent is extremely vast. Our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy sits at the heart of the continent and is also the largest force on this continent."

Su Xuan's voice was as gentle as running water, pouring across the heart. "But, don't assume that's going to make our trip any smoother."

"The Northern Heavens Continent conceals many talents. There are as many forces as there are stars in the sky — dragons and snakes mingled together, if you will. No one knows how many powerful figures are hidden around. Furthermore, the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy has its own rules; any students who've ventured outside its borders are to rely on themselves. Unless you die, the academy won't interfere."

"Of course, the academy isn't going to ignore matters of life and death regarding its students. The moment one of its students dies, the academy is sure to investigate. When they find the murderer, they'll issue an order of arrest in the form of a mission. They'll chase the killer to the ends of the earth, leaving them nowhere to hide."

"Even so, every year, there are a few students who lose their lives to other sorts of mishaps while journeying out in the Northern Heavens Continent. The Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy can only avenge a few among them; there are also others who've died

in vain.”

As she spoke of that, Su Xuan’s gentle face turned stern. “Therefore, when journeying out in the Northern Heavens Continent, we must be extra careful. If the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy is the ivory tower, then this is the genuine slaughter house. A slight carelessness could mean loss of life.”

Mu Chen lightly nodded. Now that he’d left the grounds of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, he was no longer bound by their rules. On the flip side, it meant that the academy wasn’t going to protect him, either. Survival and success on this Northern Heavens Continent would depend on his own capabilities.

There were many talented individuals hiding in the Northern Heavens Continent. Even though the academy was considered the strongest force, it had yet to claim the entire continent for itself. After all, their first priority was to nurture its students. From a certain angle, you could say that the academy needed the ruthless training grounds of the wild Northern Heavens Continent. They knew that students would never become genuine experts if confined to cultivating inside the academy.

Only by undergoing endless trials of blood and fire could you temper a tenacious character. Moving forward bravely on the path of cultivation and never falling back.

And the other forces probably knew that. That’s why they didn’t fear the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, even though they knew of its size and strength. That’s why so many students had left their bones buried in the wilderness of the continent.

Mu Chen gradually restrained the ripples in his heart. The smile and gentleness on his face also slowly and unconsciously vanished. As his smile disappeared, his expression turned much deeper.

It felt as if the clouds around were towering, lofty peaks that had just cleared a little.

The Blood Calamity of the Spiritual Road had let go of his restraint. Now, on the Northern Heavens Continent, he'd be able to exert his full strength with nothing to fear.

Although these changes were very tiny, Su Xuan, Guo Xiong, and Li Qing all noticed it. A strange look immediately flash through their eyes. Right now, Mu Chen gave off an air of someone who was well-experienced and had lots of training behind him, not someone who'd just left the grounds of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. No. Even those who were experienced didn't have such sword-sharp eyes.

"This Mu Chen isn't a simple guy."

This sentence flashed through all their hearts. Su Xuan lightly smiled and waved her jade hands.

"Let's head for the White Dragon Hillock."

Chapter 227 – White Dragon City

The White Dragon Hillock was located slightly west of the center of the Northern Heavens Continent. This was a rather unusual place with some decent fame throughout the Northern Heavens Continent; it's rumored that countless experts once fell here during a centuries-old, earth-shaking battle. These rumors also claimed that the fallen included a Sovereign level expert.

When those experts fell, they left everything they had buried within this place. Since then, countless treasure hunters have gathered there, endlessly searching the White Dragon Hillock. There have actually been a lucky few who've managed to discover rather ample rewards. Some even managed to win those fallen experts' inheritances. From that point on, they soared from their former status as nameless nobodies, gaining some amount of renown within the Northern Heavens Continent.

When people heard that, the White Dragon Hillock's fame suddenly surged. In addition to the vastness and strangeness of the White Dragon Hillock, there were also many Spiritual Beasts wandering the area. That's why even though the White Dragon Hillock wasn't extremely famous, it still had quite a local reputation.

Not far from White Dragon Hillock, several lights suddenly streaked across the horizon. The outlines of a massive city could be seen in the distance.

"We'll reach White Dragon City next. It's the largest city in White Dragon Hillock. Everything in this area is controlled by White Dragon City Lord. Rumor has it that this person possesses the strength of a Heavenly Transform Stage. He's certainly not weak. You could say he's a small overlord of this territory."

As they flew on, Su Xuan's soft voice sounded in their ears.

"We'll first find lodging in White Dragon City and gather

information. Usually, there are some abnormalities when a Spirit Treasury emerges. It'd definitely attract a lot of people. We'll have to take note of which forces we need to be careful of."

Su Xuan was evidently experienced with these sort of missions; she was especially thorough with her plans. Mu Chen heard her and formed no opinions, of course. He nodded his head.

Su Xuan lightly smiled at that. Her figure moved and descended, landing outside the city.

Mu Chen followed. As he approached, he sensed just how majestic this city was. The city walls were built from Black Stones and were several hundred feet tall. It was a towering structure, giving off an impenetrable feeling.

In terms of both scale and name, this city was several dozen times greater than their Mu Territory's city. Mu Chen couldn't help sighing. Compared to the Northern Heavens Continent, not to mention a small Northern Spiritual Realm, the Hundred Spirit Continent could only be considered ordinary.

After all, even if the Mu Territory did control a decent-sized territory, Mu Feng was still only at the Spirit Stage Late Phase. However, even the City Lord of White Dragon City already possessed the strength of a Heavenly Transform Stage. If this lord had lived on the Hundred Spirit Continent, he would've already become the Lord of several Realms.

Streams of people constantly flowed throughout the city entrance. The bustling noise informed them of the character of the city.

"Let's enter the city as well."

Su Xuan lightly waved her jade hands as she led Mu Chen and the rest of the group into the city. As they walked in, the air became even more vigorous.

"We'll search for a place to lodge and then head for the trading

sector of the city. It's the area with the most information flow, as well as the largest auction house. That's where we'll make our preparations for this spirit treasury hunt."

First, Su Xuan led her team in search of an inn. Then, they headed towards the trading sector that was located at the heart of the city. This should be the most flourishing part of White Dragon City. All sorts of Spiritual Artifacts, Soul Essences, Spiritual Arts, and various other treasures were on sale. As long as you could afford it, it was yours.

Su Ling'er's feminine side was excited and enamoured with the dazzling pieces on display. However, Su Xuan pulled her back with a helpless smile. "Most of these are just ordinary things. There's an auction house in the deepest part of the trading sector; that's where you'll find the good stuff. In a while, we'll also head over there for a look. We'll also be able to see which forces and experts have gathered here."

Su Ling'er nodded with reluctance and let Su Xuan pull her away, deeper into the trading sector.

As they walked, their group gathered quite a bit of attention. It had nothing to do with Mu Chen or Guo Xiong; it was solely because of Su Xuan, Su Ling'er, and Li Qing. Their characters were entirely different; sweet-tempered, pampered and charming, and ice-cold. Anyone would be dazzled with just a look.

Mu Chen and Guo Xiong followed behind them, feeling the glares of heated from all around. They helplessly exchanged looks and smiled. No matter where they were, beautiful girls always attracted attention.

The five of them quickly moved through the trading sector, only slowing once they reached the heart of it. Here stood a majestic hall, with endless streams of people moving about. At the entrance stood fully-equipped guards. Anyone who wanted to enter the auction house would have to pay 10,000 Spirit Coins. This standard

was clearly different from any other auction house they'd known before.

Su Xuan paid the entrance fee for five people with a wave of her hand, then led the four of them into the huge hall. As they entered the hall, their lines of sight expanded. They could see a vast auction hall at the end of the other passage. Currently, the auction hall was filled with people, clearly showing how popular the place was.

The party moved towards the front and found seats. Mu Chen swept his eyes around. Usually, you'd have to possess quite a bit of power and status to sit in these kinds of seats.

As of now, there were already people lazily slouching or idly staring at nothing, waiting for the auction to begin.

Mu Chen swept his sharp eyes towards the front, quickly finding a white-clothed youth, who was seated in front, towards the left. He was leisurely fanning himself. Beside him were two very sexily-dressed ladies, who were snuggling up to him, lightly smiling as they teased.

Next to that white-clothed youth, sat a withered grey-robed old man. His eyes were shut as though he was blind and deaf as he sat beside that youth. From the looks of it, he seemed to be in-charge of protecting that youth.

"That should be the Young City Master of White Dragon City." Su Xuan said suddenly clarified in a soft voice.

"Senior Sister Su Xuan knows him?"

"His sleeves have white dragons embroidered on them. That's the symbol of White Dragon City. Furthermore, the old man next to him is a Heavenly Transform Stage Initial Phase. Aside from the Young City Master, I'm afraid no one else in this city could get such treatment." Li Qing lightly explained. Her voice was light but cold, filled with dense loathing. It wasn't directed at Mu Chen, but

at that youth who had two girls snuggling up to him with their ample figures. It was clear that she was disgusted by such a lecher.

Only after that did Mu Chen get it. He'd already noticed that the grey-robed elder wasn't quite ordinary. However, this was his first time here. Of course, he didn't know about the symbol of White Dragon City.

Su Xuan's expression quivered as she looked ahead, towards the right. "Even the Heavenly Dipper Sword Sect's members are here." She was looking at several figures, the leader of whom wore yellow clothes. He was thin, but had especially sharp eyes. Based on the faintly discernible Spiritual Energy ripples he was giving off, he wasn't any weaker than that grey-robed old man. Next to him were several young girls and boys. Each of them wore the symbol of a golden sword on their chest.

"The Heavenly Dipper Sword Sect?" Mu Chen followed Su Xuan's gaze. But since this was his first in the Northern Heavens Continent, he was clearly unfamiliar with other forces' symbols.

"Within a thousand miles of White Dragon Hillock, there are three forces that are considered the strongest. White Dragon City, the Heavenly Dipper Sword Faction, and the Earthen Way Sect. Usually, they'd be guarding their own territories and wouldn't bother showing up in each other's territories. But now, they've actually gathered here. I wonder if they're also here due to the appearance of the Spirit Treasury." said Su Xuan.

"Can't be helped. The appearance of a Spirit Treasury usually attracts some abnormal movements. They're also locals of the White Dragon Hillock. How could they let themselves miss out on such a good opportunity?" Guo Xiong helplessly replied. If the Spirit Treasury attracted too much attention, then their harvest would naturally decrease.

"Now, let's see if the Earthen Way Sect shows up."

Su Xuan lightly nodded. However, before she could finish her

words, her expression changed. Mu Chen noticed the change and turned to look. Not far away, there was a group of people wearing earth-yellow clothes approaching. The one leading them was a skinny old man with sunken eyes. He slowly strolled towards the auction house and sat down in the frontmost seats.

Mu Chen understood just by looking. Those people should be from the Earthen Way Sect that Su Xuan had just been talking about.

This time, all three major forces within a thousand miles had gathered in White Dragon City.

Xu Suan, Guo Xiong and Li Qing exchanged glances and slightly frowned their brows. It seemed that the difficulty of their mission had just increased.

Mu Chen also stared at the three forces; he noticed that the moment all three leaders arrived, everyone suddenly started staring straight ahead at the auction stage. Rays of light flashed in the depths of their eyes.

“These guys…”

Mu Chen knitted his brows and also looked towards the auction stage as rays of light flashed through his mind.

“Are we waiting for the auction to start? What’s caught everyone’s attention?”

Chapter 228 – Spiritual Array Seed

Shiiiii!

The sounds of bells and drums echoed throughout the huge auction house. Many people sat up in an instant, straightening their bodies as they directed excited expressions towards the auction stage. They knew the sign — the auction was starting soon.

Numerous adventure teams had gathered in White Dragon Hillock. Each day, they hunted ferocious Spiritual Beasts, while also searching for Spiritual Treasuries. Once the harvest passed inspection, most of it ended up at the auction house. All the good stuff within a thousand miles of White Dragon Hillock ended up at this particular one.

Many people had come here for that. After all, a High Rank Spiritual Artifact could save a life in desperate fights. To many of the smaller adventure teams, it was absolutely crucial. In the end, life is the most important.

When Su Xuan and the rest heard the sound, they also focused their attention. Especially Mu Chen, who'd noticed the strange air between the three major forces; he paid extra attention.

Watched by a hall full of eyes, a fat middle-aged man slowly walked onto the spacious auction stage with a face full of smiles. He cupped his hands towards the crowd and said, "Haha. Ladies and Gentlemen, my name is Bi Sheng, Chief Auctioneer of the Nine Xia Merchants' White Dragon City auction house. First, allow me to thank everyone on behalf of the Nine Xia Merchants for attending this event."

"So, the auction house here is managed by the Nine Xia Merchants." Su Xuan said softly as she heard the name.

"The Nine Xia Merchants are famous in the Northern Heavens Continent?" Mu Chen asked in a low voice.

Su Xuan lightly smiled. “The Nine Xia Merchants are one of the three largest mercantile groups in the Northern Heavens Continent. What do you think? They possess powerful strength. Although the overlord of White Dragon Hillock is only really a local overlord — he can’t hold a candle to the Nine Xia Merchants.”

Mu Chen understood that. No wonder the Young City Lord of White Dragon City was keeping to himself over there.

At least the auctioneer named Bi Sheng didn’t get too long-winded with this speech. He made a quick transition and moved over to the main topic. With a wave of his hand, a sword case appeared onstage.

The sword case opened, revealing a three-foot-long green blade, rippling with a dense green luster. As the green energy poured out, it showed the image of a large green eagle on the blade. The eagle flapped its wings, creating wind blades, engulfing everything. Sonic booms sounded so loudly, it seemed as if the air had cracked.

This clearly wasn’t a Low Rank Spiritual Artifact; there was even a Spiritual Beast’s Soul Essence sealed within the sword. It wouldn’t be weak.

“Haha. Ladies and Gentlemen’s, this is the Azure Eagle Sword. It’s a Middle Rank Spiritual Artifact. Sealed inside is the Soul Essence of an Azure Light Eagle, with strength comparable to a Heavenly Fusion Stage. As everyone knows, the Azure Light Eagle is known for its speed. At its fastest, even a Heavenly Transform Stage expert would have a hard time hunting it. It has now been refined into this sword, enhancing its power by several folds. If there’s any friend here today who’s an expert with swords, don’t miss out on this opportunity!” Bi Sheng said with his eyes narrowing as he smiled.

“The starting bid for this sword is 150,000 Spirit Coins.”

The auction hall was briefly silent by such an expensive price. However, the lull was soon broken with all sorts of voices. A

Middle Rank Spiritual Artifact with the Soul Essence of an Azure Light Eagle was indeed worthy of such a price.

Mu Chen looked around the auction house, hearing all the yelling. He couldn't help making a bitter smile for a brief moment. When he left the Northern Spiritual Realm, Mu Feng had prepared 150,000 Spirit Coins for him. That was already a decent sum for the Mu Territory. But here, it was the lowest starting price for a Middle Rank Spiritual Artifact.

The yelling continued around the auction house for several minutes, before slowly dying down. In the end, the "Azure Eagle Sword" was sold for 190,000 Spirit Coins to a skinny middle-aged man.

Once the "Azure Eagle Sword" had been sold, the atmosphere in the auction house gradually rose. The auctioneer Bi Sheng was clearly experienced with these sort of auctions. Next came a series of decent quality items. Most were Spiritual Arts, all of those were High Rank Spiritual Tiers. Each priced over a million.

Spiritual Arts were rather good treasures to many people of this area; however, Mu Chen, Su Xuan, and the others who'd come from the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy would find them ordinary. Especially Mu Chen, who'd had a glimpse of the Spiritual Arts Hall's vast collection. It was harder for him to see much more value in these things.

"There's nothing good." Su Ling'er muttered. She clearly wasn't very satisfied with the quality of the auctions.

"Let's wait a little longer. The good things are usually towards the end." Su Xuan lightly smiled. She wasn't impatient.

Mu Chen also nodded. He'd noticed that the members of the three major forces were still quietly seated. Even up until now, none of them had made a move. They were obviously still waiting for the better pieces to appear.

“Haha, the next item for auction is a little special. A team adventuring in the White Dragon Hillock managed to find it by sheer luck. By our appraisals, it should be an item left behind by a High Rank Spiritual Array Master.”

On the stage, Bi Sheng’s pair of hands carefully held up a jade box, the middle of which was decorated with a metal spheres. However, what confused everyone was the fact that none of them could sense any powerful Spiritual Energy rippling from it.

“Haha. Everyone, please don’t underestimate this. If we’ve appraised correctly, then these should be “Spiritual Array Seed” that only powerful Spiritual Array Masters can create.”

Bi Sheng narrowed his eyes and smiled. “Only Spiritual Array Masters with extraordinary abilities can carve such complex and frightening Spiritual Arrays onto this small metal spheres. When facing opponents, all they have to do is throw this “Spiritual Array Seed”, which will instantly form Spiritual Arrays. It’s really mysterious and unusual.”

From one of the front seats, the Earthen Way Sect’s skinny old man glanced at the rusty metal balls and sneered. “Hehe. Hey Fat Bi, it’s true that these ‘Spiritual Array Seed’ must be created by High Rank Spiritual Array Masters. But you’ll still have to check the level of the Spiritual Arrays carved on these ‘Spiritual Array Seed’. If they turn out to be only Rank 1 or 2 Spiritual Arrays, then, what’s the point?”

“You’ll also need a special method to activate them. Even if you have a ‘Spiritual Array Seed’, you won’t be able to activate it if you aren’t familiar with it.”

Everyone in the auction house nodded as they listened. Bi Sheng had been vague on purpose; he was clearly digging a hole and hoping that people would jump in.

“Haha, Brother Tu truly has a vicious foresight. No wonder you’re an Elder of the Earthen Way Sect.” Even though he’d been

exposed, Bi Sheng wasn't enraged at all. Instead, he nodded and smiled. "These 'Spiritual Array Seed' are rather ancient. We invited a Rank 3 Spiritual Array Master to study them, but even he couldn't understand them. The only thing he said was that these Spiritual Arrays definitely surpassed his rank. It's true that they'll only serve the purpose of being decorations; but, of course, to some people, they could also be a formidable treasure."

"Let's not say any more. The starting price for this "Spiritual Array Seed" is 30,000."

"Hissss."

As Bi Sheng's words landed, the auction crowd hissed. This guy hadn't even clearly stated the rank of the Spiritual Arrays carved on these "Spiritual Array Seed" and was daring to ask for 30,000 for just one seed.

However, there was quite a number of Spiritual Array Masters among the auction crowd who were rather interested in it and started bidding. But once the price had reached 50,000, the voices quieted down.

"Haha, this friend over here has offered a price of 50,000. Is there anyone who is willing to go even higher?" Bi Sheng smiled.

Mu Chen stared at this particular "Spiritual Array Seed" and his eyes narrowed as a strange light flashed through his eyes. He'd already entered the Heart Array State to observe the "Spiritual Array Seed". The complicated patterns clearly surpassed the category of Rank 3. According to Mu Chen's speculations, the Spiritual Array carved on this "Spiritual Array Seed" might be compatible to a portion of his "Butchering Demonic Lotus Spiritual Array".

This really was some good stuff.

A thought flashed over Mu Chen's heart and he lightly smiled. "60,000."

The sudden sound in the quiet auction house attracted quite a bit of attention. So much so that even the members of the three major forces also turned their heads in his direction.

Even the white-clothed youth, with two beautiful girls hugging him, also lazily glanced at Mu Chen. Then his eyes focused. A blaze was lit within his eyes.

“Premium qualities.” His eyes were fiery as he looked at Su Xuan, Su Ling’er, and Li Qing sitting next to Mu Chen. His heart pounded. Compared to the two girls in his embrace, those three were on another level.

“Since when did our White Dragon City have such premium qualities?” That white-clothed youth let go of the two girls in his embrace and licked his lips. His eyes were filled with unconcealed lust for the three girls.

“What are you staring at? You don’t want your eyes anymore?!” Su Ling’er was the first to sense the white-clothed youth’s covetous gaze. Her face turned cold as she coldly growled. Her personality was violent to begin with; back in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, she was already so hard to deal with. Now, upon seeing the gaze coming from this white-clothed youth, she was even more furious. Being frank and outspoken, she naturally didn’t give him any face.

Su Xuan also glanced at the youth with indifference. However, she did not speak. Meanwhile, the loathing in Li Qing’s eyes was unconcealed as she glared back at him, it was so hard that you could sense the bloodthirst.

“Haha, a little chili pepper with just enough spice. I like it.”

Even though Su Ling’er had shouted at him, he wasn’t angered. Instead, he licked his lips and lazily waved his hand. “100,000 Spirit Coins. I, the Young Master, want that Spiritual Array Seed.”

Chapter 229 – White Dragon Jade Pillar

100,000?

When the white-clothed youth announced his price, a commotion broke out in the auction house. Such a sum clearly surpassed the estimated price of the Spiritual Array Seed by a long shot.

Eyes shifted between the white-clothed youth and Mu Chen, then to Su Xuan and the other two girls, who currently had angry wolf-like expressions. Then, they understood what was going on.

Most of the people in this auction hall had lived in White Dragon Hillock for quite some time. Of course, they knew that the Young City Lord was very lustful. Who knows how many girls had fallen into his hands over the years? From the looks of it, these three unfamiliar, but beautiful, girls had caught his attention, so he'd purposely stirred matters up.

Mu Chen slightly furrowed his brows. He never thought that the smooth auction might be interrupted by this guy. Mu Chen, himself, also didn't possess much wealth; even if he tried to compete, he knew he wasn't going to win.

The white-clothed youth laughed at Mu Chen's frown, showing off his status as a hedonistic rich-kid.

Su Ling'er's shapely brows lightly moved. She saw the proud look from that youth. A little Young City Lord of White Dragon City dared to put on an act before her?

"150,000." Su Ling'er coldly said.

A commotion broke out in the auction house again. Quite a few people were looking over in interest. From the looks of it, this pampered-looking young miss wasn't someone easy to deal with.

Those from the Heavenly Dipper Sword Faction and the Earthen Way Sect also looked over at Mu Chen's group and showed

surprise. Then, the middle-aged man of the Heavenly Dipper Sword Faction and skinny old man from the Earthen Way Sect stopped their eyes on Su Xuan. They'd clearly sensed her strength.

A trace of astonishment flashed across their eyes. This girl was clearly quite young, but she was already so powerful? These youths definitely weren't simple.

That white-clothed youth was also dazed for a moment. The eyes that'd been watching the exchange with amusement suddenly flashed with gloom. No one in White Dragon City would dare to go against the Young City Master like that.

"200,000." He said after glancing back at Su Ling'er.

"250,000." Su Ling'er added. Her charming eyes were filled with mockery. Now, she'd put him on the stage where he couldn't back down.

"YOU...!" The youth raged. The moment he let out that furious bark, the grey-clothed elder pressed him on the shoulder.

The grey-clothed elder opened his eyes and said, "Young City Lord, there's no need to make trouble. They aren't ordinary people. That girl in white is so powerful that even I might not win. Just let it go. Our target isn't this Spiritual Array Seed, so, please, don't make unnecessary trouble; otherwise, I wouldn't be able to face the City Lord."

When the white-clothed youth heard the elder's words, his face changed through several shades of green and red. He never expected to embarrass himself in front of so many people. However, he only nodded, as he didn't dare to ignore this elder. He then threw a ruthless glance towards Mu Chen's group, before looking away.

"Hmph, a little Young City Lord of White Dragon City dared to be arrogant before me?" Su Ling'er snorted as she saw how suffocating that youth was acting.

“This price is already a little high.” Mu Chen helplessly smiled. The information on the Spiritual Array Seed wasn’t complete, after all. By spending 250,000 Spirit Coins, he felt like they’d lost a little.

“It’s his fault for having such dirty eyes.” Su Ling’er twisted her lips into a pout, but then smiled, “I’ll gift this Spiritual Array Seed to you. I’m not a Spiritual Array Master, so I won’t have a use for it.”

“Then, you have my thanks. I don’t have the money right now, but I’ll return it to you next time.” Mu Chen didn’t reject the offer as he was still rather interested in this Spiritual Array Seed. He only thought of oweing a favour this time.

“Who asked you to return it? We’re companions, right now, so helping each other is natural.” Su Ling’er said as she rolled her eyes at him.

“What Ling’er said is correct. This Spiritual Array Seed shouldn’t be ordinary. If you can study it, who knows? It might be of huge help to us.” Su Xuan lightly smiled. Her gentle smile moved many hearts around them. A woman like her was considerably outstanding. No wonder even Bai Dong couldn’t endure it.

Mu Chen smiled, nodded, and stayed silent.

The auction continued, but Mu Chen didn’t find anything else interesting after his Spiritual Array Seed, and was slightly disappointed. The three major forces sitting in front of them didn’t buy anything, either. It was clear that they’d each come for a specific target, and it seemed that their targets lied in a similar direction.

The auction gradually wound towards its end; however the atmosphere became increasingly excited. Bi Sheng stood onstage with a full smile on his face as he swept an eye over the three major forces without making it clear that he was looking at them. Then, he retrieved an object from his sleeve with exasperating slowness.

The moment that object came out, Mu Chen felt brilliant rays of light as they rushed forth in the eyes of the three major forces. The grey-robed elder next to the white-robed youth hadn't moved at all, until this point, but now, even he was tightly focused.

Mu Chen followed their eyes back to the stage and saw a jade rod appear in Bi Sheng's hand, roughly 2 inches long. The surface of the rod seemed to be decorated with a barely visible engraving of a white dragon in flight. On the head of that dragon was the vague impression of a person sitting cross-legged.

The moment this White Dragon Jade Dowel appeared, it started to vibrate. As powerful lights were emitted, what seemed to be the mournful cries of a dragon tore through the hall. It was a misery too strong for words, like a tsunami bearing down upon them.

The misery quickly permeated the hall. Within a few moments, everyone's faces were white, as if their Spiritual Energies had stopped flowing. The pressure was filling them with a dread born from the pits of their hearts.

What is this?!

What terrifying pressure!

Cries of alarm rose and fell. Everyone eyed the White Dragon Jade Dowel with shaken hearts. Was this the last item left for the end of the auction?

"What is that?" Su Ling'er also watched with curiosity. Something that surprised her had finally appeared in this auction.

Under such spiritual pressure, Su Xuan's lovely eyes also stared at the White Dragon Jade Dowel. She lightly said, "I'm afraid this item probably belonged to a Sovereign."

"A Sovereign?!"

Mu Chen, Guo Xiong, and Li Qing felt light jolts in their hearts upon hearing those words. An item left behind by a Sovereign? Such a treasure actually made its appearance here?

“Haha. Ladies and Gentlemen, this White Dragon Jade Dowel was discovered in the depths of White Dragon Hillock. We have concluded that this White Dragon Jade Dowel was most probably left behind by the White Dragon Sovereign who fell several hundred years ago in White Dragon Hillock.” Bi Sheng said as he lifted the White Dragon Jade Dowel with great caution.

“The White Dragon Sovereign?!”

The entire auction was shocked. Countless eyes had turned red. As everyone knew, among the experts who’d fallen in the White Dragon Hillock, the White Dragon Sovereign was the most famous. Back then, the White Dragon Sovereign was an extremely powerful existence, even for the entire Northern Heavens Continent. However, no one had ever managed to obtain his inheritance after his death. But now, it’s finally been discovered?

An item left behind by a Sovereign was more than enough to make them go crazy with greed.

Recently, there had been a rise in the level of abnormal activity in the depths of White Dragon Hillock. It only took a little thinking for everyone to understand that these were signs that a Spirit Treasury was emerging. Furthermore, the White Dragon Dowel had appeared with amazing timing. It was highly likely that this new Spirit Treasury might be the one left behind by the White Dragon Sovereign. The information bomb that Bi Sheng had tossed instantly exploded in the auction house. Countless breaths grew heavier.

A lot of people had already noticed the abnormalities in the depths of White Dragon Hillock; however, even if they knew that a Spirit Treasury was about to appear, most of them thought it would only be an ordinary Spirit Treasury. Therefore, most people didn’t think too much about it and only focused on trying their luck out there. After all, there were many Spiritual Treasuries that would periodically emerge in White Dragon Hillock. Most of those were ordinary, anyways. However, now, it looked like this new

Spirit Treasury might be the one left behind by the White Dragon Sovereign. Wouldn't that be a Sovereign Spirit Treasury?

There were huge differences between Spirit Treasury of that level and ordinary ones. It was enough to shake the entire White Dragon Hillock.

Mu Chen's group also exchanged looks as chaos broke out around them.

"Didn't the information say it'd be a Wealthy Spirit Treasury? How'd it turn into a Sovereign Spirit Treasury?" Guo Xiong asked blankly.

Su Xuan also slightly knitted her brows. "It seems that there was a mistake in our information. It'll be troublesome this time. If it'd been only a Wealthy Spirit Treasury, then our mission would've been a smooth one. But, since it's a Sovereign Spirit Treasury, it'll probably attract more experts, or even the three major forces. When the time comes, a great battle will be unavoidable."

Even though their party wasn't weak, they were still low in numbers. Trying to confront the powerful local forces with only the five of them would be rather difficult. Furthermore, there were still many powerful adventurer teams in White Dragon Hillock. Those people weren't easy to deal with, either.

"It might not be a genuine Sovereign Spirit Treasury. Who knows, that fat-ass probably just said that to drive up the price," Su Ling'er muttered.

"That's possible," Su Xuan lightly nodded. Then, her charming eyes focused on the White Dragon Jade Dowel on the stage. "We'll wait and see how the situation plays out."

Guo Xiong and the rest of them nodded. Right now, that was the only thing they could do.

Mu Chen also directed his attention towards the White Dragon Jade Dowel on the stage and noticed the nervous expression

coming from the three major forces. His heart, however, sensed Bi Sheng's words were probably all true. The Spirit Treasury that'd emerged this time might really be the one left behind by that White Dragon Sovereign.

"It looks like our mission just gained a lot more twists and turns."

Chapter 230 – Competition

With the appearance of the White Dragon Jade Dowel, the entire auction house boiled over with an impassioned gaze. Many lines of sight fixedly stared at the dowel. Even though Bi Sheng hadn't been terribly clear with his words, the effect was the same — if the new Spirit Treasury in the White Dragon Hillock really was a Sovereign Spirit Treasury, then this White Dragon Jade Dowel might be a crucial object for it.

If they could get their hands on this White Dragon Jade Dowel, wouldn't you be able to increase their chances of finding the Sovereign Spirit Treasury?

Quite a few of those stares were heated and filled with greed. If they could find the Sovereign Spirit Treasury, then their cultivations could scale the skies in a single step. If they could get their hands on the White Dragon Jade Dowel, then they'd require an even shorter time to soar through the heavens in this Northern Heavens Continent!

Bi Sheng gave the auction crowd a narrow-eyed smile and said, "Haha. Of course, we cannot neglect the connection between this White Dragon Jade Dowel and the White Dragon Sovereign. But, as to whether the true usage of it, we cannot say for sure, either. Only the one who wins this piece in today's auction may study it."

"Now, we'll start bidding. The starting price is 3,000,000 Spirit Coins."

Bi Sheng waved his large hand and slightly raised the White Dragon Jade Dowel, spreading and shrouding the hall with its radiance. The faintly discernible pressure seemed to have traces of freezing the air inside the auction house.

"3,500,000."

The white-clothed youth named Bai Dong was the first to speak,

displaying White Dragon City's determination to win this piece.

"4,000,000."

But this time, it looked like White Dragon City wasn't going to have an easy time. The moment Bai Dong's voice landed, the Heavenly Dipper Sword faction followed. The one who spoke was the middle-aged man with eyes as cold and sharp as the edge of a steel blade.

Bai Dong heard that and shot them a vicious glare; however, the middle-aged man appeared not to have noticed it. His eyes were focused only on the White Dragon Jade Dowel. White Dragon City may be powerful, but the Heavenly Dipper Faction wasn't afraid of them.

And, just as Bai Dong was giving off the vicious stare, the old man wearing a yellow robe from the Earthen Way Sect parted his lips. He flashed his large yellow teeth and said with a beaming smile, "4,500,000."

A collective sigh seemed to pass over the audience as they watched the three major forces engage in a bidding war. They understood that they didn't stand a chance against those three wealthy and imposing forces.

Su Ling'er seemed to have her curiosity aroused by the White Dragon Jade Dowel. Just when she was getting ready to call out her own price. However, Mu Chen stopped her.

"What are you doing? If we can get our hands on that White Dragon Jade Dowel, then we might be able to find the Sovereign Spirit Treasury," Su Ling'er said as she pouted.

"That thing is a hot potato. We can't take it." Mu Chen replied as he shook his head.

Who knows how many people had their eye on that White Dragon Jade Dowel? If their party bought it in such a public place, then they'd probably be followed by numerous people, once they

left the auction house. Forget about finding the treasures. Once they left the city, the trouble would start like an endless stream. There were only five of them; they had no hope of dealing with it all. Even with Su Xuan's Heavenly Transform Stage strength, she couldn't possibly intimidate everyone who came after them.

"En. Mu Chen is right." Su Xuan lightly nodded her head in agreement and glared at Su Ling'er, who was still pouting. "Don't mess around. Otherwise, I won't take you out on any more missions."

Only after being threatened by Su Xuan, did Su Ling'er duck down her little head.

"What's your opinion on the situation?" Su Xuan looked to Mu Chen with a faint smile. Even though Mu Chen was about the same age as Su Ling'er, she could tell that his actions carried great experience behind them. Almost like an upperclassman who was used to going outside for training.

"We'll watch for any changes. If this White Dragon Jade Dowel really is connected to the newly emerged Spirit Treasury, then, when the time comes, there'll be an intense battle. We're low on manpower, so we'll have to stick to the shadows and watch for opportunities. If we get caught in heavy fire, we'd only have to immediately abort the mission. Otherwise, we'll suffer disastrous losses." Mu Chen muttered.

Guo Xiong, who was sitting next to him, nodded in agreement. Li Qing gave Mu Chen a second look. Who would've thought that this freshman actually had a skill or two?

Su Xuan nodded her delicate head and looked towards at the three major forces, who were really starting to get into their bidding war. She lightly smiled and said, "Then, for now, let's just sit back and watch the show."

Mu Chen responded with a laugh and pointed his eyes towards the front. Within a short few minutes, the Young City Lord of the

White Dragon City had already hiked the dowel's price up to 6,000,000 Spirit Coins. That price certainly wasn't low anymore. If this was back in the Northern Spiritual Realm, his Mu Territory wouldn't even be able to scrape up so much wealth in one sitting.

When the price reached 6,000,000, the eyes of the middle-aged man from the Heavenly Dipper Sword Faction turned gloomy. Light slightly flickered in his eyes. Then, he spoke in a low, gravely voice, instantly inflating the price by another million. "7,000,000."

Some members of the audience secretly licked their lips. It looked like this Heavenly Dipper Sword Faction had also come prepared.

When 7,000,000 was announced, even White Dragon City and the Earth Way Sect quieted down for a brief moment. Shortly after, the Young City Lord exchanged a look with the grey-robed elder sitting next to him and coldly smiled, "Elder Chen Kun has quite the resolve."

The middle-aged man named Chen Kun lightly smiled and replied, "We wouldn't dare to compare ourselves against the rich and imposing White Dragon City."

"My White Dragon City is determined to win this White Dragon Jade Dowel. If you want to compete, then my White Dragon City will accompany you to the end." Bai Dong coldly laughed and waved his hand. "8,000,000."

The Heavenly Dipper Sword Faction's Chen Kun frowned at the new price.

"Haha. If the White Dragon City has such confidence, then my Earthen Way Sect will give you another push." The yellow-robed elder showed a mischievous smile and said, "9,000,000. If your White Dragon City can get over that price, then we'll give up on the White Dragon Jade Dowel."

"9,000,000..."

A massive sigh exploded in the auction house. It's no wonder why these guys were hailed as the three strongest forces within a thousand miles of the White Dragon Hillock. To people like themselves, these prices like those meant nothing more but words.

They remembered that a year ago, a Quasi-Deity Tier Spiritual Art had wound up in this auction house. Back then, it sold for about 10,000,000 Spirit Coins. And now, this White Dragon Jade Dowel will soon reach 10,000,000, and no one even knew how to use it.

"That god damned Huang Tu, old demon." Bai Dong sent another vicious glare towards the yellow-robed old man and gnashed his teeth. Even though White Dragon City had some inside connections, 10,000,000 Spirit Coins wasn't cheap for them, either. But, if they wanted the White Dragon Jade Dowel, then they had to match the price. And Bai Dong's father had already given the order — they were to get that White Dragon Jade Dowel at any cost.

"10,000,000!"

Bai Dong stood up and barked. The audience immediately sucked in a cold lungful of air. Did White Dragon City have to act as if their life depended on it? Why did they have to spend 10,000,000 Spirit Coins to buy an object that no one even knew how to use?

10,000,000 Spirit Coins should be worth half a year's revenue for White Dragon City, right?

"How generous." Guo Xiong also smacked his lips. He was surprised that White Dragon City was willing to hand over such wealth.

Mu Chen also nodded. 10,000,000 Spirit Coins. Even Mu Territory's yearly revenue could never reach such a number.

When Bai Dong smashed the sky high price of 10,000,000 down. Even the Heavenly Dipper Sword Faction and the Earthen Way

Sect seemed to have their fires put out. This price was already at their limits. The most important thing was whether or not they could match White Dragon City's determination. This made them realize that it was useless, even if they continued to compete at their limits.

Bi Sheng stood on stage with his thin-eyed smile, watching the show play out. He waited briefly, until he was sure that no one else was willing to raise the price. Then, he raised the auction gavel, made the last three calls, and heavily brought down the gavel.

When the auction gavel landed, the crowd knew that this White Dragon Jade Dowel had landed in the hands of White Dragon City.

"Ah, ah. The Young City Lord has quite the resolution. I hope this Spirit Treasury really turns out to be a Sovereign Spirit Treasury. Otherwise, you've really taken a huge loss this time." The Heavenly Dipper Sword Faction's Chen Kun stood up and turned to smile at Bai Dong's party of two. Then, he led his own party straight out of the hall.

"Haha. It looks like White Dragon City has really paid with their blood. I hope my Earthen Way Sect will be able to pick a few scraps out of the mess. I suppose we'll take our leave." The Earthen Way Sect's yellow-robed old man gave Bai Dong a squinty smile, waved, and led his party out.

Bai Dong gave the evil-eye to their retreating backs and gnashed his teeth. "Be cocky all you want. There'll be a time when you will cry."

"Let's go."

Su Xuan rose, called to Mu Chen and the others, and headed outside the hall. Behind them, Bai Dong longed after that graceful and nimble figure of hers. He felt like there was a blazing fireball in his heart. This sweet-tempered and cute little girl... would this flower pale and lose her color once he put himself on top?

But, when his insatiable eyes landed on Su Xuan's lovely body, he suddenly sensed someone shoot a razor-sharp killing intent in his direction. He slightly turned his head and saw Mu Chen, standing behind Su Xuan, staring back at him with unsympathetic eyes. That icy expression chilled his heart.

Bai Dong started to feel rather uncomfortable under Mu Chen's glare. His own expression dimmed, and the corner of this mouth lifted into a cruel smile. He lifted a hand and made a light slashing motion towards Mu Chen's neck.

Mu Chen saw the motion, but his expression was still apathetic. Then, he turned away. Completely ignored Bai Dong.

Bai Dong turned green when saw that Mu Chen had completely disregarded his threat. He leaned his back and spoke to the grey-robed elder in a dim voice, "Elder Qiu, run a background check on those guys. I'd like to find out where this trash came from, for them to be daring enough to go against me inside this White Dragon City."

The grey-robed elder gave a slight nod. Those strangers didn't look like a party of adventurers. Not only that, they were quite powerful. Indeed, he'd need to do some research on their origins, in order to be on the safe side.

Bai Dong waved his sleeve and left the auction house through the opposite door. His expression was incomparably dark. He was going to make those guys understand just how stupid they were to provoke him within the walls of his White Dragon City.

Chapter 231 – Bai Xuan

The evening colors slowly advanced little by little, at last blanketing the enormous White Dragon City. But even though night was here, it couldn't suppress the liveliness of the city. The sounds of people bubbled up into the skies. Even from far away, others could still feel the flourishing city.

White Dragon City was especially lively today. The cause was the piece of news that'd recently been released from the auction house at noon. It was regarding the Sovereign Spirit Treasury.

A Sovereign Spirit Treasury.

Those few words alone were enough to redden the eyes of many. Everyone clearly understood the weight those words held.

Sovereign, a name meant for the true experts of this Great Thousand World. Only existences of that level could qualify to become the Lord of a Continent. Only people like them possess the qualifications to gain such authority.

Although Heavenly Fusion Stage experts were also very powerful, they were still a far cry from gaining control of an entire continent, or even making others worship them.

As for the Spirit Treasuries left behind by Sovereign level experts, those were, also, clearly incomparable to Heavenly Fusion Stage experts. If someone blindly stumbled upon a Sovereign's inheritance, they'd gain god-like aid on their cultivation path. They would break away from the ordinary.

Half the reason for the White Dragon Hillock's fame was due to the White Dragon Sovereign who had, once upon a time, fallen in this place.

People flocked here in droves in order to search for the Spirit Treasury that he'd left behind. But no one was able to find it in the past few hundred years. And, at long last, there was finally some

news of this Sovereign Spirit Treasury. It didn't matter how much of this news was actually true. It was enough to make a lot of eyes turn red.

The entire White Dragon Hillock would be shaken by this news.

...

Mu Chen sat in a room in one of White Dragon City's Cultivating Pavilions. His attention was currently focused on the object in his hands — a rusty metal sphere roughly the size of a dragon's eye. The surface of the sphere was decorated with tiny, cryptic patterns.

This was the 'Spiritual Array Seed' that Su Ling'er had bought for him in the auction house, earlier today. Only a Spiritual Array Master could study this; therefore, Su Ling'er had given it to Mu Chen.

Mu Chen was clearly interested in it, as well. Forging a 'Spiritual Array Seed' of this level required a frightening amount of control. It was basically impossible for an ordinary Spiritual Array Master to forge it. Not even for Mu Chen.

"The Spiritual Array carved onto this 'Spiritual Array Seed' certainly isn't of a low rank."

Mu Chen carefully studied the 'Spiritual Array Seed' for half an hour before looking away with a grave expression. Based on those vague patterns, he could tell that this Spiritual Array was at least a Rank 4. It probably wasn't any weaker than his Butchering Demonic Lotus Spiritual Array. But, of course, Mu Chen's current Butchering Demonic Lotus Spiritual Array wasn't the complete one.

His current attainments in Spiritual Arrays had already reached the level of a Rank 3 Spiritual Array Master. If he entered into the Heart Array state, he could even come in contact with Rank 4 Spiritual Arrays. Usually, a Rank 3 Spiritual Array Master could

form a maximum of 99 Spiritual Seals. Once that number reached 100, they'd qualify to be a Rank 4 Spiritual Array Master.

And the portion of the Butchering Demonic Lotus Spiritual Array that Mu Chen could set was exactly 100 Spiritual Seals. He just happened to land in the latter category.

Of course, with Mu Chen's current strength, he'd have to exert all his energy, just like when he'd faced Li Xuantong. He'd even have to use the energy he shared with the Nine Netherbird, as well as the Heart Array State. Only then could he successfully form those 100 Spiritual Seals and set up the Butchering Demonic Lotus Spiritual Array.

Mu Chen estimated that if he wanted to be able to set up the Butchering Demonic Lotus Spiritual Array as easily as he could set up a Rank 3 Spiritual Array, then he'd probably have to wait until he reached the Heavenly Fusion Stage Late Phase. Only after that would he be able to do it without needing to exert all his energy.

"In order to activate this Spiritual Array Seed, I'll need to thoroughly understand the Spiritual Array carved into it..."

Mu Chen muttered to himself. Generally speaking, this Spiritual Array Seed would only be useful in the hands of a Spiritual Array Master. Even if a regular person got their hands on it, they wouldn't be able to activate it without understanding the circulating trajectory of the Spiritual Array. If they recklessly injected Spiritual Energy into it, then the Spiritual Array Seed would explode and they'd only end up hurting themselves.

It wasn't a simple task to thoroughly understand the circulating trajectory, even for a Spiritual Array Master.

"It looks like I'll have to take it slow."

Mu Chen held onto the rusty Spiritual Array Seed and slowly closed his eyes. His mind gradually calmed, until he was as tranquil as a still pond. A sense of brightness slowly lit up and spread

throughout his heart. This was the thorough sensing ability of the Heart Array State.

Mu Chen entered the Heart Array State and his mind slowly enveloped the Spiritual Array Seed that was resting in his palm. Traces of fine Spiritual Energy quietly drilled in. Then, he started to carefully explore the complicated Spiritual Array that was carved onto the seed.

This exploration process was extremely complicated. However, Mu Chen already had prepared himself for that. He calmed himself and began exploring it, bit by bit.

…

White Dragon City, City Lord's Mansion

In the depths of the mansion, Bai Dong and the grey-robed elder stood in a dimly lit study room. There was a table before them, and behind it was a white-haired, middle-aged man. This man was currently fixing his eyes on the White Dragon Jade Dowel that was flickering with Spiritual Energy pressure.

"This White Dragon Jade Dowel was left behind by the White Dragon Sovereign. It seems like there wasn't any mistake with our intelligence." The middle-aged man said. He lightly smiled as he held onto the White Dragon Jade Dowel.

Hearing his words, Bai Dong and the grey-robed elder released lungs full of stale air.

"Father, this newly emerging Spirit Treasury should be the one left behind by the White Dragon Sovereign, right?" Bai Dong asked in low voice.

"That should be correct." The man who Bai Dong had called "father" was Bai Xuan, White Dragon City's City Lord, of course. He was the overlord-like figure for the area within a thousand li [1. 1 li = 500m] of the White Dragon Hillock.

"White Dragon Sovereign. Did that old fart really think he could

hide the Spirit Treasury forever? I built this White Dragon City and searched for decades, all the while waiting for this day." Bai Xuan laughed indifferently. A dense, cold, and brilliant flight flickered in his eyes.

"As long as we find that supreme treasure, our mission is complete. When that happens, we'll leave this damned place and go back."

"Father, the Heavenly Dipper Sword Faction and the Earthen Way Sect have also sent their people over. Furthermore, once the news spreads, there might be reinforcements." said Bai Dong.

"Heavenly Dipper Sword Faction, Earthen Way Sect... Haha, just a bunch of small figures. When our Demonic Dragon Palace ruled the Northern Heavens Continent, forces like them could be erased with just the wave of a hand." Bai Xuan's eyes flickered with a chilling light. "If it hadn't been for those Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy bastards, how could our Demonic Dragon Palace land in this situation? Back then, if that White Dragon Sovereign hadn't stolen our supreme treasure and rebelled, and if it hadn't been for those old farts of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, that academy wouldn't have had a chance to rule the Northern Heavens Continent!"

"Hmph, but it doesn't matter. Before long, our Demonic Dragon Palace will rise again. When that day comes, we'll definitely uproot the entire Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy!"

The grey-robed elder's eyes flickered. "City Lord, there was a group of youths who recently arrived in the White Dragon City. They aren't very old, but they're extremely powerful. I secretly investigated and learned that they're from the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy."

"Oh?" Bai Dong's brows frowned. Then he laughed nastily. "So they're from the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. No wonder they were so arrogant."

“From the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy?” Bai Xuan’s brows knitted as he carried on, “Could they be here for the Sovereign Spirit Treasury, as well? Could the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy know about what was hidden? That’s impossible!”

“It doesn’t seem like it. Otherwise, they wouldn’t have sent such a small party.”

The grey-robed elder shook his head and continued, “Among them, there’s a white-dressed girl who’s the Rank 3 of the Heavenly Ranking, Su Xuan. She’s probably at the Heavenly Transform Stage Middle Phase, extremely powerful. Aside from her, there’s Guo Xiong and Li Qing, also ranked in the top 30 of the Heavenly Ranking. The other two were only Heavenly Fusion Stages — ordinary and nothing to fear.”

Based on the grey-robed elder’s words, you could tell that he was very familiar with the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.

“Heavenly Transform Stage Middle Phase…” Bai Xuan held the White Dragon Jade Dowel. The Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy definitely has their methods of nurturing students. They already possessed such frightful power at such tender ages.

“Father, what should we do? Those people from Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy actually dared to step into our territory! We definitely can’t let them go. Furthermore, if they relay the news back to Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy and invite genuine experts to reinforce them, the situation could turn extremely unfavorable for us. Who knows if our preparations all these years will turn out to be in vain?” Bai Dong licked his lips. His voice was sinister; however, his eyes were filled with desire.

The grey-robed elder nodded to Bai Dong’s words. “What Young City Lord said isn’t wrong. Those students from the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy are an unstable factor.”

Bai Xuan’s eyes narrowed. “That Su Xuan isn’t weak. If we force

them, she might slip away. If that happens, we'd be inviting even greater trouble."

"City Lord, among that group of five, the girl with the Heavenly Fusion Stage Late Phase cultivation is Su Xuan's biological sister. If we can capture her, Su Xuan will definitely refrain from shooting at the rat for fear of breaking the vases. Won't they be in our grasp?" The grey-robed elder said in a low voice.

Bai Xuan lightly smiled and nodded to his words. He heavily placed the White Dragon Jade Dowel on the table and said in solemn voice.

"Then let's get rid of all those unstable factors. Remember, don't take any actions within White Dragon City, so as to avoid attracting the attention of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy."

Bai Xuan smiled as he revealed his white teeth and a chilling aura.

"Wait until they exit White Dragon City, then send out the Demonic Dragon Guards to get rid of them. Anyways, there have been quite a number of Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy students who've died by our hands, the hands of the Demonic Dragon Palace..."

Chapter 232 – White Dragon Hillock

Early the next day, Su Xuan's party left White Dragon City for the White Dragon Hillock. Even though White Dragon City was the largest city in the vicinity of the White Dragon Hillock, it was still located some distance away to avoid commotions caused by the local Spiritual Beasts. Therefore, Mu Chen's party had to quickly set upon their journey.

It was only after they left did they realize just how huge an impact the news made — the news that this Spirit Treasury was actually a Sovereign Spirit Treasury.

The wide road to the White Dragon Hillock was jammed with an astounding number of people. So much that even the air was periodically filled with figures that flashed overhead. Everyone was rushing in one direction — towards the White Dragon Hillock, as well.

Mu Chen's group felt helpless at this scene. They originally wanted to quietly explore; they never expected there to be such massive levels of activity.

"We should hurry to the White Dragon Hillock and find somewhere to set up camp, before nightfall. Otherwise, if we move around recklessly, we'll easily attract the attention of the Spiritual Beasts." Su Xuan said with a light voice.

Mu Chen and the others nodded at her words. Shortly after, their figures moved and streaked across the horizon.

As they rushed towards the White Dragon Hillock, they overlooked something. Some distance behind them, a dark gaze had locked onto them.

Mu Chen's party didn't rest at all on the trip; so, by the time dusk arrived, they could see the edge of the White Dragon Hillock.

It was a continuous mountain range with peaks of different

heights. Among them was a ten thousand foot peak that soared into the heavens, piercing through the cloud layer and the edge of the sky. From time to time, roars of beasts would resonate throughout the air, stirring the Spiritual Energy in the heavens and earth.

However, even such a towering mountain range couldn't conceal the baleful aura rising from the earth. This aura was left behind from the earth-shaking battle that took place a few hundred years ago. Countless experts had fallen and turned into skeletons.

"It's truly worthy of being a place that a Sovereign expert had once fallen." Mu Chen's group stood on the peak of a distant mountain and sighed at the cruel aura fluctuating throughout the White Dragon Hillock.

"The emerging Spirit Treasury happens to be located in the depths of the White Dragon Hillock. That area is filled with so many Spiritual Beasts that there might also be quite a few Heaven Rank Spiritual Beasts. Of course, we'll also have to take note of other adventurer groups who've come to the White Dragon Hillock seeking treasure. Those people aren't going to be easy to deal with. Furthermore, they'll be extremely ruthless. If we end up offending them, they won't bother about our origins and definitely won't show any mercy for the sake of their interests." Su Xuan stared at the White Dragon Hillock that was streaming with a baleful aura. This wasn't a good place.

"Therefore, everyone has to work as one during this trip to the White Dragon Hillock. No one is to act on their own." Su Xuan said as she directed her line of sight towards Su Ling'er. Her charming eyes stared and continued, "Understood?"

Su Ling'er pouted. Was that directed at her? Was she really that unreliable?

The other three couldn't help smiling from the side.

"Let's move out. We'll search for a safe place to set up camp in

the White Dragon Hillock." Su Xuan waved her jade-like hands. Then, her figure took the initiative and shot away, heading directly towards the baleful White Dragon Hillock. Mu Chen and the other three followed closely behind.

When they entered the White Dragon Hillock, they instantly felt a surge of ice-cold air shroud them. This was thanks to the baleful aura of the White Dragon Hillock. If they allowed this to enter their bodies, it'd corrode them. Therefore, when parties entered this area, they usually had to circulate their Spiritual Energy to prevent the baleful aura from invading their bodies.

Mu Chen's group quickly flew over the White Dragon Hillock, encountering many adventurer parties along the way. When those blood-lusting adventurer groups saw their party, their eyes instantly lit up. Their gazes couldn't help moving all over Su Xuan, Su Ling'er, and Li Qing.

These people rarely ever saw such beautiful girls. Now that they encountered one, their hearts naturally itched.

But, even though their hearts itched, none of them were blind. Especially the leaders of their groups. They all stared at Su Xuan and her party in fear, with eyes on full guard. They barked, warning their members to keep their eyes peeled and avoid offending this party.

And because of that, their party didn't meet any trouble, even though Su Xuan and her companions were quite eye-catching. In addition, they were still in the outer borders of the White Dragon Hillock, so there were very few powerful Spiritual Beasts. Therefore, by the time night fell, they managed to find a good campsite.

They laid out their small camp in the middle of the desolate forest. The bonfire's flames soared and dispersed a faint light into the darkness.

The bonfire illuminated Su Xuan's gentle and charming face. She

smiled and said, “Tonight, Guo Xiong is on guard duty. Remember not to let your guard down. Danger could appear at any time in a place like this.”

Mu Chen and the others nodded. On their journey here, they’d already noticed a few adventurer parties with decent strength. Those parties still couldn’t compete with theirs, even at their peak strength, but those parties had greater numbers. Furthermore, they were the ruthless-types who were used to blood. If there was a conflict, things could get troublesome.

After Su Xuan finished her instructions, she entered a tent with Su Ling’er. Mu Chen and Guo Xiong made some light conversation, before Mu Chen returned to his tent, as well. Mu Chen continued studying the Spiritual Array Seed. With just a little more time, he should be able to grasp the seed’s method of use.

As the bonfire flared, the small camp gradually quieted down. On a small hill a distance away, the shadow of a group appeared like a specter in the night.

Bai Dong stood at the front of that group, dressed in white, and coldly smiling at the scene before him. His tone was cold has he asked, “Elder Qiu, is everything ready?”

“All preparations are complete.” The one named Elder Qiu spoke from behind him.

“Then, move out. Act according to the plan. Don't hurt my beauties.” Bai Dong licked his lips as the lust soared within his eyes.

“Yes!”

The group behind him responded with deep and low voices. Then, there were a few sonic booms as they shot out into the night like spectres.

Bai Dong stood on the hill, staring ahead with his lustful expression. He smiled and said, “Northern Heavens Spiritual

Academy. Hmph! There have been no less than thirty Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy students who've died in the hands of our Demonic Dragon Guards. Now, it seems a few more lives will be added to that number."

"Let's see how you run this time!"

In the quiet camp, Guo Xiong sat cross-legged, periodically glancing at the dark forest with alert eyes. He tightly gripped a long, black blade. Spiritual energy surged around him.

"Mhm?"

Suddenly, Guo Xiong's eyes focused on something. His majestic Spiritual Energy burst out in an instant. With a quick flex of his fingers, the black longsword sharply hacked downwards.

Daaaang!

The black longsword cut downwards, and the sounds of metal on metal resounded as a black spear split in two.

"Who's there?!"

Guo Xiong instantly stood up and barked towards the dark forest.

The tents instantly opened as Su Xuan, Su Ling'er, Li Qing, and Mu Chen quickly flew out. The four of them had just entered their cultivating states, but had instantly awoke when they heard the commotion.

"Ambush! Be careful!" Guo Xiong saw Su Xuan and the others emerging and immediately shouted.

Shiiinnnngggg! Shhhiiinnnngggg!

As his voice landed, several black and sharp rays shot out from the forest. Spears containing majestic Spiritual Energy rained on their camp from all directions.

"Hmph!"

A cold aura flashed through Su Xuan's eyes. Her figure flashed

away. Her jade-like hands flicked and surges of Spiritual Energy swept out, turning into a Spiritual Energy whirlpool a few dozen feet wide.

Chhhhhh! Chhhhhh!

The black spears flew into the Spiritual Energy whirlpool and were destroyed.

“Which sneaky bunch are you? You don’t even have the guts to show yourselves?!”

Su Xuan’s charming eyes coldly looked into the dark forest. Then, her figure moved. She turned into a streak of light as Spiritual Energy tore apart the darkness, blasting over it without mercy.

Bang! Bang!

Her aura boiled over the forest, destroying it. Su Xuan moved again and disappeared into the darkness. She had to get rid of these mice. Otherwise, they wouldn’t be able to have any peace.

Mu Chen and the others watched Su Xuan give chase and moved themselves to tightly guard the camp. Su Xuan was a Heavenly Transform Stage Middle Phase; those who wanted to harm her wouldn’t have an easy time of doing so.

Boom!

They turned towards the front, when several Spiritual Energy Ripples suddenly emanated through the air. Within these Spiritual Ripples were actually two Heavenly Transform Stage Initial Phases!

Mu Chen and the others changed their expressions when they sensed those Spiritual Energy ripples. Two Heavenly Transform Stage Initial Phase experts? Just who was this enemy? For them to actually be able to bring out such formations!

“We have to go help her!” Li Qing’s face was frosty. She growled

and flew out. Guo Xiong saw her go and quickly moved to follow. But, before he left, he said to Mu Chen and Su Ling'er, "The two of you will hide here, for now. We'll return as soon as we take care of those guys!"

Rustle!

The moment his voice landed, Guo Xiong and Li Qing flashed away through the dark forest, quickly rushing towards the origins of those Spiritual Energies.

Mu Chen took note of the situation and couldn't help furrowing his brows. Even though their party was rather small, they were still quite strong. Who actually dared to move against them?

Based on their formations, their enemy shouldn't be an ordinary force.

"Mu Chen, what should we do now?" Su Ling'er watched Su Xuan and the others give chase, then moved closer to Mu Chen.

"Don't panic. We'll quietly wait for their return. They shouldn't have gone too far; they should return soon." said Mu Chen.

Su Ling'er nodded. She couldn't help pulling on the hem of Mu Chen's clothes with her small hands. In the White Dragon Hillock, danger came layer upon layer. While Su Xuan wasn't around, she could only rely on Mu Chen.

Mu Chen's body suddenly tensed as his keen eyes scrutinized their surroundings. He circulated his Spiritual Energy, preparing to deal with any situation that arose.

Shiiiinnng!

As Mu Chen swept his eyes around, a sudden and urgent break of wind resounded in his ears. A sharp gale tore through the air, bringing an ear-piercing sound.

Mu Chen slightly narrowed his eyes, and hugged Su Ling'er's slim waist with a turn of his hand. The tip of his foot tapped the

ground and his figure flew several dozen feet in the air.

Bang!

A black spear as thick as an arm mercilessly impaled the place where the two of them had been standing moments before. The spear had penetrated half a meter into the ground and vibrated with a buzzing noise.

Mu Chen studied the black spear with a chill in his heart. He raised his head. Only the fine sounds of the wind whistled through his ears. Four figures appeared in the huge tree in front of them. Four chilling gazes fixed onto them, filled with baleful aura.

“Four Heavenly Fusion Stage Late Phases?”

Mu Chen’s gaze eyes swept over the four figures and he felt a jolt in his heart. Which force was this? To actually bring out such experts to deal with them...

Mu Chen glanced in the direction that Su Xuan and the others and disappeared in, and his heart inevitably sank. Was all of that was just to lure the tigers from its mountain?

The other party seemed to be targeting the two of them!

Chapter 233 – Night Attack

It was night. The four figures stood like spectres in the huge tree. Their bodies were hidden from head to toe in black robes — even their faces couldn't be seen. The only parts of their bodies that were exposed were their eyes, which were filled with baleful aura.

Frightening Spiritual Energy ripples fluctuated around the four of them. Based on those levels, all of these people had reached the Heavenly Fusion Stage Late Phase!

Mu Chen narrowed his eyes at their formation. If you put them in with any of those previous adventurer parties, they'd definitely take the lead position. So why had four of them suddenly appeared?

They hadn't provoked any powerful forces along their journey, so why was trouble knocking on their door?

"Who are you?!" Mu Chen's voice was solemn as he coldly growled. If he'd been facing just a single Heavenly Fusion Stage Late Phase opponent, he could've defeated them without much effort. But there were four of them. Furthermore, from the looks of it, those four were highly experienced. The baleful aura in their eyes had obviously been earned through long years of knowing massacre. They were completely different from the Heavenly Fusion Stage Late Phase upperclassmen of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy!

However, those four black shadows acted as though they hadn't heard Mu Chen. On the other hand, the baleful aura within their eyes grew even denser.

Mu Chen's and Su Ling'er's hearts sank at seeing their formation. Those guys were excellently trained, not an ordinary adventurer party.

"Kill them!"

An ice-cold sound suddenly came from the mouth of a black shadow. Then, the four of them exploded in motion. With a flex of their fingers, black spears materialised in their hands. Their Spiritual Energies surged, melting into multitudes of illusionary spears that covered the skies and the earth, enveloping the two of them.

Mu Chen's expression changed at the straightforward actions of the four shadows. He formed a claw, condensing with dark light. The Nine-layered Pagoda surfaced in his palm, exploding with a downward force.

Dang! Dannng!

Numerous spears hit the Nine-layered Pagoda, but only caused it to shake a little. The surface of the pagoda wasn't damaged in the slightest.

Rustle!

But, the four of them weren't the gentle and kind types; the moment they saw Mu Chen's impenetrable defense, two of them changed direction. The spears made a detour around Mu Chen and shot towards Su Ling'er, who was being protected behind him.

Su Ling'er responded to the situation by hastily putting her jade-like hands on the long fire-red whip at her waist. With a shake of her jade-like hand, the whip whistled out like a fiery python. It carried surges of Spiritual Energy and collided with the two spears.

Bang! Bannng!

A berzerk Spiritual Energy emanated from the collision, toppling the large trees in the vicinity. The two spectre-shadows skimmed forward, pressing closer to Su Ling'er. The tips of those spears shined with a chilling light and were aimed at Su Ling'ers vitals.

Faced with two Heavenly Fusion Stage Late Phases, Su Ling'er had instantly landed herself in a very disadvantageous position. It was even more dangerous when you compared the ruthlessness of

their attacks against her own. Her delicate face turned a little pale.

Shhhhuuuu!

Two chilling spears shot forward and penetrated the defense that Su Ling'er had set up with her fire-red whip. The spears shot towards her shoulder at lightning speed, bringing a strong and sharp gale.

Su Ling'er's enthusiasm had declined as she faced those fearful attacks. She quickly stepped back, then jumped as she realized that she'd already backed up into the trunk of a tree. Her charming face turn exceptionally pale.

Daaang!

However, just as the spear was about to hit Su Ling'er, the Nine-layered Pagoda descended from the sky and enveloped her.

Daang!

The black spears that had flown with their frightening Spiritual Energy ripples heavily collided with the pagoda; however, they were dispersed by the rippling layers of dark light.

The pagoda made of dark light rapidly shrank. A figure flew up to Su Ling'er and pulled her into his embrace by her slender waist. Then, the figure fled into the dark forest, like a cunning rabbit.

"Chase them down!"

When the four figures realised what'd happened, they growled and quickly gave chase.

Mu Chen held onto Su Ling'er as he flashed through the forest. He lowered his head, glanced at the slightly pale and shaking young girl as he asked, "Are you alright?"

Su Ling'er shook her head and replied, "Thank you. What should we do now?"

Their opponents were four Heavenly Fusion Stage Late Phase experts. Between the two of them, Su Ling'er was also a Heavenly

Fusion Stage Late Phase, but she wasn't very experienced in combat. She probably couldn't even defeat one of the four. Meanwhile, Mu Chen had quite a few cards up his sleeve, but he knew he wouldn't have time to prepare them; their opponents weren't looking for a fair and honorable fight.

Their situation was extremely unfavourable.

"Can we last until Big Sister and the others find us?" Su Ling'er asked in a low voice. If Su Xuan and the rest were with them, they wouldn't have to fear those four.

"Our opponents are very experienced. Their target is clear. First, they lured your sister and the others so that they could easily deal with us. They probably planned to capture us first, then restrain your sister and the others." Mu Chen's deep reply came as he continued to flash through the forest, like a hunting leopard.

"If I take you with me, they'll probably catch up soon."

Su Ling'er showed an anxious expression at Mu Chen's words. "What should we do?"

"I'm going to put you down, first." Mu Chen cautiously looked behind them. Four figures were rapidly catching up.

"Ah?" Su Ling'er looked confused. Her delicate face instantly turned as white as snow and her beautiful eyes surged with moisture. She grabbed Mu Chen's clothes, "Mu Chen, you bastard! Fine! Put me down now, I don't need you to save me!"

Mu Chen didn't know whether to laugh or cry at her expression. He helplessly replied, "What are you thinking? If I take you with me, they're going to overtake us sooner or later. The only thing I can do is hide you somewhere, while I lure them away. After that, you need to find your sister and the others as soon as possible."

Su Ling'er's delicate face turned red; however, she still couldn't care about anything else as she anxiously said, "No, it's too dangerous for you to lure them all by yourself."

She'd just witnessed the strength and intimidation of those four. Their bloodlust was surging and their methods were ruthless. You couldn't get that way just by sparring with the upperclassmen of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.

"I know what I'm doing."

Mu Chen shook his head with an unquestionable tone in his voice. His figure continued to flit across the forest. With a pulling motion of his palm, he drew out some sort of green leaf from among the underbrush. Then, he quickly ground the leaves and sprinkled the peculiar-smelling juices over Su Ling'er.

"These juices will conceal your scent. Later, when I leave you somewhere, you'll need to hide yourself and suppress your Spiritual Energy. That way, they won't be able to find you." Mu Chen explained as he finished what he was doing.

Su Ling'er dazedly watched Mu Chen complete the task with an extremely proficient technique. She slightly raised her head and saw Mu Chen's handsome face under the shine of moonlight. However, the current Mu Chen was filled with a cold intent, replacing his usual gentleness. The sharpness was like a polished longsword, quietly hiding its edge within its scabbard.

"Mu Chen, this is a Middle Rank Spiritual Artifact that I exchanged at the Spiritual Value Hall. You should use it." Su Ling'er brought out a cyan longsword. A vague, but piercingly sharp sword aura emanated from it.

Mu Chen nodded. He'd never used a Spiritual Artifact before, but one had suddenly appeared before his eyes. At least he could use it to increase his fighting strength by a bit.

"Be careful."

Mu Chen's speed abruptly increased. With a turn of his body, he leaned slightly. The instant he had entered the darkness, he threw Su Ling'er from his arms.

Su Ling'er twisted her body in mid-air and quietly landed in a large tree. Then, she concealed herself within the tree's dense foliage. She also quickly suppressed the Spiritual Energy circulating in her body.

She nervously directed her line of sight downwards. Soon, four spectre-like shadows bypassed her in their pursuit. When they arrived in the area, their bodies slightly paused and their eyes swept the area. Then, they resumed their pursuit in the direction that Mu Chen had gone.

As they distanced themselves, Su Ling'er faintly heard a deep and low voice that sounded on the wind. "Quick, we're running out of time. We have to get rid of those two as soon as possible!"

Su Ling'er didn't immediately leap down from the huge tree; instead, she remained among the leaves for a period of time. She knew that Mu Chen had placed himself in great danger just to get her to safety. She couldn't be reckless and cause Mu Chen's plan to fail.

"Mu Chen, you have to be careful!"

Su Ling'er's small fists were tightly clenched as her charming eyes looked in the direction that Mu Chen and those four specter-like shadows had disappeared in. Her eyes were filled with nervousness and worry.

Rustle!

She waited for quite a while more. Once she was sure that everything had calmed down, she leapt vigorously from the tree. Then, she rapidly skimmed in the direction of their camp.

"Mu Chen, you have to hold on there. I'll get my sister and the others to rescue you right away!"

Mu Chen's figure moved like a black leopard among the shadows of the gloomy forest as he quietly skimmed through. His palm slowly clutched the cyan longsword at his waist as he looked

behind him. Back there, the sonic booms sounded even more urgent than before. Four bodies were faintly discernible as they gave chase.

“So, they’re here?”

Mu Chen said to himself in a soft voice. Then, he stuck out his tongue and licked his lips. A trace of scarlet light surged forward in his black pupils. He was like a fierce and malicious wolf about to set upon its prey.

“It’s been a long time since I’ve been like this. Since you guys are chasing so hard and unwilling to let go, let’s find out who’s the real hunter!”

An excited curve rose on Mu Chen’s lips. He’d already been suppressing the urge to hunt for quite a long time now. When he was in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, he’d had the identity of a student. But, out here, there was nothing he had to worry about anymore!

Moonlight shined down through the tiny cracks in the forest, forming a chilly arc of light on his handsome face. That side appeared very cold at this moment.

Now, the Blood Calamity of the Spirit Road was going to reveal his fangs.

Chapter 234 – Reverse Killing

Four specter-like shadows quickly and violently flashed through the forest. Their expressions were like those of wolves, fixed upon their target that was a short distance ahead — a lone figure fleeing in a sorry state.

“Let’s see how far you can run!”

The hearts of those four were filled with the sounds of cold laughter as they abruptly increased their speeds. They noticed that their target had started showing frantic movements and clumsier steps — likely out of dread for the inevitable.

If you couldn’t preserve a clear mind under such a brutal pursuit, then the consequences went without saying.

A cruel light passed through the eyes of the four shadows. These Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy students were quite gifted; but, unfortunately for them, talents were useless in life-or-death exchanges. The most important factors that determined the outcome of a life-or-death struggle were merciless needs to kill and keen senses.

Rustle!

Disdain flashed through their hearts as they watched the pitiful figure turn a corner and disappeared from their sights. They immediately followed.

Their figures flew over a cluster of trees.

When they passed through that patch of forest, the shadows from the dense branches and leaves dispersed from their eyes. In that moment, a shadow pounced on them, entering the embrace of one of the four.

The four shadows’ expressions changed at the sudden event. The shadow that’d collided with their comrade was still for a moment, before it sharply snarled. Their comrade reflexively aimed his

black spear towards the person in his arms.

Shiiiiing!

But the instant the spear thrust forward, a sharp longsword mercilessly pierced his heart with a majestic Spiritual Energy. The sword tip penetrated through his back and fresh blood poured down.

The shadow widened his eyes in disbelief at the cold-eyed youth in his embrace. The boy's expression was exceptionally frigid, as though it'd been crafted from ice.

Never, in his wildest imaginations, would he consider this turn of events; the youth who'd only been running from their pursuit had suddenly turned back. The unexpected surprise had broken all of their guards.

Furthermore, this youth's ruthlessness surpassed their own. He'd instantly penetrated the shadow's vitals, severing his life.

"He did that on purpose!"

The shadow's vision gradually turned black, with the youth's indifferent expression as his last living memory. Just a short while ago, this youth had been panicking under their pursuit. But how was that expression from someone that was panicking from running?

So, this youth had been putting up a façade, and made the experienced experts lower their guards. Then, he'd launched his counterattack!

Neat and tidy, without the slightest hint of sloppiness.

"You...!"

Everything happened in an instant. By the time the other three shadows realized what'd happened, Mu Chen's blade had already run itself through their comrade's heart.

The three of them glared with dark eyes filled with rage. The

spears in their hands turned into sharp attacks, enveloping Mu Chen with threats to his vitals. This brat actually dared to kill one of their comrades right before their eyes. How could they possibly let him escape?

Mu Chen faced the three's attacks and pulled out his longsword with a flick of his wrist. His Spiritual Energy circulated. Cyan light glinted off the longsword as he burst forward with a razor-sharp sword energy and light, resisting the numerous spear images.

Shhhuuuuu!

The three of them were well coordinated. A few rays of cold light still managed to break through Mu Chen's defense and flew towards his chest.

Mu Chen dragged the corpse of the shadow that he'd killed back into his arms, and used it as a meat shield.

Chhhhhhh!

The sharp spears pierced through the dead shadow with a majestic Spiritual Energy. The tips of the spears drew thin lines of blood on Mu Chen's chest.

Mu Chen's eyes were cold as he stepped forward. The corpse was heavily tossed to the side, sailing into that black shadow.

A dark malevolence showed itself in the eyes of that shadow.He threw out a fist, which impacted with the flying corpse. A surge of violent Spiritual Energy erupted, badly mutilating the body.

Chhhhhhh!

But the moment the fist struck the corpse and tore it to pieces, cold rays of light flicker within the corpse's chest. The tip of a sword, wrapped in black-coloured Spiritual Energy with black flames throbbing of it tunneled through the corpse's chest and thrust towards the black shadow with lightning speed.

The offence was too quick, violent, and sharp — so much so that

even the black shadow was taken by surprise. That shadow threw out a punch as his Spiritual Energy surged as one could even hear the roar of a dragon within it. The majestic Spiritual Energy had turned into spiritual fist with the shape of a raging dragon and collided with the sharp light that burned with black flames.

BANG!

Black flames swept out as the two heavily collided, quickly igniting the violent gale of Spiritual Energy wrapped around the fist.

Rustle!

The sword light pierced the gale and swung down on the black shadow's wrist as he watched with a shocked expression.

Sword light flashed. Blood splattered. Blood flowed from the places where the five fingers had been severed.

Mu Chen cultivated quite a tyrannical Spiritual Energy. By adding the Middle Rank Spiritual Artifact that Su Ling'er had given him, his offense definitely wasn't something that an ordinary person could withstand.

"Arghhhhhh!"

The black shadow miserably shrieked, mercilessly thrusting the spear in his left hand towards Mu Chen's throat. He was trying to take Mu Chen down with him.

Ding!

But since Mu Chen had already gained the advantage during that exchange, he wasn't willing to risk getting a heavy injury. With a flick of his hand, the longsword flew back. His fingers clamped over the cutting edge of the sword and slanted the blade to the side, just so that it managed to block the spear.

Sparks flew.

Mu Chen borrowed the force of the impact and let himself fly

out, gaining distance. He entered the forest like a bat into the night, disappearing in the blink of an eye. “Damned brat!”

The three shadows looked at the cold corpse in front of them, their eyes were filled with rage. The four of them were Heavenly Fusion Stage Late Phase experts, and had a rich amount of experience under their belts. They never imagined that this barely Heavenly Fusion Stage brat could reverse the situation and put them in such a miserable position.

Not only had they lost a member, but one of the remaining shadows had also lost a hand. Their fighting strength had declined!

“We can’t forgive him!”

The three of them snarled, especially the black shadow that’d lost his hand to Mu Chen. His eyes turned sinister.

The three of them exchanged looks, then flew out at the same time. But this time, their bodies were tense as they circulated their Spiritual Energies to their limits. They were expecting an attack at any moment as they advanced.

That lightning exchange earlier had forced them to understand that even though this youth may be young, he wasn’t the gentle type. Not only did he have vicious eyes, even his offense was fierce. His actions were direct and straightforward, without the slightest bit of sloppiness. He was definitely different from the other Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy students, who were usually low on experience in terms of fighting and killing.

If they still had any contempt for him in their hearts, then they’d probably suffer a defeat tonight.

Mu Chen flashed through the forest, lightly wiping traces of blood from his chest. It was just a flesh wound, nothing much. His reversal of the earlier situation had been extremely successful. It looked like his previous acting had produced quite an effect.

Mu Chen glanced behind himself. Those three should be acting

much more cautious now. But that also meant that they'd slow down their chase, providing him with a little more time.

"Now, let's see who's the true hunter."

Mu Chen muttered as he observed the forest before him. He could vaguely make out the scarlet pupils of several beasts. Those must be the Spiritual Beasts of the White Dragon Hillock.

He watched the scarlet eyes of the beasts residing in the depths of forest, and the corner of his mouth rose into the trace of a smile. He didn't avoid the area; on the contrary, he changed directions and headed towards them.

Night enveloped the forest as three shadows rapidly flashed through it. One in front, while two followed behind — a triangle formation. Their tensed bodies overflowed with Spiritual Energy as they cautiously kept an eye on their surroundings.

"Mm?"

As the three of them moved along, their eyes were suddenly drawn to something. The one in front waved his palm and the three of them landed on a clear patch of ground. Some distance away were two beast corpses that were spilling fresh blood. It was clear that they'd been recently killed.

"Must be the brat."

The black shadow who'd lost his fingers to Mu Chen clenched his teeth and said, "It looks like he was surrounded by Spiritual Beasts. That means he's probably slowed down his pace. We must make use of the opportunity."

"En."

The other two nodded. Then, the three figures flashed away, resuming their chase.

Over the next few minutes, they saw a series of freshly-killed beast corpses. Among the corpses were shreds of cloth — Mu

Chen's clothes.

Based on these signs, Mu Chen must have encountered more and more Spiritual Beasts. Furthermore, he'd also sensed that the three shadows were already nipping at his heels. The signs showed that he'd quickened his pace a little, so much so that he couldn't afford to clean up the traces of the battles.

After giving chase for another ten minutes, the three shadows stopped, once again, in a clearing. On the ground before them was the corpse of a large golden lion. The Spiritual Beast was clearly dead, with a cyan longsword thoroughly impaled in its large, sinister maw.

"This belongs to the brat."

The three of them stopped next to the huge lion corpse and studied the familiar longsword.

One shadow coldly smiled. "This kid's luck is so bad. He actually ran into a Gold Flame Lion. This beast is as strong as a Heavenly Fusion Stage Middle Phase. Even we'd have to waste a bit of effort to deal with it. No wonder he decided to discard his Spiritual Artifact."

"Roar!"

Suddenly, a deep and low roar resounded from deeper within the forest. Vaguely, ripples of Spiritual Energy were carried over.

"He's encountered another one. Quick, we'll be able to catch up to him this time!" The three of them delightedly exclaimed as they heard the sounds.

"En!"

The three of them nodded. Two of the three were about to give chase, while the last one took two steps over to the corpse to grab the cyan longsword. This was a Middle Rank Spiritual Artifact, a powerful object. It'd be a pity if they left it here.

Bang!

As his fingers closed around the sword's hilt, intending to pull it from the Gold Flame Lion's corpse, in that moment, the corpse exploded. Fresh blood splattered about as a bloodied figure charged out from the fleshy remains. The figure curved two fingers. A gold light rushed forward, bringing an extremely sharp ripple with it. The black shadow watched with a startled expression as it went through his throat.

The black shadow trembled and fell to the ground, his widened eyes filled with disbelief.

The blood-covered figure lowered his head and retrieved the longsword. He slowly raised his head and looked to the figure that'd already stopped moving, then turned around to find the other two shadows watching him in utter shock.

Mu Chen wiped the fresh blood from his face and lightly smiled at the two remaining shadows. From the perspective of the two shadows, that smile was as frightening as a demon's.

They'd been acting so cautiously, but they'd still fallen for the brat's scheme!

His methods were simply impossible to defend against!

"Now, it's your turn."

Mu Chen lightly rapped on the sword blade, making clear and crisp sounds as he did so. He'd already killed two out of the four. The ones left were one crippled, and one whole expert. But their formation itself had been crippled, as well, and it was no longer strong enough to force him to run.

Chapter 235 – None Left

"You damned brat!"

Night covered the forest. The two black shadows ground their teeth as they watched the bloodied Mu Chen eerily smile at them. His eyes were filled with dense bloodlust.

They never imagined that things would turn out like this!

Shouldn't they be able to easily dispatch a Heavenly Fusion Initial Phase brat? How did the situation progress to this point? The four of them were Demonic Dragon Guards with a rich amount of experience under their belts. Who knows how much blood was stained on their hands? But, during tonight's pursuit of this youth, two of them had been slain, and one had been heavily injured.

Even if they'd been sent to take down a Heavenly Transform Stage expert, they wouldn't have paid such a miserable price, right?

"Surprised?"

Mu Chen pick up his cyan longsword. A pitch-black Spiritual Energy flared and formed irregular sword lights at the blade's tip. He smiled. With his entire body drenched in blood, it was a frightening spectacle.

"The number of people I killed on the Spirit Road alone is more than the total you've killed between all of you." Mu Chen smiled and pointed the longsword towards the two as he continued his speech. "Now, shall we end this comedy of a pursuit?"

"Yes, it's about time to end this. We won't give you another chance to flee!"

The two black shadows eerily replied. Then, one shadow ducked left, while the other went right, sealing off Mu Chen's path of retreat. They'd already had a taste of Mu Chen's many tricks

during their earlier pursuit. In order to guard against that, they couldn't be careless and give him another chance. Otherwise, they could fall into his traps at any moment.

"Really?" Mu Chen smiled. He tightened his grip on the longsword as a majestic Spiritual Energy poured out like black smoke and surged towards the sky.

"Kill him!"

The two black shadows went silent as their eyes turned cold. They burst forward simultaneously. The two black spears in their hands were venomous snakes darting from their nests, sweeping towards Mu Chen in a violent gale.

Mu Chen also flew forward in the same instant. The light of the sword surged as the black flames ascended. Even though he faced two attackers, he didn't show the slightest hesitation.

Dang! Daaaang!

As the three of them intertwined, a violent Spiritual Energy burst outwards. Dried leaves swept over the ground and turned into dust. One large tree collapsed after another.

Mu Chen's attacks were ruthless. He'd gone with full force, straight towards the unharmed black shadow. He paid no attention to the one with the crippled hand. It looked like Mu Chen planned to exert all his power to kill the unharmed black shadow.

However, the latter clearly wasn't someone who was easy to deal with. The shadow released his Heavenly Fusion Stage Late Phase strength, without restraint. His attacks were sharp and all aimed at Mu Chen's vitals.

The sword light and spear image whistled through the air. Frightening Spiritual Energies collided and dispersed multiple times.

Dang!

Mu Chen's expression was indifferent as he thrust his sword forward, bringing the surges of Spiritual Energy and flaring black flames with it. The blade was like a black horse, running as fast as lightning towards the black shadow's chest. However, the latter had already swept up his spear to block Mu Chen's attack.

"A Heavenly Fusion Stage Initial Phase wants to fight me head-on? What wishful thinking!" That black shadow coldly smiled.

Mu Chen's expression was as placid as ever as he pulled back the sword and then dived forward, like an eagle. His fingers clenched as he threw out a punch.

Boom!

Spiritual Energies fluctuated. Mu Chen's pitch-black Spiritual Energy was like a storm as it rapidly gathered around his fist. Six Limitless Death Seals seemed to have formed in an instant.

As the six Limitless Death Seal appeared, the natural Spiritual Energies from the forest grew more chaotic. A black-coloured light seal flew out, like a black comet, as it streaked across the night sky towards the black shadow.

Boom!

Cracks appeared in the ground, forming a huge ravine.

Shock appeared in the eyes of the black shadow. He'd sensed a fatal amount of danger from that attack.

"Black Dragon Fiend Spear!"

Spiritual Energy swept out from the body of that black shadow. His hand trembled as the black-coloured spear flew from his hand. The energy went wild, turning into a black dragon a few dozen feet long. It bared its fangs, brandished its claws, and charged.

Bang!

The comet formed from the Limitless Death Seals didn't give the slightest pause as it mercilessly collided with the black light

dragon, causing a huge crash to resound. The black shadow watched as the black comet sailed on like an irresistible force, instantly destroying his black dragon. Even the black spear that'd formed the dragon's core had been sent flying.

Boom!

The comet pierced through the dragon and whistled towards the shadow, as the shadow, himself, watched with an expression of fear plastered all over his face.

"Arghhhh!"

A miserable shriek shook the earth as a huge crater appeared on the ground. In the center of the crater was the black shadow's corpse, now more of an indistinct mess than a human being. He'd died instantly.

Mu Chen's six Limitless Death Seals had been enough to withstand one of Li Xuantong's attacks. Now, the execution of it had instantly killed a Heavenly Fusion Stage Late Phase expert.

"Haaaaaaaa."

Mu Chen also deeply exhaled a deep breath. His aura was slightly sluggish. That attack had drained a lot from him.

Mu Chen stood high up in the air. With a flick of his wrist, the Nine-layered Pagoda appeared in his palm, then flew behind him to block the attack of the remaining black shadow with the crippled arm.

Mu Chen slowly turned around to face the frightened black shadow and lightly smiled, "It seems like you've have chosen the wrong target."

"So, do you still want to resist?"

The black shadow slightly trembled. The eyes that'd been filled with a sinister aura were now filled with fear. Today's events were truly too horrifying to speak of.

“Who are you?! You name wasn’t in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy’s Heavenly Ranking!” the black shadow severely retorted.

When Mu Chen heard that, he furrowed his brows. He coldly stared at the person before him. “I take it that you’re familiar with what goes on in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy? I wonder, who are you?”

The black shadow was shocked. He never thought that his simple remark would raise the suspicions of this youth before him. This fellow was simply too hard to deal with.

“No. It’s impossible to complete tonight’s mission. I can only return and report that we made a mistake in estimating our target’s strength!” The shadow ground his teeth. The black spear in his hand shot towards Mu Chen as the shadow, himself, took the opportunity and flew away.

The pagoda in Mu Chen’s hand expanded and blocked spear like a huge shield. He watched the black shadow escape towards the forest with a blank expression. With a flick of his finger, the Nine-layered Pagoda expanded, again. The first layer exploded with golden lights. A roar sounded as the light turned into a golden dragon that tore through the forest. The black shadow couldn’t dodge in time as the dragon collided with him.

Bang!

A violent shock wave leveled the surrounding trees. That black shadow coughed up fresh blood as his wretched figure flew backwards and landed at Mu Chen’s feet.

Rustle!

The cyan longsword stopped at the shadow’s throat. Mu Chen lightly smiled and said, “Now, will you tell me where you’re from?”

“You must be dreaming, if you think you’re going to get anything

out of me!” The shadow’s eyes were dark as he laughed. “Brat, don’t be complacent. None of you will escape!”

Mu Chen looked uninterested as he drove the longsword through the shadow’s throat. He’d decided that he couldn’t extract any more information from the shadow. In that case, there wasn’t any point in keeping him alive.

“Huu.”

Mu Chen straightforwardly killed the last person, then sat down and panted heavily. He felt a little beaten after the night’s battle of wits and merciless wills.

Rustle!

After he got rid of the last person, a series of sonic booms echoed from the distance. Mu Chen looked up in surprise and clutched the longsword in his hand. But loosened his grip when he realised that it was Su Ling’er.

“Mu Chen!”

Su Ling’er landed on a patch of empty ground and took in Mu Chen’s bloodied state with a single glance. She was instantly startled and her charming face lost its color as she anxiously hurried over to him.

“I’m fine.”

Mu Chen waved his hand towards her.

Su Xuan, Guo Xiong and Li Qing followed after Su Ling’er, their faces were also filled with anxiety. They let out relieved sighs when they confirmed for themselves that Mu Chen was still alive.

They looked at the two corpses with blank expressions, then back at Mu Chen with confusion in their eyes. “You killed these two? What about the other two? Didn’t Ling’er say that there were four?”

“All dead.”

Mu Chen was a little shaky as he stood up. He looked over his own blood-soaked body and gave them a helpless smile.

“All dead?”

Su Xuan, Su Ling’er, Guo Xiong and Li Qing’s faces changed as they looked at Mu Chen in disbelief. “You did this?”

Mu Chen looked around and replied, “Is there anyone else here?”

Su Xuan and the other three were speechless as they watched Mu Chen with strange expressions. According to Su Ling’er, those four should’ve been Heavenly Fusion Stage Late Phase killers with extremely cruel and rich experiences. Su Xuan could’ve killed them straightforwardly, but even Guo Xiong and Li Qing, who were Quasi-Heavenly Transform Stages, would’ve withdrew back. There was no way they could’ve killed the assassins.

But Mu Chen had accomplished it?

“Formidable!” Guo Xiong exclaimed in admiration as he gave Mu Chen a thumbs up. Mu Chen had clearly gained his respect by accomplishing such a feat as only a Heavenly Fusion Stage Initial Phase.

Li Qing’s eyes were also filled with amazement as she looked at Mu Chen.

“Haha, it looks like I truly made the right choice in choosing you as our companion.” Su Xuan sweetly smiled. However, her charming eyes still held a peculiar expression as she looked at Mu Chen.

“Stop teasing me. I only fought for my life, nothing particularly amazing. I was just a little more ruthless than they were.”

Mu Chen shook his head, then asked, “Do you know who they are? Why would they attack us? Such formations probably don’t belong to an ordinary force, right?”

The longsword in Su Xuan’s hands tore open the shirt of a black

shadow's corpse, revealing a tattoo on his chest — a palace carried on the backs of dragons. A baleful aura slowly emanated from it.

Su Xuan stared at that tattoo as a cold light flashed across her eyes.

"They're from the Demonic Dragon Palace."

Chapter 236 – Demonic Dragon Palace

“Demonic Dragon Palace?”

Mu Chen frowned at Su Xuan’s words, as he was unfamiliar with that name. Furthermore, he didn’t remember offending some Demonic Dragon Palace on their way here. Right?

“Are they really from the Demonic Dragon Palace?” Guo Xiong and Li Qing’s faces changed, going cold, “No wonder they had such a ruthless formation. So, it’s them.”

Su Xuan lightly nodded. “The ones who intercepted us earlier were two Heavenly Transform Stages and three Quasi-Heavenly Transform Stages. Not many forces within a thousand miles of the White Dragon Hillock are capable of sending out such a formation.

She smiled at the slightly frowning Mu Chen as she spoke. “You’re new to the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, so it’s not strange that you don’t know about the Demonic Dragon Palace. A few hundred years ago, one powerful force ruled the entire Northern Heavens Continent — the Demonic Dragon Palace.”

“Are they stronger than the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy?” Mu Chen blanked as he considered the inconceivable.

“No. Even though our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy resided on the same continent, we never had any thoughts of ruling. We didn’t meddle in the events that went on. That’s why the Demonic Dragon Palace seized the opportunity to rise, and became the overlord of the Northern Heavens Continent.”

Guo Xiong smiled, “However, the Demonic Dragon Palace wasn’t satisfied, even after they became the overlord of the continent. The Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy at the center of the continent was a thorn in their side. They knew that they could only become true overlords by removing the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. They wanted to use the continent as their

headquarters as they invade and attack other continents."

Mu Chen swept his tongue around his mouth. How ambitious of the Demonic Dragon Palace. Forget about ruling the Northern Heavens Continent, they actually dared to take action against the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.

"As a result, the Demonic Dragon Palace began attacking the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy a few hundred years ago. That battle was truly world-shaking and countless experts fell. The entire continent was embroiled in battle."

Mu Chen seemed shaken. The strength of Demonic Dragon Palace was definitely frightening to be able to rule the entire Northern Heavens Continent. Meanwhile, the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy had contentedly and stably sat at the center of the Northern Heavens Continent for thousands of years. Their foundation was just as deep and unmeasurable.

The collision of such two forces would definitely result in devastating destruction.

"That battle carried on for years. In the end, Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy stood victorious, while the Demonic Dragon Palace withdrew in defeat, their might declined. Those forces that they'd once suppressed retaliating against them. The Demonic Dragon Palace's ruling seat had been utterly shattered."

Su Xuan stared at the corpses and said, "However, a centipede dies but never falls down. Even though the Demonic Dragon Palace was defeated, they weren't destroyed. They're still hiding out on the Northern Heavens Continent, recuperating, while they wait for an opportunity to arrive."

"Over the years, the students of our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy who've gone out for training would often encounter various attacks. Half of those are from the Demonic Dragon Palace."

“Every year, about half of the students who’ve died out on the Northern Heavens Continent were at the hands of the Demonic Dragon Palace.”

Chill gathered on Su Xuan’s sweet-tempered face as she spoke. She clearly, and bitterly, despised the Demonic Dragon Palace.

“Has the academy taken any measures?” Mu Chen asked with furrowed brows.

“You know that nothing is gentle after you leave the borders of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. At the same time, it serves as an experience — the only way you can become a true expert is by experiencing the need to kill for yourself. That’s why they send students out to train. In this world, how could anyone grow stronger without paying a price?”

“Furthermore, our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy’s Mission Hall has a special board — the Bounty Board. All the names on it are well-famed, as many students who’ve left to train have died by their hands. That’s why our academy issues bounties for them. Students who kill those bounty targets will be heavily rewarded.”

“Bounty Board?” Mu Chen was confused. He’d never even heard of this board before. Clearly, only students whose strength have reached a certain level could gain the access to go after the terrible people on the Bounty Board.

“Each target on the Bounty Board is a ruthless figure, so much so that they’re even known within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. All of those missions are extremely dangerous and difficult; that’s why they’re known as the most painful missions of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.”

Guo Xiong stood to the side licking his lips. “What’s engraved in my mind was the event that shook our entire Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Back then, Shen Cangsheng had just come out of his seclusion and took on one of these bounty missions.

Furthermore, the one he'd accepted was a Rank 3 of the Bounty Board, an extreme talent from the Demonic Dragon Palace — Blood Demon Dragon – Yu Yuan."

"Blood Demon Dragon, Yu Yuan..." Mu Chen muttered.

"This Yu Yuan was extremely powerful. Before this, the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy had sent out a party of twenty out for training, including two Heavenly Transform Stage Initial Phase upperclassmen. Even the worst among them was a Heavenly Fusion Stage Late Phase. Such formation is already formidable, but when they encountered Yu Yuan, only one Senior Sister escaped, protected by the others."

"After that, our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy attempted an unsuccessful hunt; two of the hunting party ended up killed instead, increasing Yu Yuan's fame. After that, no one else dared to accept his bounty mission."

Guo Xiong had an expression of admiration. "Until Shen Cangshen came along."

"Shen Cangshen still wasn't Rank 1 back then, only somewhere in the top 10 of the Heavenly Ranking. He often hid away by himself, but, that day, he came out of seclusion and exploded. With his spear, he soared to Rank 1 of the Heavenly Ranking."

"After that, while the student body was in shock, he accepted Yu Yuan's bounty mission. 10 days later, he returned with his spear over his shoulder and Yu Yuan's head on the end of it."

Guo Xiong's eyes boiled with excitement as he recalled the huge shock that'd brought to the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.

"Everyone had been dumbfounded as they raised their heads towards the war god returning with the spear on his shoulder. They were in extreme shock."

Mu Chen looked at Guo Xiong, whose eyes were still boiling and Li Qing, the ice beauty who seemed faraway at the moment. He

could see that this Senior Brother, Shen Cangsheng, who he'd never met before, possessed an extremely high position in the eyes those students.

He was curious. How powerful was this legend-like figure? How strong was he compared to Li Xuantong?

"Shen Cangsheng is indeed a powerful individual," Su Xuan confirmed with a soft voice. "You could think of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy as a gathering place for geniuses. He Yao, Xu Huang, and the others are also fairly outstanding. There are many who've hidden themselves from the public, waiting for the day they amaze the world with a single brilliant feat and become powerful figures soaring to the heavens. Even still, no matter how outstanding they were, they still can't shake the Heavenly Ranking's peak, that majestic war god."

"Most of the targets on the Bounty Board are from the Demonic Dragon Palace. They're the only ones who'd try to kill our students by any means."

Su Xuan looked at Mu Chen, "Now you know about the blood feud between our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy and Demonic Dragon Palace?"

Mu Chen nodded. It seemed that this Demonic Dragon Palace shouldn't be underestimated. The Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy allowed this to happen was for the sake of their students' training, but also possibly because they had no way of pulling up the Demonic Dragon Palace by its roots.

"This time, it seems the Demonic Dragon Palace has noticed us." Su Xuan's charming facial features drew together. "As far as I know, the White Dragon Sovereign who fell here was once a high-ranking member of the Demonic Dragon Palace. However, he betrayed them. It's likely that the Demonic Dragon Palace sent their experts because of the appearance of this Sovereign Spirit Treasury. When the time comes... we'll have to be careful."

Mu Chen, Guo Xiong, Li Qing, and Su Xuan all nodded. They felt the inconvenience. It seemed that this mission wasn't going to be as easy to complete.

"We should move. We'll take advantage of nightfall and the fact that we've just thwarted the Demonic Dragon Palace. Best if we lose them completely." Su Xuan said.

None of them had any objections. They tried to tidy up the area, then headed deeper into the White Dragon Hillocks with increased vigilance.

...

Mu Chen's party headed deeper into the hillocks. Meanwhile, Bai Dong stood in the forest on a faraway slope, his color turning steel-grey.

"Trash, trash! Four pieces of trash! Heavenly Fusion Stage Late Phase strength and they couldn't even dispose of a girl who wasn't even a Heavenly Fusion Stage Late Phase and a Heavenly Fusion Stage Initial Phase boy!

Bai Dong look down at the four black-colored jade tokens in his hand, which was completely shattered. It showed that those four had already been killed.

The grey-robed elder stood next to Bai Dong, his expression bewildered. "How is this possible? How could the two of them kill four Demonic Dragon Guards?"

He was familiar with the strength of the Demonic Dragon Guards. Even he'd have to bide his time if he wanted to deal with the four them together. But now, a boy and a girl, still smelling of their mother's milk, kill them?

Bai Dong was so angry that he crushed the jade shards in the his hand. Then, he looked to the depths of the forest with a sinister look in his eyes.

"Inform my father. It looks like we don't need to worry about

being exposed, anymore. As long as we obtain what's in the Spirit Treasury, we can withdraw from this place. But, before we leave, I want those irksome things exterminated!"

Chapter 237 – Lion Tiger Regiment

Daylight intensified as the vast White Dragon Hillock shedded the shroud of night. Wind abruptly screeched throughout the mountain range. Vaguely, there were shapes of countless figure moving within in the forest. They stormed through like a swarm of locusts, all heading in the same direction — towards the depths of the White Dragon Hillock.

That was where the Sovereign Spirit Treasury would appear!

And in response to the sudden locust swarm of people, the White Dragon Hillock, itself, quickly exploded. Countless angry Spiritual Beasts hissed in anger as they rose to face the intruders. There wasn't even a shred mercy in those hearts and their Spiritual Energies rushed towards the skies as they hissed. For a moment, it felt as if the entire mountain range was trembling.

Ah!

Once in awhile, a mournful or blood-curdling wail would slice through the mountain range — likely belonging to some unlucky fellow who was being torn to pieces by those Spiritual Beasts. At the same time, even more Spiritual Beasts were being exterminated by the rushing mob of experts. Tremendous bodies rolled and writhed in splashes of newly spilled blood, before finally collapsing to the ground with deep rumbles.

Such events were occurring throughout the mountain range. The stench of blood saturated the air.

Shuuuuu!

In the forest, Mu Chen's party of five was swiftly moving along. The White Dragon Hillock currently had a very different air than the one of tranquility from the night before. As night retreated, the numerous experts and other unknown things had started to show themselves. The vigorous Spiritual Energies rose and fell in

violent cycles, showing just how many experts this rumored Sovereign Spirit Treasury had attracted.

Su Xuan's lovely face turned to face four different directions. She'd also noticed the White Dragon Hillock's commotion. She waved a jade-like hand and spoke in a tender voice, "We should increase our pace."

As her voice landed, the five of them sharply increased their speed, turning into five streak of lights that swept past the forest of towering trees.

"Roar!"

However, the moment they crossed a certain patch of forest, a fierce sound carried over from their right. They turned their eyes in that direction, only to see a massive fire-red Spiritual Beast watching them with a sinister gleam in its eyes and a severed limb hanging from its mouth. It was clear that it'd recently devoured a human being. When this animalistic brute saw Mu Chen's party intrude on its territory, it gave a thunderous roar and sprang on them with its body still reeking of blood.

"A Heavenly Fusion Stage Middle Phase Spiritual Beast dares to get in our way," Mu Chen commented upon seeing that. He smiled, flicked his fingers, and the Nine-Layered Pagoda appeared. The headwind sharply increased. In an instant, it transformed into a massive black tower, creating an impression of fearful might, like that of a lofty mountain. Then it cruelly weighed down on the body of blood-red Spiritual Beast.

Boom!

Even the ground crumbled as the Nine-Layered Pagoda ruthlessly descended. The massive blood-red Spiritual Beast exploded with a mournful snarl — it'd been directly crushed to death under the pressure.

A look of surprise passed through the eyes of the other members

of Su Xuan's party. Even though this blood-colored Spiritual Beast only had the strength of a Heavenly Fusion Stage Middle Phase, it'd still had an extremely strong defense. They hadn't expected Mu Chen to take care of it in just one stroke.

"Hmm? Treasure!" Su Ling'er only glanced at the corpse of the blood-red Spiritual Beast before turning her line-of-sight to another spot ahead. Clinging to one of the cliffs of fractured stone and earth was a blood-red zoysia[1. A type of grass.] gently swaying in the breeze. A fragrance dispersed in the air.

"Blood Spirit Zoysia?" Su Ling'er's lovely face instantly lit up. Crafted from the heavens, a wealth of the earth[2. A figurative expression showing just how valuable this treasure is. It is not literally crafted from the heavens.] — such a treasure would undoubtedly be hard-won under any other circumstance. It could have considerable effects on one's cultivation.

Swish.

Her image flashed away and landed on the large cliff. Then, she bent down and plucked the Blood Spirit Zoysia.

Shuuuu!

However, the moment she picked the Blood Spirit Zoysia, a pointed screech rose and resonated. The only thing they saw was a line of frigid light launching towards Su Ling'er as fast as lightning.

"Watch out!" Su Xuan's lovely eyes focused as she pointed a jade finger into the air and tapped. A line of Spiritual Energy raced out, intending to shatter the frigid light that was heading for Su Ling'er.

Guo Xiong And Li Qing simultaneously entered combat mode, eyes coldly watching the direction that the frigid light had come from. They saw human figures flash through the forest. About 20 people quickly emerged and landed on the patch of broken stone.

Each of them had a sword or knife in hand and wore an arrogant expression. Traces of fierce aggression showed in their auras. One look would tell you that they weren't the type to play nice — they were probably one of the stronger adventurer parties.

They were led by two men in their thirties, who looked rather similar to each other. Likely brothers. Their eyes shined with a savage craftiness.

"What do you think you're doing?" Guo Xiong coldly barked as he looked at those unkind fellows.

Mu Chen's eyes were drawn in the same direction, then his brows slightly knitted. This adventurer party wasn't weak. Their two male leads were Quasi-Heavenly Transform Stages. As for the rest, around eight were at the peak of the Heavenly Fusion Stage, while the others were at the Spirit Stage.

You could say that this battle line-up of adventurers was rather formidable.

One of the skinny males in the adventurer party couldn't help running his eyes all over Su Xuan, Su Ling'er, and Li Qing. He chuckled. "Hehe. My friends, I'm afraid we've already had our eyes on this Blood Spirit Zoysia for an entire day. We finally managed to clear out the Spiritual Beasts in this area, but before we could get to it, you slipped behind our backs and picked it, anyway. Isn't that a little too much?"

"This is a heaven-made treasure of the earth. The ones who win it are the ones who deserve it. You guys loitered around for an entire day; that's probably because you couldn't do anything." Su Ling'er's rosy little lips twisted as she mocked them. You could tell that they weren't the savoury types just by looking at them. Only an idiot would believe them.

"You! The little wench wants to die!"

"The little wannabe lady is still young, but she's already so ill-

behaved. Let this older brother teach you a few manners!”

The party hissed in anger. Their aggression started to show in their eyes as they hurled back all sorts of obscenities.

“Get lost!” Mu Chen’s expression was frigid, but he didn’t care to waste any more words on the likes of them.

“What attitude from that kid!”

The adventure party’s leader eyed Mu Chen with a cloudy expression as he slowly replied, “Our Lion Tiger Regiment has been in this White Dragon Hillock for many years; even the three major forces wouldn’t dare to speak to us like that.”

Of course he could sense Su Xuan’s astonishing strength; however, he had more people on his side. In addition, his experts were all experienced in battle. He didn’t think these tender-looking little boys and girls would be able to gain anything if it came to a fight.

“That’s why we’re not from the three major forces,” came Mu Chen’s indifferent remark.

A man with a scarred face and an exceptionally fierce expression sternly shouted, “The fact remains that you dared to caw your little mouth. Do you believe that this uncle will dice you up? A Heavenly Fusion Stage dared to provoke us in our territory?! Reckless idiots!”

Swish!

Mu Chen’s expression turned to ice. No more useless words. His image exploded forward like a Great Roc[3. Some sort of legendary bird.] setting upon its prey. His fist burst into black flames as a wild Spiritual Energy erupted and roiled.

“Courting death!”

The scarred man gave a severe shout. He was a Heavenly Fusion Stage Middle Phase; how would he fear Mu Chen, who was only a

Heavenly Fusion Stage Initial Phase!

He moved forward in a single step. His hand formed a claw and Spiritual Energy surged, until it was sharp and pointed. The Spiritual Energy seemed to turn his hand into the claw of a light eagle. It tore through the air towards Mu Chen.

Thump!

The fist and claw firmly collided and the churning Spiritual Energy swept outwards. The scarred man's expression changed in an instant. A moment later came a pitiful howl. A snapping sounded from his finger. His body quaked so hard it seemed as it he would fly backwards.

Swish!

Mu Chen's expression was still indifferent. He grabbed his opponent's hand, halting the man's movements; with a forceful jerk, the man fell flat on his face, like a dog eating shit. Mu Chen stepped forward again and his foot sailed out, kicking the scarred man squarely in the face. The punt sent him flying back by several hundred feet, heavily collided against the trunk of a huge tree. Instantly, not even sounds of miserable shriek was issued from him.

Mu Chen's movements had been crisp and accurate — not a single wasted move. By the time the others registered what was going on, the scarred man was already unconscious. His body had been left in a wretched state and was covered in blood.

"Boy, such nerve!"

One of the Lion Tiger Regiment's leaders was also angered. He moved forward in a step and his Spiritual Energy swept out. When his fist flashed out, the only thing they could see was his Spiritual Energy melting into the form of a roaring lion. The energy churned as it directly roared towards Mu Chen.

Bang!

Even the ground had been split by this leader's move. It looked like he wasn't weak.

Mu Chen saw the leader's ferocious offensive, but his expression remained just as frigid as before. He closed his hand and black flames boiled out as he threw a punch.

Six Limitless Death Seals formed under Mu Chen's fist. Between the ripples of Spiritual Energy, something like a black comet shot out.

Bang!

Their fists met with a sweeping wind, violently clashing in the middle of the broken land. A startling wave of wind and energy swept out. The shattered stones that'd littered the ground instantly turned into dust, then rose into the air as a dark cloud.

The members of the Lion Tiger Regiment urgently backed away, though their eyes stayed firmly locked on the situation in front of them. Through the bursts of wild Spiritual Energy, one could see the vague outlines of two figures. Both were ferocious enough that it sent shivers down their spines.

Between the quaking of the ground they could see their leader's shoulders shake as he was shoved back several dozen steps. His feet were planted firmly in the ground and the brace marks under his feet were roughly half a foot deep.

Meanwhile, the young man he faced had only taken two steps back.

"How is that possible!" they cried. This boy couldn't be past the Heavenly Fusion Stage Initial Phase, but he'd forced their Quasi-Heavenly Transform Stage leader backwards with a single fist?

The other Lion Tiger Regiment leader also watched with wide eyes. Mu Chen had displayed a combat strength that far surpassed what they'd seen on the surface.

They weren't the only ones shocked. Even Guo Xiong and Li Qing

were staring at Mu Chen in amazement. They knew he wasn't weak when he single-handedly killed four Heavenly Fusion Stage Late Phase assassins the night before. But now, they'd personally seen Mu Chen force back an opponent of their own level. They couldn't help the feeling of discomfort in their hearts.

Mu Chen unhurriedly pulled back his fist. He watched the other members of the Lion Tiger Regiment with an indifferent expression. The members tried to avoid his eyes as they realised their place and no longer dared to recklessly provoke Mu Chen. They usually were a cruel and violent bunch, but this handsome looking youth had turned out to be even more cruel and violent than they were. Once he moved, there was no such thing as mercy.

"Now will you get lost?" Mu Chen slowly asked.

Su Xuan stood behind Mu Chen and extended a slender jade hand. A smooth and ancient-looking jade bead slipped into her palm. A startling Spiritual Energy churned, but the sense of it was vague as it slowly spread through the air. A cold look surfaced on her sweet-looking face.

From the looks of it, even she'd grown annoyed.

Chapter 238 – Emergence of the Spirit Treasury

Mu Chen's party wore bitter-cold expressions. A surprising amount of Spiritual Energy surged from Su Xuan, Guo Xiong, and Li Qing; it was clear that they'd decided to act, too.

The expressions of the two leaders changed when they saw that and they scrutinized Mu Chen and Su Xuan. Looks of fear flashed through their eyes.

Su Xuan was far stronger than they were. If it came down to a fight, they probably wouldn't be able to win, even if they teamed up against her. Then, there was the youth who looked gentle on the surface, but was ruthless underneath. They'd probably have to pay a huge price for fighting him, too.

On top of that, the Spirit Treasury was due to appear soon. It'd be unwise for them to exhaust their strength here and now.

If they wanted to take back their pride, they'd have to wait until they could ally with another powerful adventurer party.

The two leaders of the Lion Tiger Regiment exchanged gloomy looks as they rumbled in deep tones, "It's a small world. Our Lion Tiger Regiment won't leave it like this."

"Let's go!"

The two of them signaled a retreat to the other Lion Tiger Regiment members, who were boiling with resentful auras. Soon after, their party quickly disappeared from view.

Su Ling'er snorted as she watched the party leave, then she turned back to face Mu Chen and smiled. "I didn't know you could be so dashing when you're angry."

Mu Chen showed her a smile and a shrug. Behind him, Su Xuan clutched the ancient jade pearl as she also looked at him. "You are

truly deserving of your title as the ‘Blood Calamity of the Spiritual Road’.”

Those words told Mu Chen that she knew something about his background, but he wasn’t terribly surprised about it. It’s obvious she’d conducted a background check before she asked him to join her party.

“Let’s move on. It looks like we’ll be able to enter the depths of the White Dragon Hillock soon.” Mu Chen stated as he looked ahead, though he stopped at that. It was obvious that he was interested in the rumored Sovereign Spirit Treasury.

Su Xuan nodded, then moved and flitted away.

They didn’t meet any major obstacles for the rest of their journey. There was one powerful Spiritual Beast, but Mu Chen had killed it faster than was thought possible. Roughly half an hour later, they entered the deepest area of the mountains.

Clouds and mist swirled around the towering peak that rose to meet the heavens. A huge waterfall torrented downwards, its rumbles echoing throughout the mountains.

Mu Chen’s party skimmed up the green slopes as they kept an eye on their surroundings. The nearby hills and plains were dotted with countless shapes of people, while even more were flying in from the distance. The entire landscape looked like it was a majestic portrait.

“So, there were this many people.” Guo Xiong couldn’t help smacking his lips It looked like every expert and decently sized force within a thousand miles of the White Dragon Hillock had deigned it necessary to rush to this particular location. The attractiveness of a Sovereign Spirit Treasury was truly worth its name.

“It’s said that this is where the White Dragon Sovereign fell.”

Su Xuan pointed ahead with a slender finger towards five

majestic peaks in the distance. A waterfall flowed like the Milky Way down from each of the five peaks and into a large lake at the foot of the mountains. The lake was as clear as a mirror as it changed its colors to reflect the vibrancy of the peaks that surrounded it.

“Mhm?” Mu Chen raised a curious eyebrow towards the lake, but he couldn’t detect anything unusual from its surface.

Su Xuan lightly smiled. “You won’t be able to see it. Who knows how many experts have explored the area in the past few hundred years? None of them managed to find anything. From the looks of it, it’s still not time yet. If that expert, who had reached such heights, wanted to conceal this Spirit Treasury from others, then it won’t be easy to find.”

Mu Chen nodded. That was an existence powerful enough to become the overlord of an entire continent. His very name intimidated others everywhere and he’d commanded millions of people. Obviously, his Spirit Treasury wouldn’t be easy to find.

“For now, we’ll just have to wait until the Spirit Treasury appears. I’m guessing that it should be soon.” Su Xuan’s charming eyes scanned the five towering mountains.

The party quietly sat themselves down on the green slope to wait. As time passed by, the number of experts in the area slowly swelled, making this part of the White Dragon Hillock more lively than ever.

Shhhhuuu!

Mu Chen silently sat on the mountain's peak as he scanned the area with narrowed eyes. Suddenly, he widened his eyes as a powerful Spiritual Energy rippled from his right, accompanied by the sounds of screeching wind.

From the place where Mu Chen had been watching, two groups of nearly a hundred people each appeared out of nowhere and

landed on one of the nearby peaks.

Mu Chen was familiar with them; they were the Heavenly Dipper Sword Faction and the Earthen Way Sect. However, their current formations were far more intimidating than the last time he'd seen them. They'd clearly received their reinforcements.

The sheer number of people between the two forces wasn't something to be dismissed, either, and the Spiritual Energies that rippled from them were exceptionally powerful. As a result, they'd attracted quite a few looks as the leaders of several other forces in the area frowned at the scene. It looked like the Heavenly Dipper Sword Faction and the Earthen Way Sect had both put quite a bit of money into this expedition.

"Both forces have two Heavenly Transform Stage elders!"

Li Qing looked over with her charming eyes and frowned. The Heavenly Dipper Sword Faction and the Earthen Way Sect probably wouldn't rank among the Northern Heavens Continent's most powerful forces, but they were still the local bosses of the White Dragon Hillock. They were the only forces who could send out so many people on such short notice. If any treasures appeared in this Sovereign Spirit Treasury, they'd be the ones with the power to seize them.

Su Xuan nodded. There was little she could do; the information they'd been given for the assignment only said that it was a "Wealthy Spirit Treasury", and that was what they'd had in mind as they built their party. Who would've thought that once they reached their destination, the supposed Wealthy Spirit Treasury would turn into a Sovereign Spirit Treasury?

"Just do your best. All we need is a single item from the Spirit Treasury to prove that we've been here. Mission complete. As for the other treasures, that'll depend on the situation at the time."

Everyone nodded at Su Xuan's words. That's all they could do given the current situation, since Su Xuan was the only member of

their party with exceptional strength. The other four weren't terribly outstanding among all the experts gathered there.

Shhhhhhhuu!

The screeching of the wind interrupted their conversation again. Everyone looked in the direction of the sound and saw nearly a hundred bodies rushing over and landed on another peak.

"They're from White Dragon City." Mu Chen scanned the crowd and picked out Bai Dong, the Young City Lord, standing at the front. Next to him was that grey-robed elder and behind them were nearly a hundred people dressed in white robes that were decorated with patterns of soaring dragons. They stood silently behind Bai Dong with knife-sharp glints in their eyes as they glanced around. An aura of bloodthirst surged around them.

Mu Chen couldn't stop his frown as he watched the white-robed figures. Even though their Spiritual Energies weren't terribly impressive, they didn't make him feel too comfortable.

"It's that despicable guy." Su Ling'er had also noticed Bai Dong's arrival. A look of disgust crossed her face.

Su Xuan also frowned the moment she looked over. Even though White Dragon City's army wasn't a small force, they only gave off ordinary Spiritual Energy ripples. The strongest one was probably the grey-robed elder — a Heavenly Transform Stage Initial Phase. Their formation was definitely weaker than the Heavenly Dipper Sword Faction or the Earthen Way Sect. But for some reason, Su Xuan felt that they were the greater threat.

"Hehe."

When Su Xuan and her party spotted Bai Dong, the latter had done the same to them. An eerie smile spread over his face, but he didn't provoke them for the moment. He knew this wasn't the place to start a fight.

Mu Chen slowly pulled his eyes away and looked back at the lake,

waiting for something to appear.

The day wore on and night cloaked the mountain range. A full moon hung high above the horizon and spread its ice-cold light over the sky and earth.

Everyone held their breath; all conversations ceased. An excitement swept over them.

There were no movements from the depths of the mountains, even as the light of the moon grew ever colder. Some of them began growing impatient. Was today not the day when the Spirit Treasury would appear?

Enraged voices sounded low as they spread on the night wind.

Mu Chen calmly focused on the moon's reflection on the lake. That was when the moon on the lake, emitting a peculiar glow.

The glow rose from the lake water and formed a faint mist on the glassy surface.

"Something's happening!"

Mutters of excitement passed through the crowds. The strange signs had appeared again!

As the forces grew excited, the Spiritual Aura between heaven and earth suddenly turned a little violent and collected above the lake with an impossible velocity.

Shhhhhuuuu!

The moon shined brilliantly on the lake's surface. Watched by countless awestruck expressions, the light slowly formed into the shape a humanoid figure.

The lake-being wore a white robe. The details of his face were indistinct, but the patterns on his robe were those of vivid and lifelike dragons. A frightening pressure had rippled over the land.

"Roaaaaar!"

The snarl of a dragon echoed with the appearance of the light entity. The area around the lake quaked violently as the mist gathered again to form a white dragon that spiraled around the figure.

“That’s…!”

Everyone watched the white figure and his dragon with expressions of shock. An emotion of joy and awe flushed through the crowd.

“It’s the White Dragon Sovereign!”

Su Xuan’s jade-like hands were tightly clenched. Expressions of surprise, happiness, and helplessness were simultaneously shown in her charming eyes.

The Spirit Treasury that was appearing was indeed a Sovereign Spirit Treasury!

Chapter 239 – Fire Spirit Lotus

The light gathered on the surface of the clear lake. When the figure of light appeared with his white dragon spiraling around him, the atmosphere around the White Dragon Hillock finally exploded.

Countless eyes turned red and their breaths turned heavy as they stared at the illusory light spirit. A look of intense delight welled up in their eyes.

The Spirit Treasury appearing this time was actually the Sovereign Spirit Treasury!

When they'd first arrived in the area, they'd only heard a few rumors about the Sovereign Spirit Treasury. No one was certain that the Spirit Treasury emerging this time would actually be the one left behind by the White Dragon Sovereign. They'd been trying their luck by coming here and their bets had finally paid off.

Lips were licked. So, it was a Sovereign Spirit Treasury. If the news spread, some true major forces might even be moved to action. But luckily, the news hadn't spread so rapidly this time. By the time a few of the major forces receive the news, the Sovereign Spirit Treasury would be cleaned out.

"It really is the White Dragon Sovereign." Bai Dong's eyes also turned red as he watched the light spirit. His dark eyes stared out from among the white-robed figures. A trace of excitement flashed across his eyes.

"That's the White Dragon Sovereign?"

Mu Chen also watched with a curious expression. It was impossible to get a clear glimpse of the light spirit's features, but the dragon still spiraled with a fleeting, yet intimidating, demeanor that rippled between heaven and earth. It was a sight that struck fear and awe into the hearts of any who saw it.

“Onom.”

The illusionary White Dragon Sovereign raised his hand and the white dragon roared. A burst of myriad color erupted like the burning sun and rose over the lake. The water instantly frothed and boiled.

Shuu! Shhhuu!

Five colors were shining brighter than any others and shot towards the five mountain pillars.

Chiii!

Each pillar of light touched one of the Milky Way waterfalls and split them open. The colors illuminated the cliff faces behind the waterfalls.

Kachaa!

The cliff faces tumbled down, one massive stone after another, revealing five huge seals to the eyes of the observers.

“Thats...”

Everyone stared at the seals in shock.

“Onom.”

The five ancient seals glowed with brilliant light and left their cliff faces like living creatures and gathered above the lake.

“Roarr!”

The moment the five seals gathered, the white dragon lifted its muzzle, roared towards the sky, and charged into the seals. There was a flash of light and the space began to distort, turning into a vortex of light a few dozen feet wide.

Shuuuuu!

Another beam of light rushed out from the vortex and into the sky, bearing the image of a huge white dragon. The roars of dragons echoed for hundreds of miles. It was truly a spectacular

sight to anyone in the White Dragon Hillock.

“The Sovereign Spirit Treasury has appeared!”

Everyone’s heartbeats quickened. The Sovereign Spirit Treasury that’d been hidden for several hundred years had finally appeared!

“Charge!”

Someone shouted. Then countless figures rose up and rushed like locusts towards the vortex.

Mu Chen’s dark pupils burned with excitement as well; he was very interested in the rumored Sovereign Spirit Treasury. He wanted to take the opportunity to make himself even stronger.

Thanks to Li Xuantong, he knew little more about Luo Li and her Luo God Clan. More importantly, he knew that he needed to become even stronger. That was the only way he could help Luo Li, so that she wouldn’t have to bear the burden of saving millions upon millions of her clansmen. And to have her sink into despair while he helplessly watched.

However, he was still too weak. Even Li Xuantong could easily beat him. He had to grow stronger.

On the roof of that small building, the young boy had told the young girl that he would become a supreme expert.

He still had a long way to go before he got there. But luckily, there was still time for him to grow.

“Let’s go.”

Mu Chen looked up and took in a deep breath of chilly air. Something reflected in his black pupils. His voice rumbled deep and low with resoluteness that couldn’t be heard. His road would be hard, but in this world, there was still something that he was willing to chase after, even if it required him to give everything he could.

Su Xuan also nodded as she reminded, “Be cautious. A Sovereign

Spirit Treasury is no less dangerous than a dragon's pool or a tiger's cave. It won't be easy to obtain the treasures the Sovereign left behind."

She lightly inhaled a breath of air, then became the first to move out. Counting Mu Chen and the other three, the four streaks of light entered the earth-shaking mass of bodies that flowed towards the huge glowing portal.

The moment Mu Chen entered the portal, he felt his surroundings ripple with chaos. His vision blacked out for a moment, then returned. At the same time, a surge of heat blew directly on his face.

Mu Chen opened his eyes with an expression of astonishment. Before him was a vast lake of magma and he was standing on a platform in the middle of it all. Flashes of light continued at regular intervals as one figure after another materialised on the platform.

Mu Chen swept his eyes around the island and suddenly realised that all of his party members were missing.

"Were we separated by the portal's space ripples?" Mu Chen frowned. This Sovereign Spirit Treasury was indeed worthy of its name. This was a man-made dimension. He was shocked by just thinking about how it could've been created. However, Mu Chen knew that one would have to be exceptionally powerful to open a space in a place such as the Great Thousand World.

Even a Heavenly Completion Stage expert wouldn't be able to accomplish that.

The Great Thousand World was a place where a host of other planes intersected, and as a result, the stability of this place was far greater than average. Experts who were powerful enough to tear apart space in the Lower Planes wouldn't make so much as a crack in the Great Thousand World. And if an expert from the Great Thousand World ever visited a Lower Plane, they'd easily cause a

major disaster.

Mu Chen shook his head. It looked like they'd been temporarily separated; however, they'd probably run across each other, sooner or later. They were strong enough, as long as they didn't encounter any peculiar troubles. But, right now, he had to take care of himself, first.

Mu Chen looked around. The stone platform he stood on wasn't the only one in this gigantic lake of magma. The sounds of a commotion drifted from somewhere far away.

"I should leave this place, first."

Mu Chen took two steps forward and his line of sight was drawn to the other end of the magma lake. That place should be connected to the depths of the Spirit Treasury.

"Hmm? What's that?"

Just when Mu Chen was about to skim off, a few cries of surprise sounded from his stone platform.

Mu Chen was alerted by those cries and his eyes snapped back to the source. A fiery-red lotus was blooming on the surface of magma. The center of the flower blazed with flames and within those flames were more thumb-size lotuses of fire.

Ripples of astonishing Spiritual Energy fluctuated throughout the space. The air itself felt like it was on fire.

"That's..."

Mu Chen looked at the floating fiery-red lotus and, at first, drew a blank. Then, he recognised it and asked, "Is that the Fire Spirit Lotus?"

The Fire Spirit Lotus was an extremely rare treasure. Its seeds were formed from the purest Flame Spiritual Energy that could be found between the heavens and earth. It possessed a god-level effect for refining the physique and also had great benefits towards

cultivation.

Even in the auction house, the price of such a treasure wouldn't be low. But, right now, there were so many of them floating on the magma lake.

"That's the Fire Spirit Lotus?!!"

When Mu Chen identified the burning lotus blossoms, a surge of surprised cries burst out from the experts around him. A heavy feeling of greed settled within countless pairs of eyes. Never could they have imagined such wealth just after entering the Spirit Treasury. The Sovereign Spirit Treasury was, indeed, worthy of its name.

Mu Chen licked his lips as he swept his eyes over the vast lake of magma. His heart jumped at seeing so many Fire Spirit Lotuses.

As far as he knew, it was rare to find Fire Spirit Lotuses growing in such large clumps. But, if they did, then there was a chance that another rare treasure would be born.

The Fire Celestial Lotus.

It was an evolved form of the Fire Spirit Lotus. It could greatly enhance the progress of those who cultivated fire attribute Spiritual Arts. Although Mu Chen didn't cultivate that particular aspect, it'd be a great benefit to the Nine Netherflames that he'd merged with.

"There are so many Fire Spirit Lotuses growing in this place, so there must be one that's succeeded in its evolution!"

A look of determination flashed through Mu Chen's eyes. Just as he was prepared to leap, a loud laugh burst out from someone behind him. Then, a figure leaped before him, heading directly towards one of the Fire Spirit Lotuses.

"Haha! So many Fire Spirit Lotuses! What luck!"

The figure was heading directly towards the Fire Spirit Lotus. Mu

Chen narrowed his eyes.

Rustle

The figure landed on top of the Fire Spirit Lotus and clutched at it while laughing. However, the moment he prepared to pluck it, the magma underneath him burst upwards and a scarlet shadow twisted itself around his legs. With a violent jerk, he was dragged into the magma.

“Arghhhhh!”

He cried mournfully. A green smoke rose from the spot he’d disappeared.

Mu Chen, and any others who’d been ready to act, instantly recalculated with different expressions on their faces. So there was such vicious creatures lurking under the magma?

Chapter 240 – Encounter

“What’s that?!”

Everyone stood on the stone platform staring down into the magma in shock at the unforeseen event that’d just occurred before their eyes. Scarlet shadows flashed under the surface of the magma.

The boiling liquid moved and gave the spectators a preview of a massive horned python covered in fiery-red scales. The boiling flames didn’t cause it the slightest discomfort; on the contrary, it seemed quite content with its environment.

These snakes roamed freely below the surface of the magma. One glanced at the human figures standing the stone platform with a cold, savage light in its eyes.

“Those are Flame-Eating Pythons!”

Someone cried out in alarm when they recognized the savage creatures hiding within the magma. These Spiritual Beasts were creatures that possessed the ability to control the magma from the moment they were born within it. As they’re hidden under the magma, they were also extremely difficult to deal with.

“If there’s a treasure, then there’s always something guarding it. It looks like these Flame Eaters are guarding the Fire Spirit Lotuses.” Mu Chen nodded to himself. However, there was nothing here that he feared. It was true that Flame Eaters weren’t easy to deal with, but they weren’t enough to make him pull back, either.

“Hmph, just a few little Flame Eaters wants to keep us from acquiring the Spirit Lotuses?”

The cold snort sounded from a short distance away — a man with a cold laugh on his face as he released rippling, potent Spiritual Energy. He moved in a burst towards the magma.

Tshhhhhh!

Right before he was about to pluck the Fire Spirit Lotus, several scarlet lights burst from underneath the surface of the magma lake. A wild gale sprung up.

“Hmph.”

The man barked a laugh and a long blade appeared in his clenched fist and flickered with spiritual light. The blade trembled as he cast several razor-sharp blade-like images, which soared out and cut deeply into the scarlet lights.

Clang!

The sounds of metal on metal rang out. Lines of blood appeared on the bodies of the Flame-Eaters as they whined mournfully and fell back into the magma.

After pushing back the Flame Eaters, the man extended his hand, clutched the Fire Spirit Lotus, and plucked the Fire Seed from the heart of the flower.

The spectators became riled up when they saw the man obtain the Fire Spirit Lotus. The ones with decent strength were the first to leap out. After that, an earth-shaking number of figures began rushing towards the magma lake.

Mu Chen also burst forward with them. He put one foot on the empty air and used the foothold to drive his body straight towards the center of the lake.

Even though Fire Spirit Lotuses were decently-prized treasures, the one that Mu Chen wanted was the Fire Celestial Lotus. If he could get his hands on that, then he’d be able to strengthen the Nine Neatherflame inside him, while also charging directly towards the Heavenly Fusion Stage Middle Phase.

Even though Mu Chen had quite a few tricks he could’ve pulled, he knew that his physique still wasn’t strong enough. If he ended up fighting an opponent who far surpassed him in strength, things

could get troublesome.

Rustle!

Those thoughts further fueled Mu Chen's desire for the Fire Celestial Lotus and he abruptly quickened his pace.

Tsssssshhh! Tssssh!

The moment Mu Chen upped his speed, the magma below him suddenly boiled upwards. A pillar of liquid stone rose into the air by several feet and ruthlessly aimed towards him.

Mu Chen moved to evade as he activated the Shadowspirit Step and his body split into several illusions as he avoided the pillar of magma. The maneuver hadn't slowed him in the least as he continued towards his target.

The surface of the magma lake bubbled with noise as figures shuttled back and forth. Each Fire Spirit Lotus blooming on the lake's surface had already been targeted by more than one person. Chaotic battles broke out over who would be the one to keep the treasures.

These fights also attracted the Fire-Eaters hidden under the magma. If they discovered an opening, they'd burst up with ruthless attacks.

As a result, the battles were accompanied by shrieks of misery as one body after another fell into the lake. Even though one could keep the burning liquid at bay with their Spiritual Energy, they'd be overwhelmed with despair and fear once they had fell into it, as a result of being attacked by the Fire-Eaters.

Mu Chen watched the scene unfold with apathy and his steps didn't show the slightest pause. He wasn't fighting over the Fire Spirit Lotuses, so he was using his energy to boost his speed to the max as he headed towards the center of the lake.

One could expect the natural Spiritual Aura to be even more chaotic around the center of the lake and the Spiritual Beasts

hiding in that area to be even more savage and ruthless. The other experts probably wouldn't head in that direction for a while, so Mu Chen had the opportunity for first pick.

In just a few short minutes, Mu Chen had already approached the center of the lake. He kept his eyes peeled for the possible existence of a Fire Celestial Lotus.

However, his first search didn't bear fruit. The center of the lake only bubbled and burst with blazing hot scarlet magma.

"There aren't any here?"

Mu Chen knit his brows as a look of disappointment flashed across his face.

Shhhhhhuu.

As Mu Chen was feeling disappointment from the lack of a harvest, a screeching wind blew by his ears. There were people heading in his direction and it was clear that their target was the same as Mu Chen's — the Fire Celestial Lotus. They must have good foresight.

Mu Chen looked them up and down and realised that these newcomers weren't weak. However, he knitted his brows when his eyes reached the end of the line. There were a few familiar figures.

It was a group of five or six people led by someone dressed in white — the Young City Lord of White Dragon City, Bai Dong. Next to him were several white-robed underlings and the grey-robed elder.

Mu Chen and Bai Dong recognised each other at the same time. A contemplative smile crossed the latter's dark eyes.

"Haha. Brother, are you alone? It looks like you've been separated from your friends." Bai Dong's face was plastered over with a smile as he approached Mu Chen.

The grey-robed elder and the underlings spread out in a circular

formation as they slowly advanced towards Mu Chen.

Mu Chen's eyes dulled at the sight of them; however he displayed a smile on his handsome face as he moved towards Bai Dong. He cupped his hands and said, "So, it's the Young City Lord who I've heard so much about. Please forgive me for my lack of respect back at the auction house."

Bai Dong gave Mu Chen a blank look as he studied the slightly regretful expression on Mu Chen's face. He couldn't help puffing out his chest and raising his head. Even though Bai Dong still intended to kill Mu Chen, he thought he'd at least spare his enemy some suffering in return for his tact.

"Haha, it was just a small disagreement... I, Young City Lord of the White Dragon City..." Bai Dong smiled, but before he could finish his sentence, the face of the grey-robed elder abruptly changed.

Rustle!

Mu Chen moved like ghost and approached Bai Dong in only a single step. A cyan longsword appeared in his fist and flashed towards Bai Dong's throat in a ruthless swing.

Mu Chen's actions were so unexpected that both Bai Dong and his grey-robed elder had been taken by surprise. Not only did this little Heavenly Fusion Stage Initial Phase manage to escape their clutches earlier, but he dared to strike right before their eyes!

"Shhhhhhu!"

Of course, Mu Chen's blow was difficult to avoid, given such a short distance. There was nothing that Bai Dong could do except watch as the sharp sword glinted towards him.

Baaang!

But right before Mu Chen's glowing sword cut through Bai Dong's neck, the grey-robed elder forced a palm towards Bai Dong and sent him flying backwards at an angle.

The blade streak across Bai Dong's face and sliced off his ear. Fresh blood welled up from the wound.

Since Mu Chan had failed to kill his target with that strike, he immediately backed away. Nothing rippled in his dark pupils and the cold smile on his face had turned even more frigid. The warmth from before was entirely gone from his face.

"Haha, you can thank your dumb luck." Mu Chen's longsword trembled as he smiled at Bai Dong, who'd lost an ear and had blood all over his face.

"Bastard…bastard, little trash…my ear…"

Bai Dong's expression was savage and the blood made his expression seem even more twisted. He covered his missing ear with one hand as he pointed at Mu Chen with a trembling finger and roared with the desire to tear Mu Chen apart.

He never imagined that someone like Mu Chen would be able to do something like to him!

"Elder Qiu! Catch him, catch him! But, don't kill him! I want to chop his limbs off one by one!" Bai Dong snarled as his eyes turned scarlet red.

"Brat, it looks like we really can't underestimate you. So cunning and ruthless at such a tender age." The grey-robed elder darkly stared at Mu Chen. Now he knew why those four Demonic Dragon Guards had wound up dead instead. This brat was a few years younger than Bai Dong, but he's as cunning as a fox and ruthless to the extreme. How could an ordinary student of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy have learned such ruthlessness?

"You've left a blood trail all the way to my doorstep. Did you think I was going to offer you tea and shout '1,2,3' before we started?" Mu Chen laughed in ridicule.

The grey-robed elder had darkly stared at him and coldly laughed in reply. "No worries. Either way, nothing can change your fate.

You managed to escape last time; but this time, you won't be so lucky."

Mu Chen's pupils slightly shrank. "Last time?"

He stared into the eyes of the grey-robed elder. Then Mu Chen's gradually turned from bewildered to cold.

"So, you were the ones who sent those people... which means that your White Dragon City is, in fact, from the Demonic Dragon Palace?" Mu Chen's heart jolted. This secret Demonic Dragon Palace was indeed powerful and far-reaching. Even the White Dragon City was one of their chess pieces.

"What a smart brat."

The grey-robed elder smiled indifferently. He never thought that this slip of his tongue would give so much away to this youth. But what the kid learned wouldn't make a difference right before he died.

"Go, kill him."

The grey-robed elder waved his hand and the white-robed subordinates advanced towards Mu Chen with icy expressions and bloodthirsty auras — exactly the same as the four who they'd encountered in the forest!

Chapter 241 – Fire Celestial Lotus

The moment the cold laugh and bloodthirst started from the grey-robed elder, several white-robed men darted out from behind him. With a quick flick of their hands, several black spears swung and created multiple spear images that were hurled towards Mu Chen.

The cyan longsword flashed and a pitch-black Spiritual Energy burst outwards from Mu Chen's body. The sword flickered with black flames and blocked all of the spear images that rained down on him.

Claang! Claaang!

The sword collided with the spears and burned them away with its black flames. These white-robed individuals weren't as strong as the four from before — they should be somewhere in the Heavenly Fusion Stage Middle Phase. However, their actions were extremely well coordinated. Even a Heavenly Fusion Stage Late Phase might get killed in a fight against them.

Mu Chen looked up at the grey-robed elder, who was staring back at him with the eyes of a venomous snake. This Heavenly Transform Stage Initial Phase old bat was the one Mu Chen truly feared. Such power was quite overbearing with his current cultivation. This old man would be a great threat, if he decided to move against him.

Mu Chen had no backup, at present, and it was unlikely that he'd be able to carve an escape route out, like last time. His situation was especially un-reassuring.

Several others nearby had noticed the confrontation between Mu Chen and the members of White Dragon City. However, they only afforded a cursory glance, before they took the initiative to leave the area. It was clear that they didn't want to get themselves involved.

“I must find an opportunity to escape.” Mu Chen frowned. They should be within the vicinity of the Sovereign Spirit Treasury, so, if he started a fight with Bai Dong right now, there would be too many unstable factors. He couldn’t tell if there were going to be more reinforcements from White Dragon City. On top of that, he had to stay wary of the others, who were eyeing him like tigers watching their prey.

“Trying to escape?”

Mu Chen flicked his eyes towards the grey-robed elder, who darkly smiled back at him. Then, something flashed in the elder’s eyes. He clenched his dried-up fists as a powerful Spiritual Energy surged into an arc of light and formed into a long spear. The Spiritual Energy of the arc throbbed and gave it an astonishing might.

“The old fellow is about to act!”

Mu Chen’s face couldn’t help to changed as he retreated.

The grey-robed elder stepped forward with a cold smile on his face. Then, his image turned fuzzy for a moment, as if it was formed from wisps of smoke. Within a few steps, he’d closed the empty space between himself and Mu Chen.

Mu Chen cheerlessly pushed his Shadowspirit Step as far as it could go; however, the old man still managed to catch up. Whatever Spiritual Art this old man practiced, it clearly surpassed the Shadowspirit Step.

“Black Dragon Spear!”

The dark spear in the elder’s hand vibrated and exploded with a brilliant light as it lunged forward. The majestic Spiritual Energy moved like a black dragon and swiped at Mu Chen. A sharp bloodthirst whipped past him.

Mu Chen didn’t dare to pause as the shocking gale blew past him. Instead, he raised his hand and the Nine-layered Pagoda

materialised and swelled in size, becoming a pagoda-shield between them.

Baaaang!

The long spear smashed into the Nine-layered Pagoda, causing it to tremble with a metallic clash. The force of the impact flowed towards Mu Chen and made his blood and qi surge.

“Hmm?”

The grey-robed elder made a sound of surprise. Not even a Heavenly Fusion Stage Late Phase should be able to withstand that attack; however, this youth had managed it with the help of this strange black pagoda.

“Seal this entire area. I want to see how long he can last.” That grey-robed elder coldly ordered. His eyes focused as he took another step forward. His majestic Spiritual Energy circulated as he released his Heavenly Transform Stage power in an explosive burst of strength. The black spear in his hands stabbed out with an air-ripping speed, causing waves on the surface of the magma lake.

Mu Chen mobilised his Shadowspirit Step to dodge the grey elder’s increasingly ferocious attacks. Once again, he sent the Nine-layered Pagoda out to withstood the attacks.

But if this goes on, he’d be thoroughly suppressed.

“Elder Qiu, remember not to kill him. I don’t want him dying so easily!” Bai Dong stood outside their range, savagely glaring at the disadvantaged Mu Chen.

“Rest assured, Young City Lord. I won’t let him escape.” the grey-robed elder darkly smiled as a chill revealed itself in his eyes. His attacks intensified even further.

Mu Chen made a jolty retreat, with a gloomy expression on his face. The old man’s overbearing posture had provoked his anger.

Mu Chen felt pressured by the old man’s Heavenly Transform

Stage Initial Phase strength, but he also knew that he would have to suffer the consequences of going all out.

“Hey, old fart, if you want to play, then I’ll play with you!”

There was a murkiness in Mu Chen’s eyes as he started forming seals with both hands. The seals quickly came into being with a surge of frighteningly powerful Spiritual Energy ripples.

“Hmm?” The grey-robed elder sensed the Spiritual Energy ripples and focused on them. So, this brat really does have some tricks up his sleeve. No wonder he managed to kill the four Demonic Dragon Guards.

The moment before Mu Chen executed his Four Gods Constellation Scripture, he stole a glance at the boiling magma. A trace of shock suddenly flashed through his previously cold eyes.

Even though Mu Chen’s attention had been split, the speed at which he formed his seals didn’t slow for even a moment.

“Brat, you’re reckless to split your attention while fighting me!”

The grey-robed elder had noticed the diversion of Mu Chen’s attention and he turned into a strand of fuzzy smoke that reappeared above Mu Chen with lightning speed. Waves of Spiritual Energy moved through the black spear as it cut downwards.

At the same time, the Nine-layered Pagoda appeared above Mu Chen and rapidly expanded.

Claaaang!

The elder’s fierce attack drove into the pagoda, which turned dull and quickly shrank, before it crashed into Mu Chen.

Mu Chen suffered from heavy blow and tumbled backwards into the magma with a “pfff!”

The waves of magma lapped upwards as Mu Chen disappeared beneath them.

The grey-robed elder stood in the sky, watching the magma lake in surprise. Could that brat really have died just like that?

Bai Dong quickly flew over to him with a wary expression. He clenched his fist and said, “That brat won’t die so easily. Fish him out! I’ll grind his bones to dust!”

The grey-robed elder shook his head and replied, “Young City Lord, this lake is filled with flame miasma. Even if one can withstood the magma itself with their Spiritual Energy, they will still be corroded away by the flame miasma. That brat fell in; his death is certain.

Bai Dong’s face twisted with refusal. He hated Mu Chen down to his bones and still had plans for ruthlessly torturing him. He didn’t expect Mu Chen to simply die like that.

“We’ll stand guard here. If he does survive, he’s certain not to stay in there for long. The moment he reappears, we’ll capture him.” The grey-robed elder replied as he swept an eye over the magma lake.

Bai Dong nodded and gritted his teeth. “Little trash, you better not die so quickly!”

They took separate positions in the air as they probed the surface of the lake with their senses. However, they were ultimately left bewildered and empty-handed after guarding the area for a full ten minutes, without a sign of Mu Chen.

“That brat definitely died in there,” the grey-robed elder solemnly declared. There was no way he could’ve survived after so long. Not to mention that the brat was still a Heavenly Fusion Stage Initial Phase.

Bai Dong whipped his sleeves around.

“Young City Lord, let us reconvene with the City Lord. Obtaining the treasures left behind by the White Dragon Sovereign is still of utmost importance,” the elder said.

Bai Dong could only nod his head as he glanced at the magma lake's one last time, before reluctantly leaving.

Bai Dong left, clearly not knowing that Mu Chen — who he thought to be dead — was still hiding out in the depths of the magma lake. His body was shrouded in black flames. With the Nine Netherflame guarding him, the magma was no threat at all; the so-called flame miasma couldn't get through its guard.

Mu Chen swam around in the scarlet magma, constantly keeping an eye out for dangers. The Nine Netherbird had reported that it'd discovered peculiar ripples coming from deeper down.

It was highly possible that those ripples were coming from the Fire Celestial Lotus!

That's why Mu Chen had seized the opportunity to escape the grey-robed elder by diving into the magma lake. This way, he could spend his time searching for the Fire Celestial Lotus, instead.

"That old fart. The next time we meet, I'll give you a taste of my moves." Mu Chen coldly snorted to himself. If there hadn't been other things holding him back, how could he have let himself be suppressed like that? If Mu Chen had gone all out, then that old fart would either be dead, or have had a layer of his hide scraped off. However, the exchange would've been exhausting on Mu Chen's part.

Mu Chen didn't slow his search as these thoughts circulated through his heart. The deeper he dived into the magma lake, the stronger the heat became. The temperature at this depth was even starting to penetrate the defenses of the Nine Netherflame.

If this went on, then Mu Chen wouldn't be able to continue, with or without the Nine Netherflame's protection.

"Two hundred meters down, on your right." The Nine Netherbird's voice suddenly sounded.

Mu Chen acknowledged the voice with a change of expression

and immediately headed towards the direction the Nine Netherbird had indicated.In a few moments later, he looked up ahead with an expression of excitement on his face.

The scarlet magma was boiling harder over here. In the center of it all floated a rainbow-coloured lotus. Not even the magma could approach the brilliant rainbow colors that glowed from it.

A strange fragrance spread through the area and seemed to disperse the heat that had built up in Mu Chen’s body.

Mu Chen studied the rainbow lotus that was deep in the magma with an expression of exhilaration. This was the Fire Celestial Lotus that he’d been searching for!

Chapter 242 – Refining the Lotus Seed

It really is the Fire Celestial Lotus.

Mu Chen's eyes were blazing as he stared at the rainbow-coloured lotus submerged in the magma lake. Joy had settled within him as his plan bore fruit, as expected. The Fire Spiritual Energy around here was so strong that it could support many Fire Spirit Lotuses at once, so there simply had to be one that'd managed to evolve. The only difference in his plans was that the treasure hadn't been floating on the surface; instead, it'd been hidden deep in the magma.

The magma was boiling so hot that it could melt metal. Even Heavenly Transform Stage experts wouldn't dare to dive into it. If the Nine Netherflames hadn't been protecting Mu Chen's body, then he wouldn't have been able to obtain the Fire Celestial Lotus, even if he knew where it'd been hidden. The only thing he could've done was sigh and leave with depressed spirits.

Mu Chen licked his lips as he continued his pace towards the Fire Celestial Lotus.

But, the moment before Mu Chen reached the Fire Celestial Lotus, he sensed a sudden ripple through the magma. A scarlet light pierced through the lake and was headed towards him at a startling speed.

Mu Chen was temporarily caught off guard by the sudden attack, but he still managed to shroud his body within the Nine-layered Pagoda with a wave of his hand.

Claaaang!

The scarlet light collided with the Nine-layered Pagoda, causing it to shake violently. The dark light flickered, then rapidly faded away, before re-entering Mu Chen's body.

"Pffffff."

Mu Chen's face turned pale as the Nine-Layered Pagoda dulled and returned to him as he spat out a mouthful of blood. His eyes glazed over in shock as he barely managed to turn his head towards the right.

A scarlet snake slithered through the magma. It was covered in scarlet scales and had flaming horns. Other than that, it didn't look to be all that powerful. The only thing that was unique about it was the fact that its horns were burning with dark-gold flames and flowed with fiery-red magma.

In fact, this scarlet snake was actually far smaller than the Flame-Eating Pythons that Mu Chen had seen from the surface. However, the strength that flowed from this one was far greater. Mu Chen felt much more power emanating from it than from even that grey-clothed elder.

Is this the King Flame-Eating Python?! Mu Chen felt a jolt in his heart and tasted something bitter on his tongue as he looked upon the smaller scarlet serpent. How could he have forgotten that? The Fire Celestial Lotus was such a rare treasure — how could it not have a guardian Spiritual Beast? The ordinary Fire Spirit Lotuses floating above him were already enough to attract all those regular Flame-Eaters; so, of course, the higher grade Fire Celestial Lotus would have something guarding it.

Based on the way this particular Flame-Eater was acting, Mu Chen guessed that it was as strong as a Heavenly Transform Stage Middle Phase expert. He also had to take into account the fact that they were currently inside the magma. Forget about Mu Chen, even Su Xuan wouldn't be able to win in this situation.

"Hissss. Hiss."

The King Flame-Eater savagely stared down at Mu Chen with its triangularly arranged pupils. Given that it was so powerful, of course it'd developed a decent amount of intelligence over time. It looked at Mu Chen with the mocking expression of a cat watching

a mouse. It knew its own strength — it also knew that this little human would certainly become food in its mouth, sooner or later.

Mu Chen didn't even twitch as he looked at the Fire Celestial Lotus right before his eyes, then back at the King Flame-Eater that was still eyeing him like a predator watching its prey. He decisively grounded his teeth and retreated.

At his current level, there was no way Mu Chen could deal with that King Flame-Eater. If he loitered around there any longer, he'd definitely lose his life.

Shhhhhu!

The moment Mu Chen moved, something primal flashed through the eyes of the King Flame-Eater. With a twitch of its tail, a frightening Spiritual Energy swept out. Mu Chen sensed the magma around him bear down even harder than before, slowing him down, little by little, until he came to a full stop.

The King Flame-Eater could actually control the magma with such precision.

Cold sweat beaded on Mu Chen's forehead as the Nine Netherflame continued to protect his body from within. He slowly raised his eyes to see the King Flame-Eater tearing through the magma towards him like a scarlet ray of light.

"Damn it!"

Mu Chen's expression changed and his Spiritual Energy surged as he prepared to meet the threat.

But right before Mu Chen could act, something jolted him from within his body. A clear and resonant cry sounded from him.

"Liiii!"

The pride, honor, and power carried in that cry were as clear as day.

The King Flame-Eater immediately braked on its charge as the

cunning pupils were overwhelmed with shock and despair. It looked as if it'd seen something truly terrifying.

Rustle!

The King Flame-Eater twisted its body, turned, and fled.

Boom!

As it turned to flee, a surge of black flames poured from Mu Chen's body and took the shape of a dark bird. The bird's eyes were stone-cold as they stared at the retreating figure of the King Flame-Eater. When it opened its beak, a stream of black flames poured out and raced through the magma, enveloping the King Flame-Eater.

"Chiii! Chii!"

The King Flame-Eater desperately struggled against the attack as it wailed mournfully.

The dark bird blazed and ignored the cries of the serpent. Then, it opened its beak again and inhaled. The black flame-shrouded snake writhed as it turned into a streak of dark light and was devoured.

Mu Chen watched with a dumbfounded expression. Then, he looked towards the slender black bird. Nine Netherbird?

The bird that burned with black flames casually turned to Mu Chen. That expression. Who else could it be, if not the Nine Netherbird?

"So, you can leave my body now?" Mu Chen said with a little shock. It looked like the Nine Nther Bird had regained quite a bit of strength.

"This is only a form created with Spiritual Energy."

The Nine Netherbird's voice resounded deep inside Mu Chen's heart. Then, it stretched its wings and looked at Mu Chen. "I don't want to die just because I associated with you."

Mu Chen shrugged and smiled. Thanks to the Bloodline Bond between them, if he'd died from the King Flame-Eater, then the Nine Netherbird would've also died with him.

The Spiritual Energy image of the Nine Netherbird suddenly flapped its wings and a black flame spurted towards Mu Chen, "It looks like something that the King Flame-Eater ate hasn't been fully digested."

As Mu Chen observed the lump of black flames with wide eyes, the flames dispersed and revealed a palm-sized medal that looked like it'd been forged in silver. The surface of the silver medal flickered with a strange aura and had been engraved with the image of a soaring white dragon.

What's this? Mu Chen was astonished. He examined the medal and its carving of the dragon, but didn't sense anything off about it. He frowned as he muttered to himself and stowed it away.

Based on the design of the white dragon, this should've been something left behind by the White Dragon Sovereign. But why was it inside the King Flame-Eater?

Mu Chen had no idea how to use the silver medal, so he stowed it away and looked back towards the Fire Celestial Lotus. This time, he swam over without meeting any obstacles and gingerly landed on the petals of the rainbow-coloured lotus.

At the center of the lotus surged a strand of pure Fire Spiritual Energy. And inside this strand floated a rainbow-coloured lotus seed the size of an infant's fist.

Over time, this rainbow-coloured lotus seed had slowly turned glossy as it gathered the Fire Spiritual Energy in the area. Even now, it constantly emanated an extremely pure fire-attributed Spiritual Energy.

"You can have the Fire Celestial Lotus seed. Once you eat it, give the rest of the flower to me." The Nine Netherbird swept an eye

over the Fire Celestial Lotus and a look of satisfaction filled its eyes. Treasures like these — brimming with rich Fire Spiritual Energy — were exactly what it needed the most.

Mu Chen had no objections to the Nine Netherbird's request. The lotus seed was where the purest Spiritual Energy had gathered. The flower itself was also quite extraordinary, but the Spiritual Energy there was much more wild. Mu Chen would have to spend much more time and energy absorbing the flower — luxuries that he couldn't afford at the moment. He might as well hand it over to the Nine Netherbird.

"Refine it quickly. The Fire Celestial Lotus can counter the flame miasma. On top of that, cultivating with it here will greatly benefit the way you absorb the Spiritual Energy inside the lotus seed. You must take the opportunity, before my Spiritual Energy body disperses. I can still guard you, for now, but you must not waste time." The black flames surged around the Nine Nether bird, then died down as it rapidly shrank to fit in a palm and landed on the lotus flower.

Mu Chen nodded and didn't delay. He took two steps forward and plucked the multicolored lotus-shaped seed floating between the petals.

Onom. Onom.

The moment Mu Chen touched the lotus seed, the Fire Spiritual Energy around him began to churn chaotically. Several surges swept towards Mu Chen, but were absorbed as he circulated the Great Pagoda Art.

Mu Chen quickly unfolded his palm to see the glowing seed. A burning sensation was spreading through his palm, although it was pleasantly warm. When Mu Chen first dived into the magma lake, some of the flame miasma had managed to penetrate the Nine Nether Flame's defenses and invaded his body. It had now been dispelled.

“Good stuff.”

Mu Chen exclaimed in admiration as he sat down on top of the lotus flower and pacified the ripples of Spiritual Energy within his body. He placed one palm on top of the seed and one below, then pulled; the suction from his palms caused the seed to explode with a dazzlingly scarlet light that was as intense as the burning sun.

An extremely pure scarlet Spiritual Energy rushed out from the lotus seed and bathed Mu Chen in a scarlet light. It poured into Mu Chen through his mouth, nose, and even his pores.

Mu Chen’s skin turned scarlet red and the Spiritual Energy within his body boiled vigorously and blazed with astonishing energy!

Chapter 243 – Breakthrough

The wind screeched over the magma lake as human figures scurried back and forth over its surface. Even though the raid earlier had depleted the area of most of its Fire Spirit Lotuses, there were still quite a few left over; after all, this magma lake was extremely vast. A lot of people had stayed in this area to scrape up some of those leftovers.

A white-robed figure sat on one of the huge stone platforms floating in the lake. His eyes were cold and focused as he stared into the scarlet magma, searching for any suspicious movements.

He was a Demonic Dragon Guard that Bai Dong had left behind before they'd moved on. That Bai Dong understood Mu Chen quite well — even after watching him fall into the magma lake, Bai Dong didn't want to give him a chance, so he'd left one expert behind to monitor the situation for him. If the guard noticed any sign that Mu Chen was still alive, then he'd immediately send them a message.

However, the grey-robed elder disapproved of Bai Dong's actions. The magma lake was extremely formidable; even the elder, himself, wouldn't be able to last more than five minutes. On top of that, they'd stayed in the area for more than ten minutes before they left. That was more than enough time for Mu Chen to have been burnt to ashes.

The Demonic Dragon Guard who'd been left behind was thinking the same thoughts; however, he couldn't disobey Bai Dong. Therefore, he impatiently stayed at his post with a terrible mood.

"A Heavenly Fusion Stage Initial Phase brat wants to live after falling in? How is that possible?"

The Demonic Dragon Guard smiled at no one in particular as he absent-mindedly looked around the boiling magma lake. Suddenly, his mouth dropped open as astonishment flooded his eyes.

The other experts who'd been digging the area for Fire Spirit Lotuses also watched the surface of the magma lake with expressions of disbelief.

A whirlpool had formed down there. And all of the Flame-Eaters were fleeing.

Bang!

A tall pillar of magma shot out from the vortex. A human form flew out from the liquid and moved to hover in midair.

The black flames slowly burned away to reveal a slender and handsome youth. Many of the spectators widened their eyes at his familiar features.

"It's that youth who got beaten into the magma lake by those people from White Dragon City!"

"How is he still alive?"

"How is that possible?"

Cries of surprise burst from those who saw Mu Chen's entrance and their faces turned pale as if they'd seen a ghost. At first, they'd felt sympathy for Mu Chen when they saw him fall into the magma lake. But who would've thought that he'd still be alive?

Mu Chen, however, didn't bother with the astonished faces. Instead, he looked down and looked at his slender hands, then clenched them. An unconcealable excitement permeated his majestic Spiritual Energy.

Thanks to the pure Fire Spiritual Energy within the Fire Celestial Lotus, Mu Chen's ability had been greatly strengthened and he'd even entered the Heavenly Fusion Stage Middle Phase. He could also sense that his Nine Netherflame had grown even stronger.

The greatest boost from the refined Fire Seed had been to his Nine Netherflame, instead of his Spiritual Energy.

Mu Chen showed a satisfied smile before he looked around. Bai

Dong and his crew were already gone. It made sense; they didn't have the time to wait around for him.

"The next time we meet, I'll make sure you're not so comfortable." A chill flashed through Mu Chen's black pupils. He waved his sleeve and was prepared to leave, but his eyes were suddenly drawn to a stone platform a short distance away. His expression changed. On that stone platform stood a white-robed elder, staring at him in shock.

"They actually left a guard behind?"

Mu Chen's expression turned dark when he saw the white-robed expert.

The white-robed Demonic Dragon Guard mirrored Mu Chen's change of expression. His heart jumped. Then, without the slightest hesitation, he turned around and left. As a Heavenly Fusion Stage Middle Phase, he definitely wasn't Mu Chen's opponent. He had to find Bai Dong and tell him that Mu Chen was still alive.

Rustle!

But just as the guard started to fly away, a screeching wind made him turn his eyes over his shoulder. What he saw scared him so badly that his soul almost left his body. In that instant, Mu Chen had appeared right behind him.

"Since you stayed behind, then you should stay here forever," Mu Chen said with his cold but casual tone. The ice-cold bloodlust was clear to the ears of the Demonic Dragon Guard.

"Shhhhhu!"

The guard's face changed dramatically. With a clutch of his fingers, a long dark spear materialised in his hand and thrust forward with a trembling ferocity.

A pair of slender hands wrapped in dark flames also shot forward like twin bolts of lightning. They slid over the black spear and

reached around the Demonic Dragon Guard.

Bang!

The guard's clothes immediately turned to ashes as a death-black palm print appeared on his back. He coughed up red blood as the despotic flames overtook his body and roasted him down to his meridians.

"Arrrghhh!"

The Demonic Dragon Guards shrieked miserably as he burned.

Mu Chen seized over the black spear with an apathetic expression. Then he swung it down on the Demonic Dragon Guard, much like one would swing a club. A violent gale rushed away from the pair as Mu Chen mercilessly pounded his opponent into the magma lake.

"Arrrghhh!"

The Demonic Dragon Guard shrieked again as he landed in the magma, but was quickly cut off as the boiling liquid engulfed him with a green cloud of smoke. He'd already been reduced to ashes.

With a flick of his finger, Mu Chen tossed the black spear after him. Once that was done, he dusted off his hands. Then he turned around and left, the whole time wearing the same calm expression.

The other experts in the area watched Mu Chen's shrinking back with expressions of fear as they realised that their heads were damp with cold sweat. Who would've thought that such a youngster could be so ferocious when provoked?

That young man was a fierce one. Bai Dong was going to have quite the headache for provoking him.

The experts shook their heads and sighed inwardly before they recovered and returned to their tasks of harvesting the leftover Fire Spirit Lotuses.

Roughly ten minutes later, Mu Chen had left the magma lake

behind him. Ahead of him was the huge palace. People were rushing towards it in large numbers like hungry wolves and tigers — everyone was searching for the treasures that might appear.

This area was far more chaotic than the magma lake. Even the slightest would engulf a large number of victims, even if they had no idea what that even was.

Mu Chen swept his eyes over the scene and quickly lost interest. This was clearly still within the outer limits of the Spirit Treasury, so there was no way any treasures would appear all the way out here. Bai Dong and the rest probably hadn't wasted any time here, either.

Mu Chen thought about it a little, then decided to move ahead. With a quick flash, he bolted straight towards the palace. Once in awhile, some untactful idiot would get in his way. When that happened, all Mu Chen had to do was casually send out a palm and send them flying backwards with blood trailing from their mouths. He didn't bother with being polite. When everyone else saw what he was capable of, they grew too wary to act and simply allowed him to pass.

Mu Chen passed through the entryway and entered a long and narrow corridor, which occasionally branched off into a few ancient stone chambers. Mu Chen allowed others to hurry into those rooms ahead of him. Sometimes there'd be bursts of joy — sounded like they'd found some valuable treasures — but those sounds were usually followed by the clashing of weapons.

Mu Chen didn't let his attention stray in the slightest. He identified a single route and headed towards the depths of the palace. He'd already wasted too much time under the magma lake, so now he had to rush.

First, he had to rejoin with Su Xuan and the others. After all, they'd come here as a party. In this place that crawled with hungry wolves, only companions could be trusted.

“I hope nothing happened to them.”

Mu Chen frowned and quickened his pace. He didn’t have to worry about Su Xuan, with her strength. Li Qing and Guo Xiong were also strong enough to protect themselves. But then there was Su Ling’er, the weakest. If she’d been left alone, she’d definitely take hits due to her fiery temper.

Even though Su Ling’er was a little unreasonable at times, she was still a good person. Mu Chen didn’t want anything bad to happen to her.

By the time Mu Chen was done with those thoughts, he’d already sped through several thousand-meter long corridors — and it’d only taken him a little over ten minutes. He’d already passed through a few stone chambers, main halls, and other types of rooms where some sort of Spiritual Aura rippled. However, he only glanced once into those rooms before he flew on. The things inside them weren’t worth his time.

“I should've travelled the perimeter by now.”

The more Mu Chen flew, the fewer halls and stone chambers he could sense. However, his sense of the scale only grew larger. Compared to the previous places he’d visited, this palace was much more intricate and majestic.

Mu Chen passed through another corridor and almost entered another stone chamber. The stone gate to the chamber had already been smashed and a few humanoid figures stood in the room with ripples of wild Spiritual Energy pouring from their bodies.

Mu Chen glanced into the ransacked chamber and hesitated. Finally, he decided not to press forward for the time being.

But just as Mu Chen was about to turn around, a burst of laughter drifted out of the stone chamber.

“Haha. Beauty, you should obediently hand that item over. Even though you’ve offended us, the great Lion Tiger Regiment, we can

still forget about punishment — that is, if you're obedient. Otherwise, don't blame us once your smooth skin falls into our hands."

"Dream on!"

An icy-cold voice spat back at the laughter. A voice filled with anger and deep hatred.

"Is that so? Then don't blame us. Brothers, capture this ice beauty for me!" They laughed again.

Mu Chen halted his steps outside the stone chamber and narrowed his eyes. He'd heard that voice before — that must be Senior Sister Li Qing.

Chapter 244 – Draconic Spirit Bracelets

The stone hall was spacious and majestic; but due to the corrosion of time, it'd collapsed a little. Several huge stone pillars laid around the main hall in crumpled heaps. It gave off the feeling of an ancient ruin.

Several human figures were spread around the ruin-like hall. Only at the center of the room was there a small gathering of about a dozen or so people. There was an air of oppression about the hall, though the others in the room didn't dare to show their opinions about it. They were well-aware of the Lion Tiger Regiment — it was one of the top adventurer parties in the area. Furthermore, both leaders were present, so no one dared to test their luck.

A 2-foot-tall stone statue stood at the end of the hall. The statue's feet were mottled and it glared with wide eyes as it emitted a violent aura. It was so detailed that it looked as if it was actually alive.

Two nicks were carved into the rams of the stone statue.

Under the state was a beautiful, sexy, yet ice-cold girl. She wore a frigid expression that was filled with anger.

"Little beauty, if you don't hand it over, then don't blame us for not knowing how to be tender." A roguish smile passed through the Lion Tiger Regiment. The leader drooled as he passed his eyes over the ice beauty's tender and full features and he felt a demonic fire ignite in his heart. Her figure was too good.

The ice queen standing before the Lion Tiger Regiment was Li Qing, of course. "Don't go too far. You guys already snatched away one my Spiritual Artifacts, and you're still not satisfied?" she growled through her teeth with an ice-cold expression.

She wanted to kill all the despicable men in front of her, but she knew that she was only a Quasi-Heavenly Transform Stage; the

leaders of this Lion Tiger Regiment were on the same level. On top of that, they had two Quasi-Heavenly Transform Stage experts. And they had numbers. The subordinates glared at her like tigers watching their prey. She definitely wouldn't be the one to benefit from a fight.

That middle-aged man of the Lion Tiger Regiment stepped forward and raised his arm. A dark red bracelet appeared on his wrist. It was shaped like a scarlet red dragon — the head and tail linked together to form a circular bracelet. A powerful Spiritual Energy rippled from it and one could hear the faint roars of a dragon.

The glow from the Draconic Spirit Bracelet nearly engulfed the body of the middle-aged man.

All eyes in the stone hall were fixed on the Draconic Spirit Bracelet. Expressions of greed flashed over their faces. When the odd signs of an emerging treasure first showed in the stone hall, Li Qing had been the first to notice. Something strange was happening to the statue's wrists, so she'd reduced the areas on those wrists to dust.

As the clay fell away, everyone saw the spiritual light bloom from the gashes. The statue was wearing a pair of dragon-shaped bracelets that flickered with spiritual light. The roars of dragons echoed through the hall.

Those definitely weren't ordinary Spiritual Artifacts. Guesses were that the Draconic Spirit Bracelets were a High Rank Spiritual Artifact.

High Rank Spiritual Artifact.

Those four words were enough to make many eyes turn red. A High Rank Spiritual Artifact could easily auction for millions of Spirit Coins back in White Dragon City. And now, the High Rank Spiritual Artifacts — the Draconic Spirit Bracelets — had appeared. Of course, it caused no small commotion.

Everyone stood paralysed in wonder, but Li Qing was the first to break from the trance. She acted first and seized one of the Draconic Spirit Bracelets without hinderance.

But the moment she snatched up the Draconic Spirit Bracelets, the two leaders of the Lion Tiger Regiment also saw their chance. The two of them joined hands and forced Li Qing to retreat. They'd also stolen one of the Draconic Spirit Bracelets.

However, those two hadn't been satisfied with that; they could tell that the two Spiritual Artifacts were a set, which meant that their true might could only be unleashed when used together. That's why they refused to let the other Draconic Spirit Bracelet fall into Li Qing's hands.

The middle-aged man gently caressed his Draconic Spirit Bracelet and smiled at Li Qing. "Hand over the other Draconic Spirit Bracelet. We promise not to hurt you."

This man was one of the Lion Tiger Regiment's two leaders — Cheng Hu. He was well-known in the White Dragon Hillock.

Li Qing grounded her teeth and her charming eyes seemed to erupt with flames. These people from the Lion Tiger Regiment were being too much.

"If you want to steal the Draconic Spirit Bracelet from my hands, you're welcome to try!" Li Qing's voice was icy-cold. She wore only one bracelet shaped like a fire-dragon on her jade-like wrist. A wild Spiritual Energy influenced the natural Spiritual Energy caused it to shake.

"Haha. Do you think you can confront our Lion Tiger Regiment all alone?" Cheng Hu coldly smiled. He wasn't bothered by whether or not the bystanders would gossip about them of taking advantage with numbers. As far as he could see, there was only benefits to be had from this situation. What would he care about gossip?

“Big Brother, we’ll act together and capture her. We’ll see how long she can act tough!” The other leader of the Lion Tiger Regiment, Cheng Shi, coldly proposed. He was the one who Mu Chen had fought before.

If the Draconic Spirit Bracelets had only been Middle Rank Spiritual Artifacts, then perhaps they wouldn’t have cared so much. Such a Spiritual Artifact might be tempting, but it wouldn’t be something that they absolutely had to get their hands on. But this was a different story with a High Rank Spiritual Artifact.

Even though there was only one difference between ranks, the power difference was like that between heaven and earth. If they obtained that High Rank Spiritual Artifact, they wouldn’t even need to fear a Heavenly Transform Stage Initial Phase expert. They could even use their connections to suppress their opponent.

In the White Dragon Hillock, the decently-strong forces all possessed Middle Rank Spiritual Artifacts. But none other than the three major forces the amount of forces that possessed High Rank Spiritual Artifact wouldn’t exceed the fingers on one hand.

Above the High Rank Spiritual Artifacts were Peerless Rank Spiritual Artifacts. However, artifacts of that level were objects that exceeded their imaginations. It’s said that Spiritual Artifacts of that level possessed their own intelligence. Profound and boundless with the power to move mountains and split seas. Forget about the White Dragon Hillock, there weren’t even that many forces on the entire Northern Heavens Continent that possessed Peerless Rank Spiritual Artifacts.

Cheng Hu nodded as he stared at Li Qing with a dark and cold expression.

Everyone else in the stone hall inwardly smacked their lips. So the two leaders were going to gang up against Li Qing. The Lion Tiger Regiment was dishonorable, indeed.

Li Qing now wore a different expression, as well; however, the

rage in her eyes hadn't diminished. She tightly clutched her Draconic Spirit Bracelet. She'd already decided that she wouldn't let them steal her half of the treasure so easily, even if that meant risking both parties to be injured.

"Move!"

The two brothers didn't give a second thought about the shushing from the crowd around them. With a shout, they rushed Li Qing together. Two powerful Spiritual Energies rippled out. The members of the crowd of less strength urgently fell back from the powerful Spiritual Energy pressure.

Li Qing grounded her teeth at the attack. She was prepared to use the Draconic Spirit Bracelet, even though she still wasn't very familiar with it.

But, before she could act, a familiar voice mockingly called from somewhere else in the stone hall. "The Lion Tiger Regiment should be a pretty well-known force in the White Dragon Hillock, right? So why are their actions so shady?"

"Who?!"

Cheng Hu and Cheng Shi halted their rush and directed their gaze to the mocking voice. Their eyes quickly found it near the broken gate. The slender and handsome youth — staring at them with a sneer — standing in front of it.

"It's that kid!"

Cheng Hu and Cheng Shi's faces changed as they immediately tried to peer into the corridor behind Mu Chen. When they realised that they couldn't see Su Xuan, they breathed out sighs of relief. As long as that girl — who seemed so gentle yet made them feel such pressure — wasn't present, then they had nothing to fear.

"Mu Chen!"

The rage in Li Qing's beautiful eyes was replaced with a look of delight. But that was quickly replaced by an expression of worry

when she, too, realised that Mu Chen was alone.

She knew that Mu Chen was a book not to be judged by its cover, but the members of the Lion Tiger Regiment weren't the usual enemies they dealt with.

"Brat, I advise you to scram while you still can. You should try not to invite disaster upon yourself." Cheng Hu slowly said as he stared at Mu Chen with a dark expression.

Mu Chen only smiled, tapped his foot, and shot across the stone hall, landing next to Li Qing. He couldn't care less about the dark looks coming from Cheng Hu and his experts. He looked at Li Qing with a clam smile and asked, "Senior Sister Li Qing, are you alright?"

A grateful look flashed through her beautiful eyes as she lightly shook her head. "We'll wait for the opportunity and make a break for it. We'll wait until we can join up with Su Xuan and the others. Then, they won't dare to act like this anymore."

Mu Chen nodded and replied, "Yes, we definitely have to leave. But first, we're going to take your things back."

He turned around to look at Cheng Hu's group, then extended his hand with a smile. "Trash of the Lion Tiger Regiment, hand it over and scram."

All of the faces in the stone hall changed to brilliantly peculiar expressions. Did that brat purposely show up to cause trouble? Did he really think that the Lion Tiger Regiment was still going to let him off?

The bystanders looked back at the two brothers and confirmed that their expressions had, indeed, darkened. Sharp bloodlust showed in their eyes.

Chapter 245 – Twin Dragon Suppression

“Brat, you’re asking for death!”

The two brothers stared Mu Chen down with ruthless and dark eyes. They didn’t expect this youth to be so insolent, especially since he’d appeared alone. To think he actually dared to be so untactful.

“Boss, kill that brat!” someone from the Lion Tiger Regiment called out. Did this stinking brat really think that their fame was nothing but empty bragging?

Cheng Shi and Cheng Hu exchanged glances. Then, the former nodded and slowly started walking forward as surges of powerful Spiritual Energy pressure poured out of him. His tone was dull as he said, “Brat, your courage is commendable, but I’ll let you know this: everyone who’s been in your situation has met a miserable end.”

He drew his fingers together and a long black sword materialised in his fist. A bloodthirsty aura emanated from it — it was clearly a powerful Spiritual Artifact.

It looked like Cheng Shi planned to take matters into his own hands.

The expression in Li Qing’s charming eyes turned cold and she prepared to take a step forward. However, she was blocked by Mu Chen.

“Let me handle it.”

Mu Chen smiled at Li Qing. At first, Li Qing had been rather worried about their situation; but for some reason, that worry had been lifted away by Mu Chen’s smile. After interacting with him for these past few days, she’d come to understand him a little. He wouldn’t be rash and act on ideas that he was uncertain about.

He’d been provoking the other party since the moment he

showed up. He wasn't stupid, he just didn't fear the other party.

He wasn't afraid, which meant that he didn't plan to leave any face for the other party.

"Be cautious, I'll watch Cheng Hu for you." Li Qing said in a low voice.

Mu Chen nodded as he slowly moved forward. Spiritual lights flickered in his hand and a cyan longsword appeared.

"One-on-one? What courage you have."

Cheng Shi grinned angrily when he saw Mu Chen move forward alone. This brat was really too arrogant. A mere Heavenly Fusion Stage strength actually dared to talk back to him — to he, who had Quasi-Heavenly Transform Stage strength. This brat really wanted to die!

All other eyes in the stone hall watched with amazed expressions. They had no idea where this youth was getting his confidence from. To think he dared to do such a stupid thing.

"Well, since you decided to come, then you should pay the price for your own words."

Who knows how many lives have stained Cheng Shi's hands over the years? Of course, he wasn't going to be lenient towards Mu Chen just because he was young. A cruel look flashed through Cheng Shi's eyes. A powerful Spiritual Energy rushed out and he took another step forward. His Spiritual Energy surged until it resembled a lion's roar that echoed and shook the stone hall.

"Brat, die!"

He flashed and reappeared in the air right in front of Mu Chen's eyes. His eyes were dark as he swung the large blade in his hands downwards. There was no fanciness in that attack, just the surge of Spiritual Energy in his body. The swing sent out waves of blade energy several dozen feet long and cracked the ground when they struck.

Cheng Shi's actions didn't have the slightest hint mercy in them. They only fully demonstrated his viciousness.

"Haaaaaa."

Mu Chen took in a deep breath and his dark pupils turned icy-cold. He firmly gripped his longsword and circulated his Spiritual Energy, which coursed strongly through his meridians before rushing out from his body. Black flames ascended along with his spiritual energy and nearly shrouded his entire body. The temperature rose in the stone hall.

Rustle!

Mu Chen growled as he thrusted his longsword. Black flames engulfed his longsword as it cut forward and met Cheng Hu's blade.

Bang!

Blade light and sword light clashed and rang with an echoing clang. The force of the impact swept out and sliced the nearby stone pillars with cuts as smooth as the surface of a mirror. The people nearby retreated for fear that they'd be caught in the crossfire.

Rumble!

One stone pillar collapsed after another in cloudy heaps of dust and rubble. Everyone turned back to the battle to see two figures standing in midair over a huge pile of destroyed stone. The two were glaring at each other with ferocious expressions, much like two predators competing for prey.

"Brat, you actually managed to take an attack from our second leader?" The members of the Lion Tiger Regiment watched with faces full of shock. They knew that even a Heavenly Fusion Stage Late Phase should've been heavily wounded by that attack. But, this young man had completely blocked it with just a sword.

"No wonder he was so arrogant. So, it seems he actually does

have some ability. But, in the end, it doesn't matter what kind of methods he has up his sleeves. Now that he's enraged our second leader, there's no way he's escaping death." someone coldly said with a smile.

Cheng Hu narrowed his eyes at the youth, who was standing in midair and knitting his brows back at him. This youth's Spiritual Energy felt a little odd. Even though it wasn't as powerful as Cheng Shi's, those black flames were extremely destructive. When they crossed blades just now, most of Cheng Shi's blade light had been corroded away by those black flames.

Li Qing sighed a breath of relief when she saw that Mu Chen hadn't been beaten back. Her jade-like hands clutched the Draconic Spirit Bracelet. The moment Cheng Hu decided to join the fight, she'd move to obstruct them.

Everyone's attention was focused on the battle between Mu Chen and Cheng Shi, so no one had noticed anything as the stone pillars had crumbled. The stone statue at the end of the hall was glowing with a barely visible light.

"So, you have some abilities, after all."

Cheng Shi tightly clutched his long blade with a dark expression. At first, he'd planned to beat this Heavenly Fusion Stage kid down; but, contrary to his expectations, this brat's Spiritual Energy was so abnormal that it was no longer possible. That strange Spiritual Energy and those black flames could even ignite and evaporate his blade light.

Mu Chen gripped his longsword as he exhaled. In reality, he was also surprised that he'd withstood Cheng Shi's attack without giving any ground. It seemed like his recent breakthrough to the Heavenly Fusion Stage Middle Phase had boosted his strength more than he'd originally thought. Although, of course, he still knew that the Nine Netherflame had been strengthened the most. The Nine Netherflame inside his Spiritual Energy was never this

powerful before he'd refined that Fire Celestial Lotus.

"A Quasi-Heavenly Transform Stage still isn't qualified to act so cocky in front of me."

Mu Chen smiled, though the smile never reached his eyes. Now that he'd finally entered the Sovereign Spirit Treasury, of course he wasn't going to give all his time to Cheng Shi. He had to end this quickly.

As Mu Chen reached that conclusion, he extended his hand. The dark light in his palm flared as the Nine-layered Pagoda appeared.

A sharp gale whipped up as the the Nine-layered Pagoda appeared and instantly grew into a massive tower a hundred feet tall. The black flames surged over the pagoda's structure and an intense Spiritual Energy rippled out.

"Roar!"

The first floor of the pagoda glowed with a golden light — a light that began moving across the walls of the pagoda. A massive golden dragon lifted out of the walls and reared its head to roar at the sky. The stone hall trembled.

Cheng Shi's eyes widened with fear. There was definitely something off about this kid. He couldn't underestimate him.

He tightened his fingers around his long blade and began circulating his Spiritual Energy without reserve. A majestic Spiritual Energy swept out like a tidal wave, enveloping the entire hall with its pressure.

Mu Chen's expression was still indifferent as he watched the golden dragon spiral around the Nine-layered Pagoda. However, he wasn't done with his attack yet; he brought his hands together and formed a strange sign.

Onom!

The moment Mu Chen formed his sign, the Nine-layered Pagoda

began buzzing as it floated in midair. The golden light started to spread from the first floor to the second.

When the golden light completed its reach for the second floor, another golden dragon appeared. It, too, roared and left the pagoda to spiral around the Nine-layered Pagoda.

The two golden dragons roared as they circled the pagoda and the natural Spiritual Aura surged violently in response. It was a shock to many eyes.

Joy bubbled up in Mu Chen's eyes at the appearance of the second golden dragon. There were nine layers to the Nine-layered Pagoda and each held a golden dragon. Before today, he'd only been able to control the dragon of the first layer — but now, he could finally summon the second one.

Mu Chen's expression burned as he studied his Nine-layered Pagoda. The Great Pagoda Art that his mother had left him wasn't an ordinary art, of course. The profound intent hidden within it would slowly reveal itself as he grew stronger. He wondered how powerful this Great Pagoda Art would be once he cultivated it to its end?

He could just see the spectacular sight of nine dragons soaring from the pagoda. He looked forward to it.

"Now, let's offer you to the pagoda!"

Mu Chen coldly smiled at Cheng Shi, who still wore a stunned expression from the appearance of the Nine-layered Pagoda. Mu Chen's he willed it to happen with his intent, without the slightest hesitation. An earth-shattering shadow and two golden dragons mercilessly bearing down on Cheng Shi. Then, he willed it to happen with his intent, without the slightest hesitation.

"Nine-layered Pagoda, Twin Dragon Suppression!"

Bang!

The stone floor collapsed and a wild energy fluctuated. The

bystanders with inferior strength coughed up blood as they retreated from the vibrations. The stone pillars exploded into fine shards.

“Slash of the Heavenly Tiger!”

The dumbstruck Cheng Shi finally recovered and reacted to the pagoda. He circulated his Spiritual Energy and burst forward with a snarl and a slash of his blade.

Boom!

Waves of Spiritual Energy rolled away from his body and took the form of a glowing lion. Blades of light sprouted from the lion’s body as it moved towards the pagoda like the slash of a sword.

Bang!

As the amazed spectators watched, the blade’s lion of light collided with the pagoda’s twin dragons. A shocking Spiritual Energy swept out.

Bang!

The entire stone hall had been leveled. Dust filled the air as the light lion continued its course and was destroyed by the pagoda with a loud noise. Cheng Shi’s face changed again.

“Wooooooshhh!”

The pagoda’s dragons weren’t weakened at all by crushing the lion; instead, they smashed into Cheng Shi at the speed of lightning.

“Pfffft!”

Cheng Shi suffered the full force of the impact and fell back with a pale face. Long tracks appeared under his feet as the pagoda drove him into the base of a pillar. He coughed up mouthfuls of blood.

Li Qing’s rosy lips fell open at the instant outcome — just a moment ago, Cheng Shi had been standing there without a scratch

on his face. Her charming eyes turned to the slender figure still hovering in midair. Mu Chen was actually this powerful?

Chapter 246 – Exchange

Mu Chen softly landed in the stone hall. Everyone wore a shocked expression as they watched Cheng Shi still coughing up blood in his sorry state. His expression was extremely different than it'd been before. This outcome had clearly been outside of his expectations.

Cheng Shi, a Quasi-Heavenly Transform Stage expert, had been defeated by a single move from a Heavenly Fusion Stage youth?

"How is that possible?!"

The members of the Lion Tiger Regiment cried with hoarse voices. The arrogant and belittling expressions had melted away from their faces and were replaced with fear as they looked upon the youth.

Mu Chen stood in the air, watching Cheng Shi, who was still hemorrhaging. A chill flashed through his eyes. Without warning, he burst forward towards Cheng Shi.

It was clear that he planned to kick the enemy while he was down.

"You dare?!"

Chen Hu snarled when he noticed Mu Chen's relentless pursuit. The Draconic Spirit Bracelet on his wrist flared with spiritual light and the roars of dragons. The bracelet itself transformed into a fiery-red flood dragon and burst towards Mu Chen with a raging Spiritual Energy.

A look of concern flashed through Mu Chen's eyes. This Draconic Spirit Bracelet was so powerful that it made his skin crawl. So, there was this much distance between a High Rank Spiritual Artifact and a Middle Rank one?

"Hmph!"

When Cheng Hu acted, he'd forgotten about Li Qing, who was still keeping an eye on them. She coldly snorted and raised her Draconic Spirit Bracelet, as well. Hers, likewise, turned into a massive dragon shrouded in surging scarlet pulses, which quickly moved to block the other scarlet dragon.

Boom! Boom!

The scarlet dragon and scarlet flood-dragon collided in midair as waves of wild Spiritual Energy rippled out. The very air itself was compressing and exploding under the force of their battle, further wrecking the ruined stone hall.

Mu Chen raised his head towards the dragons' fight with a dignified look on his face. Recently, he'd been straying away from Spiritual Artifacts — he'd come to believe that they weren't that powerful, after all. But, now that he'd witnessed the power of a genuine High Rank Spiritual Artifact, he realised just how much a Spiritual Artifact could increase one's strength in battle.

If Cheng Shi had possessed another High Rank Spiritual Artifact, then Mu Chen definitely wouldn't have defeated him so easily. In fact, they might've been caught in a long, drawn-out fight just because of a Spiritual Artifact. Then, all Cheng Shi had to do was use his greater Spiritual Energy to wear Mu Chen away.

The expression in Mu Chen's eyes flickered. Seems like he can't underestimate the effect of a Spiritual Artifact. If possible, he'd like to have a Spiritual Artifact to protect himself. Otherwise, if he ever encountered someone who possessed a High Rank Spiritual Artifact, he'd be forced on the defensive.

The thought didn't delay Mu Chen's charge towards the pale-faced Cheng Shi at all.

"Stop him!" Cheng Hu realised that Mu Chen didn't plan on letting his brother go, so he issued an enraged order. But, he was currently caught up with Li Qing, so he couldn't afford to divert his attention any further.

“Yes!”

Dozens of Lion Tiger Regiment experts responded as they rushed towards Mu Chen.

“Get lost!”

Mu Chen’s expression turned cold as he gripped his cyan longsword even harder. The black flames surged and entirely shrouded the blade as he thrust it forward. The sword light and black flames swept as one towards the members of the Lion Tiger Regiment with an earth-shattering force.

So, among those members were even Heavenly Fusion Stage experts. But still, it was impossible for them to take down Mu Chen. A dark-burning sword light arced towards them, instantly slicing through their defenses, and sent them flying backwards, while trailing blood.

Mu Chen was as fierce as a wolf or tiger as he smashed through them and reappeared in front of the pale-faced and fear-filled Cheng Shi.

“What do you want?!” Cheng Shi snarled, even he couldn’t hide the fear in his eyes. This youth was only a Heavenly Fusion Stage. How could he be so ferocious?

Mu Chen lightly smiled at him as he stepped forward. His palm trembled as the dark-burning sword light halted right before Cheng Shi’s exposed throat. Cheng Shi froze as he felt the sharp and blazing energy lap at his skin.

“Hey.” Mu Chen grabbed Cheng Shi as he stared over at the dim Cheng Hu with a smile. “I wonder how much you value your brother’s puny life?”

“Kid, if you hurt him, there’ll be an irreconcilable blood feud between yourself and my Lion Tiger Regiment. None of us will rest until you’re dead or we’ve been eradicated.” Cheng Hu threatened. He clenched his fists as rage filled his eyes.

“Cut the nonsense.” Mu Chen smiled while shaking his head. Then, his eyes turned cold. “Hand over the Draconic Spirit Bracelet in exchange for your brother’s life.”

“You…!” Cheng Hu flew into a fury as he held Mu Chen’s eyes. He looked as if he wanted to swallow Mu Chen whole.

However, Mu Chen only returned a cold smile as he brought the longsword and its black flames closer to Cheng Shi’s throat. A thin line of blood trickled down and was burned away by the black flames.

Cheng Shi’s face turned even paler. He was too terrified to even breathe due to the heat at his throat.

Chen Hu trembled as he fixed his eyes on Mu Chen. The other members of the Lion Tiger Regiment took note of the situation and didn’t dare approach.

The other spectators in the ruined stone hall clicked their tongues when they saw Mu Chen take Cheng Shi hostage. Truly, a ferocious individual. They never expected the two leaders of the Lion Tiger Regiment to fall into Mu Chen’s hands.

Li Qing also put away her Draconic Spirit Bracelet as she flew to Mu Chen’s side. Her beautiful eyes stared at Cheng Hu, whose body trembled from anger and tension.

Mu Chen coldly smiled at the expressions that ran through Cheng Hu’s face. “It looks like you think that your brother’s life is worthless compared to the Draconic Spirit Bracelet.”

Cheng Shi trembled by the ruthless intention in that sentence. The members of the Lion Tiger Regiment also looked at Cheng Hu. If he didn’t make the exchange, then many of them might end up with cold hearts.

Cheng Hu only glared at Mu Chen with deep loathing. This kid was still young, but his heart was extremely ruthless. If he didn’t exchange the Draconic Spirit Bracelet for his brother, then he

might lose the hearts of the Lion Tiger Regiment.

“Alright. I’ll give you the Draconic Spirit Bracelet! But, you must release him first!” Cheng Hu bit his teeth as those words were stifled out from the gap between his teeth.

“You’re in no position to make those demands.” Mu Chen smiled. “Hand over the Draconic Spirit Bracelet.”

Cheng Hu’s eyes turned bloodshot as he glared at Mu Chen, before he finally made his decision. He reached out and made a motion as if to pull something out of thin air. The huge scarlet flood-dragon quickly shrank down and returned to its bracelet form before landing in Cheng Hu’s palm.

Rustle.

Cheng Hu clutched the bracelet with a look of heartache in his eyes. But, ultimately, he still tossed it towards Mu Chen.

Mu Chen flicked his wrist out and pulled the Draconic Spirit Bracelet into his hand. An intense Spiritual Energy coursed from his palm, through the rest of his body. In that instant, even Mu Chen couldn’t control it and cried out in admiration. Truly a High Rank Spiritual Artifact. It was many times stronger than a Middle Rank one.

“Here.”

Mu Chen passed it to Li Qing.

Li Qing gave him a surprised look — she didn’t expect Mu Chen to simply hand it to her. After all, he was the one who’d fought hard for it. Back in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy’s Spiritual Value Hall, something like this would be worth millions of Spiritual Value Points. That wasn’t a small amount.

Li Qing looked as if she was struggling for a moment, then shook her head. “It’s your spoil of battle. I can’t take it.” She knew that the Draconic Spirit Bracelets together formed a single Spiritual Artifact, but that one still belonged to Mu Chen.

Mu Chen smiled, shook his head, and tossed it to her anyways.

Li Qing panicked when she saw Mu Chen toss it so casually and quickly dove to catch it with her jade-like hands. Anger flared in her chest as she demanded, “What are you doing?!”

She was a beautiful woman, even though she was usually a little too cold. Mu Chen was temporarily stunned by her upset expression. However, he quickly recovered and smiled. “Senior Sister Li Qing, you’re rather beautiful when you smile.”

Li Qing’s face turned red as she snorted and put the Draconic Spirit Bracelet on her wrist. Her face returned back to its usual icy-cold form.

“I’ll consider this a favor I owe you. When we return home from the mission, I’ll give you the 1,500,000 Spiritual Value Points that I’m supposed to get.”

Mu Chen smiled, “No need.”

“I don’t like owing favors. If you don’t want the points, then you should take this Draconic Spirit Bracelet back,” Li Qing pressed.

Mu Chen smiled and shrugged. Senior Sister Li Qing could be quite cute when she was being stubborn. Pity, given how cold she normally was.

Cheng Hu’s eyes nearly sprouted flames as he watched Mu Chen flirt with Li Qing. “Are you still not going to let my brother go?!”

“Alright.”

In one swift move, Mu Chen hauled Cheng Shi to his feet and printed a palm on his back. The force of the palm sent Cheng Shi flying out in an even sorrier state than he’d been before. His pale face turned even paler, if that was possible.

Cheng Hu caught his flying brother and immediately examined his pale face. His expression changed. “What did you do to him?”

“I put something inside his body. Don’t worry, he won’t die. He

just won't be able to circulate his Spiritual Energy for half an hour."

Mu Chen smiled and shrugged a very insincere apology. "Sorry, you guys have greater numbers. I was also worried that you might attack us after I let him go. Please forgive me."

Cheng Hu stared at Mu Chen with dark eyes, then flashed him a bit of a ferocious smile. "Little piece of shit! Did you really think we'd let you walk away like this?"

That caught Mu Chen's attention.

A rumbling of footsteps sounded from outside the stone hall and everyone watched as a cluster of people rushed in like a tsunami. Some of them were members of the Lion Tiger Regiment, though many others wore an entirely different uniform — all the members of this second group wore the same crest sewn onto their breast.

"It's the Nine Blade Troop!"

"The Lion Tiger Regiment and Nine Blade Troop are allies. That kid is doomed. Sigh. It's as the saying goes: 'The older piece of ginger always bites harder than the younger piece.' The Lion Tiger Regiment must have sent someone out for reinforcements."

Mu Chen knitted his brows at the whispering as he watched two individuals separate themselves from the rest of the Nine Blade Troop — clearly the leaders and Quasi-Heavenly Transform Stage experts.

The two newcomers glanced around the stone hall and laughed. "Haha. Brother Cheng Hu, I rushed over immediately after I received your message."

Cheng Hu cupped his hands. "I'll have to thank you two brothers." Then he looked at Mu Chen with a fierce expression and laughed. "Little piece of shit. Let's see if you can still dance?"

Mu Chen's expression turned cold as his black flames slowly spread over his body.

Li Qing clutched the Draconic Spirit Bracelets even harder and prepared to exert all her strength.

Ka cha.

The atmosphere in the stone hall could only be described as a state of pure hostility.

Suddenly, a strange sound rang throughout the room. Everyone frowned as they turned their eyes towards the source at the end of the stone hall.

Their faces changed.

Mu Chen and Li Qing had also turned around and their pupils shrank at the sight before them. The mottled stone statue was bursting with lights in the form of a complex array. A surge of frightening Spiritual Energy rippled from the ancient stone statue.

The stone statue slowly opened its eyes and looked upon them with it's stone-dead eyes.

Chapter 247 – Stone Guardian

Onom!

A brilliant light rippled in strings over the mottled surface of the ancient stone statue. It looked as if a complicated and cryptic Spiritual Array had been engraved on its surface.

Everyone in the stone hall was startled by the changes before them, and it took them a moment to recover from the bursts of astonishment that were evident in their eyes.

The stone statue had come to life?

Mu Chen watched the ancient stone statue with a grave expression. The stone statue itself finally opened its eyes; however, there was no emotion in those pits, even though a spiritual light flickered.

The statue slowly lowered its head and looked around the crowded stone hall. An empty and emotionless voice echoed through the hall. “Death to those who agitate the Dragon Tomb!”

As the statue spoke, it reached out to take the end of one of the many toppled stone pillars and swung it with a terrifying and mountain-moving force.

Bang! Bang!

Those who stood directly in the pillar’s path were instantly ground into paste. Others who couldn’t dodge in time were sent smashing into the walls, while spewing mouthfuls of fresh blood.

The statue’s sudden explosion of energy shocked many experts and sent them retreating with wary expressions. This thing was basically a killing god.

Mu Chen was also shocked by the statue and he rapidly circulated his Spiritual Energy in response. There was something off about the situation, but right now, they had to focus on evacuating from

the chaos caused by the stone statue.

Mu Chen turned to Li Qing and said, “Prepare to retreat.”

Li Qing lightly nodded.

The newly awakened stone statue had already started its ruthless massacre of the stone hall’s occupants. It marched forward, using the stone pillar in its hands like weapon. Everyone struck by the weapon was left either dead or crippled.

The Lion Tiger Regiment and Nine Blade Troop had the greatest numbers; therefore, they also suffered the greatest losses. Scores of people were turned into meat pulp with each swing of the stone pillar.

“Brother Cheng Hu, what’s going on with that stone statue?” The Nine Blade Troop’s leaders urgently asked with matching expressions. They’d only rushed here because they’d heard that there was a High Rank Spiritual Artifact. However, they hadn’t even caught a glimpse of this High Rank Spiritual Artifact before they encountered this rampaging stone guardian.

Cheng Hu sullenly pointed at Mu Chen and Li Qing. “The High Rank Spiritual Artifact has fallen into their hands. We can’t let them escape.” Their reinforcements had arrived after great difficulty, only to see such unexpected changes to the situation. They were unwilling to withdraw.

“First, we’ll have everyone withdraw. Then, the three of us can fight together!”

The Nine Blade Troop’s leaders hesitated. The stone guardian’s rampage could get troublesome if they stayed too long.

Cheng Hu ground his teeth. “That bastard nearly killed my brother and even dared to use him to threaten me. If you capture them, I can give up on the High Rank Spiritual Artifact. Just hand that bastard to me!”

The Nine Blade leaders lit up and laughed. “Alright. Since

Brother Cheng Hu asked us, we'll capture that brat."

Cheng Hu cursed inwardly, but only waved his hand in acceptance. The members of their parties began retreating while Cheng Hu and the Nine Blade Troop's two leaders flew forward, towards Mu Chen and Li Qing.

Li Qing was the first to sense the three experts bearing malicious intent. The stone hall was already in a state of chaos as the stone guardian continued its massacre and sent everyone fleeing in sorry states. However, not only was Cheng Hu not fleeing with them, he was running towards them. It seemed that his hatred for Mu Chen was uncontrollable.

"Hmph."

Li Qing wasn't frightened by their attacks in the slightest. With a tightening of her fingers, the Draconic Spirit Bracelets on her wrists burst with brilliant lights. Two colossal dragons — one scarlet and one flood dragon — roared and charged with astonishing power, engulfing the three enemies and destroying any remaining pillars in their path.

Now that the Draconic Spirit Bracelets had been united, it was clear that the power behind them was several times greater. The sheer strength of the artifact even surprised Mu Chen. It was truly worthy of the title of "High Rank Spiritual Artifact".

"Damn it!"

Cheng Hu's face changed when he saw the scarlet dragons rushing towards him with their baleful auras. The three figures stopped and released their Spiritual Energy without reservation. The three majestic energies whistled out from their bodies and collided with the dragons.

Bang!

Violent waves of Spiritual Energy swept out. Several unlucky experts retreated while coughing up blood.

The twin dragons roared low and deep as they stopped Cheng Hu and the other two.

A look of excitement flashed across Li Qing's face as she observed the might of the Draconic Spirit Bracelets. With this artifact, she might even be able to hold her own against a Heavenly Transform Stage Initial Phase expert. Again, this High Rank Spiritual Artifact was befitting of its title.

Mu Chen couldn't help clucking his tongue either. Even he might not win against Li Qing while she had those bracelets — if he didn't pull any powerful tricks.

But now that the Draconic Spirit Bracelet belonged to Li Qing, Mu Chen no longer coveted it. Either way, Mu Chen refused to believe that there was only one High Rank Spiritual Artifact left behind in this Sovereign Spirit Treasury.

Boom!

Just as Mu Chen was sighing at its power, his mind suddenly jumped at the explosion. He shifted his gaze towards the stone guardian and noticed that it had suddenly halted its steps. It shifted its empty gaze and stopped on Li Qing, who was still controlling the Draconic Spirit Bracelets.

The Draconic Spirit Bracelets had been taken from this stone guardian, and it was clear that it could sense the familiar ripples. Even though it didn't possess any intelligence, those ripples were enough to attract it.

Boom!

The Stone Guardian hugged the huge stone pillar and suddenly strode forward, charging in Mu Chen's direction. It lifted its stone arms and brought the pillar down on Li Qing so quickly that an ear-piercing sonic boom echoed in the chamber.

The shadow of the pillar descended and Mu Chen's face changed. He didn't think twice as he pulled Li Qing into his arms and tapped

his feet on the ground to retreat.

Bang!

The stone pillar smashed into the spot where they'd just been standing and cracks spiderwebbed from the ground. Mu Chen's scalp tingled. Even he'd be heavily injured if he took that one full-on.

This stone guardian definitely wasn't weak. Probably only a real Heavenly Transform Stage expert would be able to confront it.

"Release me."

A cold voice sounded in Mu Chen's ear and interrupted his thoughts. He looked down at the sexy ice queen in his arms and saw that those icy-cold eyes were filled with humiliation and anger.

"Those were pressing circumstances. Pressing circumstances." Mu Chen dryly explained with a chuckle, but still set her down. Li Qing seemed to have something against those of the opposite sex. But there was no way Mu Chen could've bothered over such small details earlier.

Li Qing also knew that Mu Chen hadn't tried to take advantage of her on purpose, so she didn't hang on to it. She only gave him a warning glare before she turned her attention back towards the stone guardian. When its attack had landed a miss, it'd lifted the stone pillar again to slam it down on Cheng Hu and other two who were closer.

The three of them didn't dare to take the attack and rapidly retreated. They sorrily and only narrowly dodged the guardian's attack.

"Let's leave now." Mu Chen said to Li Qing. Suddenly, he furrowed his brows and a silver medal appeared in its hand. The medal had been engraved with the image of a white dragon — the one that he'd taken from the body of the King Flame-Eater back in

the magma lake. For some reason, the medal was currently heating up.

“What’s going on?”

Mu Chen was temporarily confused by the changes he sensed in the silver medal. However, he only furrowed his brows and tucked it back into his sleeves. This was no time to ponder over it.

He didn’t notice that when he brought out the silver medal, the stone statue had frozen for a brief moment before it’d turned around. He only saw it running towards him, rumbling as it moved.

“Quick, run!”

Mu Chen’s expression changed as he called out to Li Qing and retreated. In just a few moments, he was already out of the ruined stone hall and moving faster with Li Qing beside him.

However, the stone guardian didn’t seem like it intended to give up, even as they moved further away. Its bloodthirsty aura surged.

Cheng Hu and the other two sighed in relief when they saw that the stone guardian had given up on them.

The two leaders of the Nine Blade Troop gasped for breath. The two of them had nearly been ground into fresh meat, and weren’t anxious to try again. “Brother Cheng Hu, that Stone Guardian was too powerful. It’d be hard for us to destroy it and won’t be easy for us to escape from it. I think we should let it go. That stone statue has its eye on that brat for some reason, so he’s already as good as dead.”

Cheng Hu hesitated as well, before he nodded helplessly. “Then we’ll let him go. We’ll reorganise our experts and head deeper into the palace. I believe there should be better treasures in there. As long as we are allies, I believe that we can even contend with the three major forces.”

“Alright!”

The two leaders of the Nine Blade Troop immediately agreed. They left the ruined stone hall as a group to gather their men, then immediately headed towards the depths of the spirit treasury.

In another location, Mu Chen's face was ugly as he knew that the stone guardian had targeted them. It didn't matter where they ran to, the stone guardian was always close behind.

"Mu Chen, what's going on?" Li Qing's face changed as well, why was the stone guardian targeting them?

Mu Chen thought for a bit, then said, "It looks like it's coming after me. Let's separate."

"Alright. I'll be right behind you." Li Qing nodded and quickly turned towards another direction.

The stone statue simply ignored Li Qing and her Draconic Spirit Bracelets in favor of chasing after Mu Chen.

"Damn it."

Mu Chen angrily cursed. This thing really was after him. But why? He'd never fought with it, and he didn't have the Draconic Spirit Bracelets.

"What's going on?"

Mu Chen furrowed his brows as ideas flickered through his mind. A moment later, those thoughts clicked into place and he clenched his fist. The silver medal with the white dragon appeared back in his hand.

A light flashed through his eyes as he looked at the heated silver medal. He seemed to have understood something.

So this silver medal was the thing attracting the stone guardian?

Chapter 248 – Black Basin

Rumble!

The ground trembled as the ancient stone statue charged onward with heavy steps. Any obstacles in its path were instantly crushed as it left a trail of pandemonium in its wake.

Those who happened upon the scene quickly withdrew from it. No one dared to get in the statue's path, so they simply allowed the strange duo to speed on their way.

A pitch-black Spiritual Energy blazed out from within Mu Chen's body and shrouded him. He kept his pace as something flickered in his eyes and the silver medal in his hand grew even warmer.

With a few tests, Mu Chen had confirmed that the ancient stone statue was, indeed, after him. And it was definitely because of this silver medal.

"What exactly is this silver medal?" Mu Chen wondered. This object had been so well-hidden that it'd been inside the body of the King Flame-Eating Python. If Mu Chen hadn't found the Fire Celestial Lotus by sheer luck, and if the Nine Netherbird to devour the King Flame-Eater, then there was no way he would've discovered this medal.

There was no way it could be something ordinary, since it'd been hidden so securely. Furthermore, the white dragon design on its surface told him that it was likely left behind by the White Dragon Sovereign.

"I can't keep running like this."

Mu Chen went silent. He still wanted to enter the depths of the Sovereign Spirit Treasury to fight for other treasures, but there was no way to do that with this stone statue chasing after him. First, he had to get rid of this problem.

Mu Chen tightly gripped the silver medal as he ground his teeth.

It looked like he had to try it.

As he thought that, any hesitation in his heart ceased to exist. He flashed away and ascended to a higher platform, then turned to face the ancient stone statue that was still approaching with its baleful aura.

Boom! Boom!

Cracks appeared on the ground wherever the stone statue chose to lay its feet. The sheer pressure of its approach even compressed the air until it exploded.

The stone-fisted statue grew larger in Mu Chen's field of view. Mu Chen took in a deep breath, then raised the silver medal. He stopped caring whether his idea would work as he poured his Spiritual Energy into it.

The silver medal stayed the same as Mu Chen poured his Spiritual Energy into it, and the stone statue was just as ferocious as before. If it hit Mu Chen, then he'd suffer grave injuries.

"It's not working?"

Cold sweat dripped from Mu Chen's forehead as his heart pumped rapidly, but he still didn't remove his hands from the medal. With a twist of his mind, he poured all of his Spiritual Energy into the silver medal.

Bang!

The stone statue vaulted off the ground and sailed upwards, its heavy shadow bearing down on Mu Chen, and firmly landed on the platform.

Mu Chen tensed and turned away, preparing to run.

Onom!

But before Mu Chen could make his escape, the silver medal finally trembled. The white dragon on its surface seemed to come to life as it roared low and deep. A white light poured forth from

the plate and shined upon the body of the ancient stone statue.

Mu Chen was temporarily paralysed by the sudden white light. However, the bloodthirsty stone statue suddenly shrank back. In the time it took for a few breaths, the statue had shrunk down to the size of a palm and flew towards Mu Chen.

Mu Chen reached out and caught it.

“This...” Mu Chen studied the stone statue in his palm with a look of amazement. It was so small and mottled. A faint pattern of light glowed on its surface. But this small thing had been chasing him all over the place just a moment ago.

Mu Chen turned to the silver medal in his other hand with an equal look of amazement. It seemed that this stone guardian was something akin to a Spiritual Artifact, but could only be controlled through the silver medal in his hand.

“This medal really is something.” Mu Chen smacked his lips as he tucked the medal away. He kept the tiny statue in his hand and played around with it — with a move of his intent, he poured a surge of Spiritual Energy into it.

Onom.

The stone statue exploded with dazzling light and expanded. In a few breaths, it turned back into the ten-foot tall stone statue.

But this time, the statue didn’t launch any attacks at him; on the contrary it stood next to him, quietly and at attention, like the most loyal guard.

Excitement appeared in Mu Chen’s eyes as he observed the stone statue — he could sense that right now, he possessed some amount of control over it.

Bang!

Following Mu Chen’s intent, the stone statue threw a punch at the stone pillar next to it, thoroughly crushing it. That violent

strength even made Mu Chen's eyelids twitch. Based on his estimations, even a Heavenly Transform Stage Initial Phase expert would have to dodge its sharp attacks.

It was a pure fighting machine.

"Formidable!" Mu Chen exclaimed in admiration. Another treasure worthy of the Sovereign Spirit Treasury.

This statue must have withstood several hundreds of years worth of weathering, but it still possessed such strength. The name of Sovereign was not in vain.

Even though he hadn't obtained a High Rank Spiritual Artifact, this stone guardian was still an extremely satisfactory harvest. If Mu Chen ever encountered Bai Dong again, he wouldn't need to act so afraid.

Shhhhhuuu!

Sounds of sonic booms resounded from afar. With a wave of his hand, Mu Chen ordered the guardian to return to its smaller form. The statue landed on his palm and he stowed it away inside his Mustard Seed Bracelet.

Li Qing reappeared a short distance away and quickly joined him. She breathed out a sigh of relief when she saw that Mu Chen was fine and well. Her charming eyes looked around as she asked, "Where's the stone guardian?"

"It's settled." Mu Chen smiled.

Li Qing was shocked and confused. Mu Chen had "settled" that terrifying stone guardian? Just how much strength was this guy hiding away?

She gave Mu Chen a strange look, but didn't press him for details. After all, everyone had their own secrets. She had no specific reason to ask that much from him.

"Well then, we should join up with Su Xuan and the others.

They're likely deeper inside the Sovereign Spirit Treasury," Li Qing suggested. Right now, there were many forces heading deeper into the Spirit Treasury. If they didn't hurry, they might end up missing a few opportunities.

Mu Chen nodded. He was deeply interested in the Sovereign Spirit Treasury, especially since they'd found such powerful treasures — the Fire Celestial Lotus, the Draconic Spirit Bracelets, and the Stone Guardian — outside of that area. He wondered what astounding treasures would be hidden within the treasury's depths.

If he ever got his hands on those hidden treasures, then his fighting strength would definitely surge. He wouldn't need to fear anyone, even a true Heavenly Transform Stage.

The two of them made no more delays. They identified their path and pushed their speeds to the limit as they flew into the bowels of the Sovereign Spirit Treasury.

Along the way, they still heard the sounds of clashing weapons echoing from the main hall; however, neither of them paused. Roughly half an hour later, they noticed that the quantity of stone halls and the number of branching paths had decreased. As they continued, the landscape before them suddenly opened up into that of a vast desert.

Faint lights streaked overhead, like bolts of lightning as they sped deeper into the desert.

Mu Chen and Li Qing exchanged glances and moved as one, following those lights. A few minutes later, they slowed down.

They were arriving at the heart of the desert, marked by a huge black basin. Many figures stood at the basin's rim.

A powerful Spiritual Energy emanated from this place — even the natural Spiritual Energy of this area rippled in response.

Many experts were gathered here.

Even Mu Chen was surprised by the sheer number of experts gathered here. These guys moved quick.

The two of them also landed by the basin, then edged closer to the rim. They realised that down inside the depression of the earth were several black stone pillars that soared to the skies.

Each pillar was nearly a thousand feet tall and decorated with formerly picturesque images that'd been blurred due to the passage of time. Together, these pillars filled the entire basin.

The basin surged with an indescribable aura and, for some reason, their auras trembled in reply. It was like meeting one's superior.

Even the natural Spiritual Energy had quieted under the pressure of the basin's aura, as if it was incapable of fighting back.

This was a Sovereign's prestige.

Everyone's expression had turned solemn. This aura was simply far too powerful for them to handle, even though it was only a remnant of what it once was. If a genuine Sovereign ever appeared, no one present would have the guts or mind to react.

This was an absolute suppression.

Perhaps in the eyes of a Sovereign, everyone here would be nothing more than ants.

Mu Chen inhaled and clenched his fists as he felt the remnant Sovereign aura permeate the heavens and earth. Dense flames poured from his pupils.

Sovereign.

What a powerful term that was.

One day, when he manages to ascend to that level, he'll stand next to Luo Li and shield her from the wind.

Then, he'd search for his mother, as he'd promised his father. The next time he returned to the Northern Spiritual Realm, he

won’t be alone.

He was still a far cry from that goal, but he believed that he’d reach it one fine day!

A vicious and ferocious gaze locked onto Mu Chen and Li Qing the moment they landed at the edge of the basin.

Mu Chen sensed it and turned towards the source. His eyes narrowed immediately. There were several dozen people over there, all wearing white robes. At the front of that group stood Bai Dong and the grey-robed elder.

Mu Chen lightly smiled back at Bai Dong’s vicious glare. Indeed, they meet again.

Bai Dong’s expression turned even more sinister at Mu Chen’s smile, before it finally turned cruel.

Bai Dong took a single step forward as he stared at Mu Chen as if he were a ghost. His bloodthirsty voice filled the air around him.

“So, you’re still alive, you little piece of shit. But that’s fine. I thought you died too easily, anyways. This time, I’ll catch you and chop off all your limbs!”

Chapter 249 – The Power of the Stone Statue

Bai Dong's voice was filled with bloodlust and malice as it filled the air around him and attracted the attention of many. When they saw that Bai Dong's rage was directed towards one particular young man, they were startled, then their expressions turned to pity. This young man dared to provoke White Dragon City's Young Master? Did he not know that Bai Dong always took revenge on any grievances he has suffered?

But their sympathy was nothing more than sympathy; no one came to Mu Chen's aid. White Dragon City was one of the three most powerful forces within a thousand miles of the White Dragon Hillock. Only the Heavenly Dipper Sword Faction and the Earthen Way Sect could stand up to them; all others were somewhere below in strength. There hadn't been enough time for the news about the White Dragon Sovereign's Spirit Treasury to spread, and as a result, any forces larger than these three hadn't had enough time to arrive.

It'd be unwise to provoke them here.

Mu Chen smiled at Bai Dong's savage expression. "Your face looks unbalanced with that one ear hanging. Should I help you fix that?"

Bai Dong was so pissed that his eyes turned red. All these years in the White Dragon Hillock and he'd never suffered anything like this. This was one of the greatest humiliations he'd ever suffered. He definitely had to avenge this blood debt.

"Elder Qiu, catch him!" Bai Dong said through his teeth. "This time, don't let him die so easily. Since the heavens have seen fit to put him before me once again, then I want to torment him. To let him know that living is a painful thing!"

The grey-robed Elder Qiu nodded and watched Mu Chen with an expression of dark amazement. He felt disbelief. How did this kid

escape from the magma lake? Could he possess some sort of Spiritual Artifact that allowed him to hide in those boiling depths?

Elder Qiu shook his head. It didn't matter anymore. Since this brat was still alive, then all that mattered was that he had to defeat him again.

He fixed his eyes on Mu Chen and slowly took a step out from their neat ranks. A majestic Spiritual Energy swept out and revealed his strength as a Heavenly Transform Stage Initial Phase.

"Heavenly Transform Stage Initial Phase..."

Li Qing's face changed as she watched the grey-robed elder. She didn't know what'd happened between Mu Chen and these guys, but she knew that she'd never abandon Mu Chen.

"Mu Chen, I'll deal with him. If I use the Draconic Spirit Bracelet, I won't be any weaker than him." Li Qing said through her teeth. Since they still haven't met up with Su Xuan and the others, she had to be the one to move.

Mu Chen shook his head. "Senior Sister Li Qing, if you act, then those white robes back there will act too... Plus, they're probably the ones who ambushed us in the forest. They're from the Demonic Dragon Palace."

"What?!"

Li Qing's face abruptly changed as astonishment filled her charming eyes. The White Dragon City was actually a subordinate to the Demonic Dragon Palace?

"Let me deal with that old man. Right now, experts are gathering here like clouds, so White Dragon City, won't show their true strength so easily. I'll string them along until Senior Sister Su Xuan arrives. Then, we can confidently face them," Mu Chen explained.

"But you..." Li Qing was alarmed as she tried to stop him. However, she paused as she thought about all of the hidden cards

that Mu Chen had up his sleeve — he had so many that even she couldn't see the end of them. If Mu Chen wanted to act, then he probably had a way to protect himself.

"Alright, then. You be careful." Li Qing said as she nodded.

Mu Chen nodded back and stepped forward, though his eyes were pinned on the grey-robed elder with a chill in his eyes. That old fart had thrown him into the magma lake earlier. If the Nine Netherflames hadn't protected Mu Chen, he wouldn't have escaped from that. Now that they were facing each other again, Mu Chen wasn't going to make it as easy.

"Little brat, it looks like your life isn't as small as I thought."

The grey-robed elder looked down on Mu Chen, clenched his fist and a black spear appeared with a flash. The elder was a straightforward man. He cut the small talk as his Spiritual Energy surged, affecting the Spiritual Aura around them, then thrust the spear forward.

Shuuuuu!

The Spiritual Aura surged and it seemed as if the spear had torn the very air apart. The image of a spear, tens of feet in length, flashed like lightning towards Mu Chen.

Many of the spectators trembled in fear at the sheer strength behind that attack. This old man was ruthless; he was so cautious, even though he was only facing a Heavenly Fusion Stage youth.

Mu Chen coldly smiled and took a large leap forward. His five fingers curled into a fist. With a low snarl, he punched.

Boom!

A pitch-black Spiritual Energy swept out from Mu Chen's fist like a tidal wave. Six Limitless Death Seals formed in an instant and the natural Spiritual Aura roiled violently.

Shuuuu!

The Six Limitless Death Seals appeared, joined head-to-tail, and flew out. In a flash, they heavily collided with the sharp spear light.

Boom!

A violent Spiritual Energy swept outwards. A black light streaked out like a comet and cut through the spear light like a hot knife through butter, then continued towards the grey-robed elder.

A commotion broke out among the spectators. They thought that Mu Chen should've been holed up on the defense against this genuine Heavenly Transform Stage expert. But who could've imagined that it was the other way around? Not only was Mu Chen not guarding, but he was actually exerting such frightening attacks.

Of course, these people could tell how powerful Mu Chen's attack was. The light seal was clearly a rather powerful Spiritual Art; otherwise, he wouldn't have broken the grey-robed elder's attack so easily.

"Hmph."

The elder watched the black streak soar towards him and sensed the overbearing ripples it contained. He focused his eyes and coldly snorted from his mouth as his claw tore down.

"Heaven Tearing Demonic Dragon Claw!"

Roar!

Surges of black Spiritual Energy, similar to a gigantic dragon's claw, tore towards Mu Chen's attack. There was a chill to it, as if it could even shred mountains into pieces.

Shuuuuu!

The black dragon claw tore through the sky and met the black light. A surge of violent Spiritual Energy emanated out as the light was broken apart.

Even though the claw had destroyed the streak, it'd suffered many cracks and ultimately crumbled into pieces.

The grey-robed elder burst forward like a wisp of green smoke and appeared before Mu Chen in an instant. The spear in his hand pierced the air between them as he aimed for Mu Chen's throat.

Mu Chen's eyes were cold as he tapped the air with his finger. The Nine-layered Pagoda appeared in a flash and obstructed the spear like a shield.

Dang!

A metallic clash rang out with a violent Spiritual Energy. Mu Chen retreated ten steps and the Nine-layered Pagoda was sent flying.

Onom.

However, as the Nine-layered Pagoda fell back, it circulated its black light and expanded even further until it was a hundred feet tall. Then, it turned around and bore down on the grey-robed elder.

"Get lost!"

The grey elder barked as he brandished his black spear and formed a series of spear images, similar to soaring black dragons. However, the Nine-layered Pagoda withstood those attacks, though it'd been forced back a little more.

"Dammit!"

The grey-robed elder sent out another spear, this time battering the Nine-layered pagoda upwards by a thousand meters. A cold light flashed across his eyes and his image blurred for a moment.

"Demon Soaring Step!"

Shhhhhuu!

His form pierced through the skies like a demonic dragon. In the next instant, he reappeared over Mu Chen's head, even as

countless pairs of eyes watched him. His expression was grave as he swiped another claw at Mu Chen.

Roar!

A torrential Spiritual Energy surged from that claw and was aimed down towards Mu Chen's head. It looked like Mu Chen would be torn apart, if he was hit by that attack!

Li Qing cried out in alarm as she clutched the Draconic Spiritual Bracelet on her wrists. "Mu Chen!" The bracelets glowed with a blinding spiritual light. It was clear she intended to move.

"Brat, die!" The grey-robed elder barked as he continued his vicious attacks.

Mu Chen raised his head and looked at the elder's fierce attacks. However, instead of panicking, his black pupils were painted with a chill.

The grey-robed elder sensed that chill and suddenly felt uneasy.

"It's not that easy for you to kill me!"

Mu Chen smiled at the grey-robed elder as he curled his fingers. An old stone statue appeared and started glowing and expanding. A mottled fist heavily collided with the black dragon claw with a punch that carried mountain-shattering strength.

Dong!

The sky trembled when the two clashed, and surges of violent energy swept out.

Bang!

Everyone saw the grey-robed elder go into shock as his body was violently jolted and he spat out a mouthful of blood. He flew back a few thousand meters and was in a sorry state.

"Huaaa!"

The entire area near the black basin exploded with cries of shock.

The elder turned his eyes towards Mu Chen. He didn't know how it'd happened, but a ten-foot-tall stone statue had suddenly materialised in front of Mu Chen. The statue's body flickered with a light as it maintained its stance with its fist in front — clearly the fist that'd sent Elder Qiu flying backwards.

"It's that stone statue?!" Even Li Qing felt shocked. But now she understood. So Mu Chen had actually subdued the stone statue. She didn't know what methods he'd pulled to achieve that, but it's no wonder why he didn't fear the the grey-robed elder. So he had such confidence.

Rustle!

Mu Chen watched the grey elder sail backwards. Then he tapped his foot on the stone statue's shoulder and flew down like a large roc. His cold eyes were fixed on Bai Dong.

This guy was simply too vicious — even Mu Chen was pissed at him, and that's saying something. He'd finally decided to deal with Bai Dong now, while he had the chance. Since there was already an irreconcilable blood debt between them, Mu Chen was no longer worried about grudges.

"You!"

When Bai Dong saw Mu Chen flying towards him, his face finally changed.

Chapter 250 – Forced Out

Rustle!

Mu Chen held his indifferent expression as he appeared before Bai Dong in a flash. His fingers twitched and a cyan longsword appeared. Without a moment's hesitation, the blade became shrouded with Spiritual Energy that burned black and aimed towards Bai Dong's throat.

Bai Dong's facial expression changed at Mu Chen's sudden action; but fortunately for him, he wasn't weak. Even though he hadn't reached the Heavenly Transform Stage yet, he was a Heavenly Fusion Stage Late Phase and had the strength to back it up. He snarled with fury and punched as his Spiritual Energy soared.

"Sky Crumbling Demonic Dragon Fist!"

His Spiritual Energy surged as his fist travelled forward like a massive black demonic dragon uncoiling its body. The force of the movement seemed as if it could turn the sky to dust. It was clear that Bai Dong's Spiritual Energy wasn't an ordinary one.

The chill in Mu Chen's eyes grew even colder as he switched from blade to fist. Six Limitless Death Seals formed in an instant, causing the natural Spiritual Energy around them to roil violently. Like six rays of dark of light, they streaked through the air and met Bai Dong's Demonic Dragon Fist in a hard collision.

Boom!

The sound of the collision thundered as the violent spiritual ripples spread out. For a moment, Bai Dong's face had turned ghostly pale, but then a dark red flush smeared across his face. He coughed up a mouthful of blood as he flew backwards.

Mu Chen's six Limitless Death Seals at full force could even withstand an attack from the grey-robed elder — a Heavenly Transform Stage Initial Phase. Bai Dong wanted to defeat it with

his Heavenly Fusion Late Phase cultivation? Simply a fantasy.

“You said want to kill me? I’m afraid you’re not capable of that!”

Mu Chen coldly smiled with a sharp edge to it. In a flash, he’d burst forward and appeared before Bai Dong again, and the cyan longsword in his hands ruthlessly stabbed towards the latter’s throat.

Cries of surprise rose from everyone watching the scene from around the rim of the black basin. How could this youth be so ruthless? He even dared to kill Bai Dong? Didn’t he fear the wrath of White Dragon City?

The grey-robed elder’s face took on a drastically different expression. “You dare!?”

But there was too much distance between them. He couldn’t assist in time.

Mu Chen ignored him as he looked down on Bai Dong, who was watching the sword bear down on him with a face full of shock.

This was a guy who’d always fulfilled his grudges. It’d be better for Mu Chen to eliminate him early and avoid any future twists and turns.

Shuuuu!

Mu Chen’s sword edge was sharp; he’d reached Bai Dong in only an instant. However, just before he could land the killing blow, an exquisitely fine light burst from within the group white-robed White Dragon City experts.

Ding!

A violent gale tore through the sky and clashed against Mu Chen’s blade with astonishing swiftness. Mu Chen’s blade trembled under the gale’s strength and he even retreated two steps.

“Who?!”

He swept his eyes over the white robes with an annoyed and dangerous chill in his eyes. Suddenly, his eyes pinpointed the source and he laughed loudly. “So it’s the City Lord of White Dragon City! Since you’re here, why don’t you show yourself? Why run and hide? Were you trying to take advantage of our distraction and steal the Sovereign Spirit Treasury?”

His voice, wrapped in Spiritual Energy, resounded throughout the heavens and earth. The booming quality of it shocked many of those present at the site and they widened their eyes in disbelief. Especially those from the Earthen Way Set and Heavenly Dipper Sword Faction. The City Lord had personally shown up?

The grey-robed elder’s expression changed at Mu Chen’s challenge. Was this kid trying to provoke Bai Dong?

Numerous pairs of eyes scrutinised the crowd of white robes, and under their watchful gazes, a single figure stepped forward. He removed his white robe to reveal the face of a middle-aged man — it really was the City Lord of White Dragon City, Bai Xuan!

Bai Xuan lightly smiled. “What a deep scheming youth.”

His eyes were filled with a cold light as he stared back at Mu Chen. He’d originally intended to hide himself — he never expected to be forced out by a kid like this.

Mu Chen glared back. “It looks like your White Dragon City is determined to obtain this Sovereign Spirit Treasury.”

Mu Chen could sense a tyrannical Spiritual Energy rippling from this man. He must be a Heavenly Transform Stage Middle Phase at the very least — no doubt extremely powerful.

Bai Xuan smiled as if it was a given. “Of course, we must do our best to win such fantastic treasures.” He shook his head. “Since you’ve forced me to show myself, I must show you my appreciation.”

The moment his words landed, the glint in Bai Xuan’s eyes

turned sharp and an astonishingly powerful surge of Spiritual Energy burst like a gale from his body. He stepped forward, his movements were like that of a ghost, and headed straight for Mu Chen.

Mu Chen's expression changed as he retreated.

"Can you even escape?"

Bai Xuan coldly smiled. In a flash, he'd caught up to Mu Chen and threw out a palm. The Spiritual Energy surged like a tidal wave, stretching continuously in a multitude of directions. There was a never-ending chorus of explosions.

Mu Chen backed off, too cautious to go head-to-head against such power. With a will of his intent, the Stone Guardian appeared before him, stepped forward, and pounded its fist down on Bai Xuan.

Dong!

Mu Chen could feel the reverberations from the collisions as the Stone Guardian was sent sailing backwards.

Mu Chen's expression turned grave at that. Bai Xuan was truly powerful — no wonder he was the City Lord of White Dragon City. The Stone Guardian was forced to retreat after taking only one of his fists.

"Something that weak won't be able to protect your puny little life." Bai Xuan explained with an expressionless face as he pressed forward again. His fingers formed a claw as he swiped downwards.

"Heaven Tearing Demonic Dragon Claw!"

Boom!

The five fingers raked through the sky, as if tearing the space down with it. Bai Xuan's "Heaven Tearing Demonic Dragon Claw" was far more powerful than the grey-robed elder's.

Mu Chen's cold expression concentrated on Bai Xuan's ferocious

attacks as he put his hands together in preparations to circulate his Spiritual Art. But before he could execute it, a torrent of spiritual light poured from behind him, shrouding his body in a sort of Spiritual Energy barrier.

Boom!

The razor-sharp claw slashed at the barrier with violent bursts of Spiritual Energy, but couldn't tear it down.

"Who?!" Bai Xuan's gaze turned cold.

A sweet and gentle voice drifted from somewhere near the end of the crowd. "City Lord of White Dragon City, you are someone who has great renown. Yet you dared to act so ruthlessly against a mere youth. Are you not afraid that others may say it is unbefitting of your station?"

Everyone turned their heads towards the voice to see three figures swiftly flying towards them — led by a charming and sweet-looking young woman in a white dress.

"Su Xuan," Li Qing couldn't suppress the joy she felt upon seeing them. Su Xuan had finally caught up with them.

Bai Xuan's indifferent expression was temporarily replaced with a sharp one as he looked over Su Xuan. He could sense that her Spiritual Energy wasn't any inferior than his. It seemed that this girl was the Rank 3 of the Heavenly Ranking in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, Su Xuan.

The students nurtured by the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy were powerful indeed. They were so young, yet they could rival the best disciples of the Demonic Dragon Palace.

"The Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy really does have its methods." Bai Xuan applauded as he lightly smiled at Su Xuan.

She returned the smile with the words, "We thank White Dragon City for your praises." She raised a jade-like hand to disperse the protective barrier around Mu Chen and allowed him to join her.

“You’re always causing trouble. It’s barely been half a day, yet you’ve already started a fight with White Dragon City.” Su Ling’er scolded as she glared her doe eyes at Mu Chen.

“They’re the ones who ambushed us last night.” Mu Chen said slowly. “They’re from the Demonic Dragon Palace.”

“What?!”

Su Ling’er and Guo Xiong looked startled. Even Su Xuan slightly narrowed her eyes. White Dragon City wasn’t known for having a long history, but they’d already ruled this area for over a decade. None of these young students had expected it to be just another chess piece for the Demonic Dragon Palace. It seemed this organisation was truly deep and unfathomable. No wonder the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy even held some fear and restraint towards them.

Even from a distance, Bai Xuan noticed the astonished expressions on their faces. It looked like they’d just come to some realisation. He couldn’t help the odd smile that crept over his face as he gave them one last meaningful glance before ducking back into the throng of White Dragon City experts. Now that Su Xuan had appeared, it wouldn’t be easy to kill Mu Chen. Furthermore, there was a more pressing matter that required his attention.

As long as they obtained that item, it would be easy to kill those brats.

The unaffiliated experts around the basin warily eyed Bai Xuan as he rejoined his people — especially the Heavenly Dipper Sword Faction and the Earthen Way Sect. They exchanged glances amongst themselves and finally seemed to settle on some unspoken agreement. It was clear that they intended to combine their strengths to deal with the strongest White Dragon City.

Bai Xuan’s sharp attention hadn’t lost that fact; however, he only afforded them a cold smile and seemingly wasn’t bothered by them.

“City Lord, it looks like that brat dragged us out into the spotlight,” The grey-robed elder reported with a grim expression.

Bai Xuan smiled nonchalantly. “They’re nothing more than annoying locusts. What are they capable of, anyways? Did they think that my White Dragon City was only capable of that much?”

By this point, Bai Dong had caught up as well, although he was still throwing vicious glances in Mu Chen’s direction. “Father, what do we need from this place?”

Bai Xuan knit his brows as he frowned. “I’ve received orders to obtain the most precious object from the White Dragon Sovereign’s Spirit Treasury. As for the specifics, even I’m not sure.”

“The most precious object?” the grey-robed elder echoed as he turned his eyes towards the bottom of the black basin. “Then, it should be here, because this is the place where the White Dragon Sovereign died!”

Bai Dong seemed doubtful. “However, it doesn’t look like there’s a Spirit Treasury here.”

His father studied the basin for a moment, then slowly replied, “That’s because the seal here is still intact. It looks like we only need to wait for the sun and moon to come together. When the natural Spiritual Energy turns chaotic, the seal will weaken. Then, all we need to do is destroy it and the the Spirit Treasury will appear.”

“Right now…all we have to do is wait.”

He finished his words and closed his eyes with a silent finality.

Bai Xuan wasn’t the only one who knew about that — that much was clear. Experts from other forces could also sense the abnormalities around the black basin, and chose to wait instead of act blindly.

The wait stretched for nearly half a day before the sky and land

turned dark and the natural Spiritual Aura between the heavens and earth began to fluctuate.

Just as the Spiritual Aura between the heavens and earth fell into disorder, Mu Chen's eyes caught something. Down in the black basin, the thousand-foot-tall mysterious black stone pillars started to faintly glow.

"The Spirit Treasury appearing!"

Mu Chen's heart trembled and his eyes blazed with passion.

Chapter 251 – Sovereign Appears

Onom onom.

The space between heaven and earth was overshadowed with darkness as the natural Spiritual Aura of the land turned chaotic. A faint mist began curling up from the earth due to all the Spiritual Aura gathering towards this place.

Everyone noticed the sudden changes and took in the details of the scene, quietly preparing for battle. This was the resting place of a Sovereign; it was best to remain cautious. With their strength, they were only qualified to wander around the White Dragon Hillock; if they ever met a genuine Sovereign, they would be weaker than an ant.

Even though there was no longer a Sovereign here, all they needed was some of his legacy treasures to turn it into a life-threatening situation.

Mu Chen and his companions were also on their guard as they stared into the black basin. The colossal black pillars were beginning to give off light, bit by bit.

As the light grew stronger, they could barely make out a pattern on the surface of the black pillars. A light pattern that seemed alive and wiggling.

Shuuuu!

As the patterns thrashed, the intensity of the light suddenly exploded. The rays raced out from the basin, interweaving and blanketing the basin in thick layers of light.

Rumble!

It sounded like thunder. The natural Spiritual Energy surged and rushed towards the center of the basin in a torrent. Everyone's expressions turned grim, though none of them rashly charged in; they knew that they'd only be crushed to death by the violent

surges of Spiritual Energy.

Su Xuan turned her face towards the basin and frowned. “The black basin has been covered.” Up ahead, the light was slowly spreading out, until it’d become a solid screen several thousand feet in diameter and blocked their view of the basin.

Mu Chen frowned at the frightening Spiritual Energy rippling from the screen. “This must have been left behind by the White Dragon Sovereign to keep prying eyes away from the place where he fell.” This wasn’t something he could break. If he tried to force it, he might incur a counter-strike, and he’d be as good as dead.

Guo Xiong smiled bitterly. “This Sovereign Spirit Treasury really isn’t easy to reach.” They’d already endured so much difficulty to reach this place; they hadn’t imagined this light screen to be yet another obstacle in their path.

“Let’s study the situation first,” said Mu Chen. Su Xuan and the rest nodded in agreement. Right now, the best they could do was observe the changes.

The other experts’ faces also turned ugly when they sensed the light screen. How were they supposed to reach the Sovereign Spirit Treasury with this light screen in place?

Numerous pairs exchanged looks and the area grew extremely silent for a moment.

Suddenly, a courageous bark sounded from a skinny, middle-aged man in the crowd. “Hey, everyone! Let’s work together to destroy this light screen. Even though this probably belongs to the White Dragon Sovereign, it’s still several hundred years old, at least. Plus, there’s no one controlling it. With so many of us here, it’s possible for us to destroy it!”

His announcement attracted quite a few nods and verbal agreements from the others. After all, the light screen wasn’t going to disappear on its own.

The concurring voices increased in volume as more and more people demonstrated their willingness to cooperate.

“Good, we’ll act together!”

Tens of thousands of bodies rose into the sky, creating a surge of Spiritual Energy in a majestic scene.

Su Ling’er was eager, as she asked, “Are we going to help out, too?” She was fond of lively events, and the prospect of tens of thousands of people acting together was getting her excited.

Mu Chen helplessly shook his head. Su Xuan also glared at Su Ling’er and said, “Stop being rash. This light screen was left behind by the White Dragon Sovereign to protect the treasures that he left behind. Destroying it with only this many people is nothing but a dream. Those guys don’t know how powerful a genuine Sovereign is. There are probably a few among them who know, but they’re still just fanning the flames.

Su Ling’er pouted at Su Xuan’s lecture, but she did quiet down. She understood that she shouldn’t be rash in these situations.

Mu Chen nudged them to look in another direction, where Bai Xuan and his soldiers were looking around with frigid expressions. Bai Dong wore a ridiculing smile as he mocked the experts who were clearly overestimating themselves. “Look at those guys from White Dragon City. They’re waiting to watch a good show.”

“Watch out for them. If they’re really from the Demonic Dragon Palace, then they’ve probably already prepared something.” A dark light flashed through Su Xuan’s eyes as she continued, “When he was alive, the White Dragon Sovereign was also from the Demonic Dragon Palace. But for some unknown reason, he betrayed the Demonic Dragon Palace. The Demonic Dragon Palace suffered heavy losses while pursuing him. That was the chance our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy was waiting for, so that they could eliminate them with just a single move.”

Mu Chen lightly nodded in understanding. Bai Xuan and his experts weren't very surprised by the appearance of this light screen; they already expected it.

Shuuuu! Shhhhhu!

As Mu Chen and his allies conversed, the tens of thousands of experts had already finished gathering their Spiritual Energy into one. In the next instant, they fired it with an earth-shattering cry. Even the heavens and earth trembled as the tens of thousands of separate Spiritual Energies streaked across the sky and continuously rained down on the powerful light screen. The sheer volume of their attacks filled the entire black basin with a monumental air.

Mu Chen fixed his eyes on the scene. Even a Heavenly Completion Stage expert would try to avoid having tens of thousands of people bombard them. He wondered whether the White Dragon Sovereign's light screen would withstand such a bombardment.

Rumble!

Tens of thousands of attacks hammered down, and the light screen suddenly fluctuated and rippled. Rays of light began gathering at the screen's middle, before they slowly took on the fuzzy shape of a human figure.

The light slowly died as the figure appeared — a handsome youth, white-robed and slender with his long hair draped around his shoulders. However, there was no black in his milky-white eyes. An extremely odd detail.

The white-robed figure was quietly seated over his screen of light. A few stray lines of light circled around him, like a roaring white dragon.

With the appearance of this white-robed spirit came an indescribable movement in the natural Spiritual Energy. One filled

with palatial might.

Even the heavens and earth seemed to tremble under the pressure of his aura.

The natural Spiritual Energy coiled around him, allowing him free reign over it.

“Sighhh.”

His white pupil-less eyes stared at the Spiritual Energy barrage raining down on him. Then, he lightly waved his palm, as if he was only sighing in dismissal.

Onom! Onom!

A hundred feet away from where he sat, the overflowing Spiritual Energy froze in an instant. The next instant, it seemed as if the space around it had frozen as well.

Sssss!

Everyone instantly drew in a breath of cold air.

The white-robed figure lightly flicked his fingers and the silent Spiritual Energy suddenly became unstuck. Even as they watched, the energies suddenly reversed their paths and turned on the ones who’d launched them.

Pffft!

A cloud of blood rose up in the sky as half of the ten thousand experts coughed blood and fell back. The remaining half turned pale and retreated of their own will, with shock in their eyes.

“That’s...!”

Someone cried out in a frightened voice as he indicated the white-robed spirit seated before the light screen. Fear filled his eyes as his voice trembled. “That’s the White Dragon Sovereign?!!”

The White Dragon Sovereign!

It seemed as if the entire sky had fallen silent just to hear those

words. Countless faces turned pale and filled with fear, their owners regretting their rash actions.

“That’s the White Dragon Sovereign?” Su Ling’er said in surprise as she looked at the figure.

“That’s indeed the White Dragon Sovereign. However, I’m afraid that’s only a remnant Spiritual Energy image.” Su Xuan sighed. “Just a remnant Spiritual Energy image and yet it possesses such power. Sovereigns are fearsome, indeed.”

Mu Chen also nodded his head slowly. This was the strength of a Sovereign? It was power truly worthy of ruling a territory of this large continent.

Around the black basin, many bodies were paralysed with fear, too afraid to even move. They knew this figure wasn’t the real White Dragon Sovereign, but also knew that it’d be all too easy for them to be slain.

As everyone was feeling terrified by the light spirit, a low mocking laugh sounded out. “Haha! It’s just a Spiritual Energy image that’ll soon disperse. White Dragon Sovereign. How impressive.”

In their stupor, everyone turned their eyes towards the source of the laughter — the City Lord of White Dragon City. Bai Xuan slowly walked forward as he coldly regarded the spirit.

“Is he crazy?” A confused expression crossed everyone’s faces. Even though Bai Xuan was considered powerful among them, he was still nothing more than an ant to this remnant Spiritual Energy image of the White Dragon Sovereign. Yet he actually dared to provoke the White Dragon Sovereign?

The white-robed spirit directed his pupils towards Bia Xuan and everyone sensed the natural Spiritual Energy churn violently in response.

His voice rang in the air. “The Demonic Dragon Palace really has

sent someone.”

“White Dragon Sovereign, since you’ve already betrayed the Demonic Dragon Palace, then I don’t need to pay my respects you. What a pity that the Sovereign of a generation fell here. What a pity.” Bai Xuan coldly smiled.

“Return the treasure that you stole from the Palace. Your actions back then caused our Demonic Dragon Palace to lose to the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. With the Overlord position lost, you’ve practically become the sinner of our Demonic Dragon Palace!”

The white-robed figure casually looked over Bai Xuan. From his posture, one could tell that he disliked the argument; even still, as a Spiritual Energy image left behind by a Sovereign, he still possessed part of the original’s pride and might.

“Hmph.”

The corner of Bai Xuan’s mouth rose into a strange smile at the White Dragon Sovereign’s aversive expression.

“It looks like the White Dragon Sovereign isn’t very interested in me. In that case, allow me to invite someone you’d be more interested in speaking to.”

Bai Xuan tightened his fingers and a black light spread from the center of his palm. The light gathered and condensed, until it became a dark pearl the size of a dragon’s eye, emanating a frightening Spiritual Energy.

Kacha.

Bai Xuan chuckled as he shattered it.

Boom!

The moment Bai Xuan destroyed the black pearl, a towering black pillar soared into the air. An indescribable pressure shrouded them.

A dark misty figure materialised from within the black pillar and strolled out. Everything trembled beneath his feet.

He flashed a casual smile as he spoke to the white-robed figure in a voice that echoed through all the space between the heavens and earth.

“Haha. White Dragon, it’s been few hundred years since we last met. I trust you’ve been well since then.”

Mu Chen, Su Xuan, and their party dropped their jaws. This figure of dark light was actually a Sovereign too?!!

Chapter 252 – Black Dragon, White Dragon

When the figure of black light appeared, the natural Spiritual Aura roared and turned violent. A pressure weighed down on them so heavily that even the heavens would tremble at it.

Everyone felt as if their very skin was being peeled away; they could no longer access the natural Spiritual Aura of this place.

It seemed as though the natural Spiritual Aura was being taken over by this black spirit.

“That’s…a Sovereign Clone?”

Countless experts were frightened into despair and their legs turned to jelly as they watched the black spirit. The sudden appearance of this being, who was on par with the White Dragon Sovereign, had made them lose their composure.

Astonished emotion took over their rationality.

None of them had ever imagined that Bai Xuan could summon forth a Sovereign Clone. Didn’t that mean that there was a Sovereign standing behind White Dragon City?

Was that really possible? If White Dragon City possessed such strength, why would they hole themselves up in the tiny White Dragon Hillock?

Shock overtook those from the Heavenly Dipper Sword Faction and Earthen Way Sect. This was news to them as well — White Dragon City’s position as one of the three major forces of this hillock wasn’t truly what they thought it was.

“Didn’t the White Dragon Sovereign’s remnant image mention the Demonic Dragon Palace, earlier?”

“Could he be talking about that the powerful force that was only a step away from becoming the Overlord of the Northern Heaven Continent a few hundred years ago? That Demonic Dragon

Palace?”

“White Dragon City…was a chess piece set up by the Demonic Dragon Palace?”

“…”

Emotions rose like tidal waves in their hearts as their faces glazed over with shock. Once this news spread, there’d be major shifts on the Northern Heavens Continent.

Bai Xuan couldn’t care less about the shocked gazes coming from all over the place. He only raised his head towards the black spirit with reverence in his eyes. As long as he completed this task, he’d be able to return to the Demonic Dragon Palace. It wouldn’t matter anymore whether his identity was revealed or not.

“That’s a Sovereign Clone…”

With an unconcealable expression of shock, Su Xuan’s charming eyes solemnly turned to the sky. “I never thought that Bai Xuan would actually have such a trump card. It seems like they’re determined to win the White Dragon Sovereign’s Spirit Treasury.”

Mu Chen, Li Qing and the rest also nodded their heads in shock. Bai Xuan’s trump card was too powerful. However, it’s fortunate for them that’d he’d only revealed it to deal with the Spiritual Energy image left behind by the White Dragon Sovereign.

“Black Dragon…”

The White Dragon Sovereign’s white pupils stared at the black spirit as ripples finally appeared on his face. “I never thought that you’d actually dare to appear. Aren’t you afraid of the ones from the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy?”

“Haha, this is just a clone. I doubt they’ll be able to detect it.” The spirit called Black Dragon lightly smiled as he looked at the White Dragon Sovereign. “White Dragon, you’ve hidden the supreme treasure of my palace for so long. It should be about time for you to return it.”

“After so many years…you’re still concerned about it.” the White Dragon Sovereign lightly sighed.

The Black Dragon Sovereign lowered his eyes as his voice slowly sounded out, “White Dragon, we were once the greatest of friends. However, you betrayed me. The pain of our clan perishing, have you forgotten it?”

“You were already deceived by hatred.” The White Dragon Sovereign said with another sigh.

“Who cares about the methods on the road of revenge?” The Black Dragon Sovereign smiled and sighed in regret. “I never thought that you’d refuse to wake up, even after your death. Forget it. Today, I’ll get rid of your remnant image. After getting the supreme treasure back, we’ll once again, rule over even the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. When we have truly grown strong, we’ll begin our true revenge.”

His words landed with a clear finality. Then, he took a step forward. The earth trembled as a boundless Spiritual Energy surged and gathered behind him, as endless as the seas.

Roar!

Within the sea of Spiritual Energy came tyrannical dragon roars. One massive dragon clad in cold black scales charged out. Its large body was slender and powerful, with the power to destroy the heavens and annihilate the earth.

The Black Dragon Sovereign’s figure trembled as he turned into a ray of black light and became one with the colossal black dragon. As one, they charged towards the White Dragon Sovereign on the light screen.

Boom!

It was like a frightening tornado had torn through the heavens and earth. Even the ground began showing cracks.

“Sighhh.”

The White Dragon Sovereign sighed again as his boundless Spiritual Energy rippled out. His body trembled and started to glow with a white light, and a massive white dragon appeared, one no smaller than his opponent's black one. The white scales flickered with a dazzling glow as the creature breathed out, turned into a cloud, and drifted to meet the threat.

A frightening Spiritual Energy swept through the entire heavens and earth.

Roar!

The roars of dragons resonated through the skies as the black and white dragon flew in unison, colliding again and again in ferocious strikes. Thunder roared and the heavens and earth trembled as though wrought under a violent gale.

Mu Chen and the rest watched the frightening confrontation occurring up in the skies. Even from such a distance, the Spiritual Energy impact still made them tremble a little.

Furthermore, the two of them were only wisps of the two Sovereigns. If they'd been fighting with their main vessels, the entire sky would probably shatter.

"The light screen has weakened a little." Su Xuan suddenly said.

Mu Chen and the few others immediately looked over and confirmed that as the battle in the sky intensified, the originally powerful light screen that covered the black basin was starting to ripple. Its originally brilliant glow had also dulled a little.

"The White Dragon Sovereign has died, after all. His strength is limited. Furthermore, he's fighting the Black Dragon Sovereign's Clone, so he's definitely exhausting a lot of energy. That's why the light screen is rapidly weakening," Mu Chen clarified.

Su Xuan also nodded. "It might not be long before the light screen becomes weak enough for us to pass through."

"Everyone must be cautious while collecting treasures. White

Dragon City is extremely well-prepared and they're glaring like tigers. They're definitely the strongest contestor out there."

Mu Chen smiled when he heard that and swept his eyes around the basin. "Even still, their very strength may get in their own way; some of the other forces are likely to take precautions by allying to deal with them. Who knows if we could take that chance to collect the treasures?"

"We'll see how it goes. If we can't get any treasures, then we'll retreat first. Our lives are the priority." Su Xuan said lightly.

Mu Chen and the others nodded. Treasures were great, but lives were still more important.

The other forces had also sensed the changes to the light screen and their expressions immediately heated up. The terrifying White Dragon Sovereign was currently occupied. From here, the only thing that mattered in winning treasures was their personal abilities.

Even though many were still shocked by the secret nature of White Dragon City, Bai Xuan and his experts weren't actually enough to make them fear. And even though the Demonic Dragon Palace was powerful, they and the Northern Heavens Academy were like fire and water; the Demonic Dragon Palace wouldn't do anything rash.

"Get ready to act."

Bai Xuan closely scrutinised the powerful light screen fluctuating with ripples and said with a low voice, "We'll kill all those who dare to get in our way."

"Yes!"

A ferocity flashed through the greyed-robed elder when he heard Bai Xuan's orders.

Bai Dong's cold eyes glanced in Mu Chen's direction. He'd wait until they entered the black basin. If there was an opportunity, he

definitely wasn't going to let that kid go!

Countless numbers of experts quietly waited around the black basin, barely restraining the excitement in their hearts. The skies above them rolled with clouds as the black and white dragons tore at each other. Frightening Spiritual Energies rippled through the heavens and earth.

This wait lasted for more than ten minutes before the powerful light screen lost the stability it once possessed and took on an illusionary quality, as though it was on the verge of collapsing.

Everyone's eyes boiled at the same instant. It was about time.

"Go!"

Bai Xuan took the lead with a wave of his hand. With his White Dragon City experts in tow, he flashed out like lightning towards the screen. While they were still some distance away, Bia Xuan threw out his fist.

Boom!

Spiritual Energy surged. The White Dragon City experts towards the back barked lowly as the black spears in their hands shot forward like gusts of strong wind, bombarding the light screen until it was on the verge of collapsing.

Dong!

Even more ripples moved over the light screen as it turned even more translucent. Several breaths later, a series of cracks began spreading over its surface.

Rustle!

When Bai Xuan and his group saw the crack, they moved and charged in.

Every other force followed when they saw White Dragon City's group charge in. A gale broke out as everyone tore a hole in a different place of the light screen. Together, they charged

endlessly into the black basin.

“Let’s go!”

Su Xuan raised her jade hands and took the initiative. Mu Chen and the rest quickly followed.

When they reached before the light screen, they joined powers to tear their own crack in its surface, revealing the pitch-black basin on the other side. The darkness there gaped like a massive, hungry maw, devouring the endless river of people.

“Be cautious,” Su Xuan reminded as she charged into the crack. Li Qing, Guo Xiong, and Su Ling’er quietly circulated their Spiritual Energies to protect their bodies before following.

Mu Chen peered into the darkness behind the crack and a smear of curiosity flashed through his pupils. The supreme treasure that the two Sovereigns had been speaking of should be in here. Except he didn’t know…

What sort of treasure was it?

An intense curiosity rose in Mu Chen’s heart. Then, he smiled and stepped into the darkness on the other side of the rift.

Chapter 253 – Dense Water Spiritual Pearl

A darkness rushed forward to greet them the moment they passed through the rift. Mu Chen and his comrades opened their eyes and realized that they could no longer see the outside world, now that they were inside the black basin. The darkness stretched out all around them. A chill swirled with the surrounding wind.

However, there were still many bodies occupying the space around them — clearly members of the other forces. They'd quickly re-formed their own parties and had raised their guards, keeping a safe distance away from any of the others.

Mu Chen's line-of-sight cut through the darkness, then narrowed as they pinpointed something up ahead. He could just barely make out the shapes of several obsidian pillars, towering like beasts in the darkness. His heart started to beat faster.

Even though they were down inside the basin, no one experienced any surprise attacks. However, everyone stayed on guard and slowed their pace as they moved closer to the center of the basin. Each group took their own formations as they slowly advanced.

"Why's it so quiet?" Su Ling'er asked in a whisper. "Isn't this Sovereign Spirit Treasury a little too still? Shouldn't a place like this be filled with all sorts of danger?"

Su Xuan also knit her brows in doubt. However, she remained silent as she circulated her Spiritual Energy and maintained her state of high alert.

Mu Chen slowly swept his eyes around the area again before he looked back at the stone pillars. For some reason, the uneasiness in his heart grew stronger.

As he stared ahead, he noticed that there were already a few parties charging towards the stone pillars.

An even deeper blackness swirled over the stone pillars as the stone started shedding bits of debris.

“Not good! Be careful!”

Mu Chen’s pupils shrank as he threw himself in front of Su Xuan and the others with a determined look in his eyes.

“Onom!”

Just as Mu Chen’s warning reached their ears, the side of one massive stone pillar suddenly shattered and a huge black hand thrust forward from the dust. The charging formations immediately fell into disarray. Fresh blood splattered.

Mournful shrieks resounded.

The sudden situation shocked everyone.

Bang! Bang!

More cracks started to appear on the other pillars, which then collapsed to reveal more pitch-black stone statues. Each glared at them with savage red eyes.

A frightening Spiritual Energy rippled over these stone statues. None of them were weaker than the stone statue Mu Chen had subdued just a little while ago.

“Hssssss!”

Mu Chen couldn’t help taking in a breath as he watched the stone statues struggle out of their pillars. To think there’d be so many Stone Guardians here! This truly was a dangerous place.

Everyone else’s faces changed immediately as they took their positions in the formation.

“We’ll charge together and wreck those stone statues!”

The attack had been too unexpected; however, the humans weren’t few in numbers either — there were quite a few experts who’d made it into the basin. After the sudden loss, the formations

rapidly gathered again. Shouts and snarls rang through the darkness as the experts joined forces and their combined Spiritual Energy soared to reach the skies, before they charged towards the black stone statues.

Boom!

A torrent of people smashed into the black stone statues and the two sides broke into an intense battle. A violent Spiritual Energy swept over the battlefield, so strong it even split the earth.

However, everyone had underestimated the Stone Guardians — these things had been created solely for battle and felt no pain. Even though the experts had the advantage of quantity, they lacked in terms of quality — there were only a few who could break through the stone statue's defenses and advance deeper, and they still had to pay a huge price for accomplishing that much.

"Those guys from White Dragon City are charging in real fast!" Li Qing suddenly warned.

Mu Chen looked to the far right and confirmed that the experts of White Dragon City had already gathered into an arrow formation and were swiftly piercing through the stone statue's defenses. Each of them was giving it their all. Aside from Bai Xuan and the grey-robed elder, Mu Chen and his party could sense another four Spiritual Energy ripples coming from experts who'd reached the Heavenly Transform Stage Initial Phase!

Borrowing strength from their powerful formation, White Dragon City took the lead and broke through the Stone Guardians much faster than any of the other forces could possibly match.

Su Xuan ground her teeth as she recognised a few familiar Spiritual Energy ripples. "Among those four other Heavenly Transform Stage Initial Phases, two of them are from the ones who attacked us the other night. So they really are from White Dragon City."

Mu Chen frowned. “White Dragon City no longer needs to hide its strength; all they have to do is advance past the stone statues to reach the deepest area. The treasures will be right in front of them.”

“We can’t let them steal the supreme treasure so easily!” Su Xuan declared. Since they’d already confirmed that they were members of the Demonic Dragon Palace, they’d become their Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy’s mortal enemy. Besides, if Bai Xuan and his soldiers won the treasure, then they probably wouldn’t be able to escape safely.

Guo Xiong and the rest nodded in agreement.

“We’ll move together. After them!”

Su Xuan lightly waved her jade hands and made a clutching motion. With the sensation of rolling waves, a strange and ancient jade pearl appeared in her hand.

Mu Chen and his group circulated their Spiritual Energies to the limits and burst forward. They passed through large throngs of people as they charged towards the Stone Guardians.

Their Spiritual Energies were much stronger from the other experts’, which quickly attracted the surprised attention of three Stone Guardians. The stone statues took trembling steps as they changed directions and charged after them.

“Dense Water Spiritual Pearl, Dense Water Prison!”

Su Xuan took note of the situation and raised her jade hands. The ancient jade pearl flew from her palm, and a surge of blue waves a hundred feet high rose into the air. The water crashed down and swirled into a massive vortex, enveloping the three stone statues.

Bang! Bang!

The violent whirlpool spun endlessly with a frightening force. The three statues had been as strong as any Heavenly Transform Stage Initial Phase, but they were pinned down so strongly that

they couldn’t even move. The clear and beautiful azure waves pounded them until cracks appeared on their bodies.

Even Mu Chen was shocked by Su Xuan’s move. This was the first time he’d seen her fight, but he never imagined that she’d be so powerful. With just a casual attack, she could take care of those three Stone Statue Guardians.

Ranked 3 of the Heavenly Rankings. Truly, her fame wasn’t for nothing.

Su Ling’er flashed an adoring smile when she saw Mu Chen’s astonished expression. “That’s my sister’s Dense Water Spiritual Pearl. A High Rank Spiritual Artifact. She spent three million Spiritual Value Points for it.”

Guo Xiong laughed as well. “Haha. The Dense Water Spiritual Pearl contains an extremely bizarre form of Spiritual Water called Dense Water. A single litre weighs a thousand kilograms[1. Chinese raw says “the water weighs ten thousand half-kilograms”, but we changed it to read better. For reference, water actually weighs 1kg per litre.]. It could even crush a mountain. It’s as dangerous as any weapon and can be used for both offense and defense. The power of the Dense Water Spiritual Pearl can’t be missed; that’s why Su Xuan sits so securely as the the Rank 3 of the Heavenly Rankings.”

Mu Chen exclaimed in admiration and nodded. So it was a High Rank Spiritual Artifact. No wonder. From the looks of it, Su Xuan’s Dense Water Spiritual Pearl might even be stronger than the Draconic Spirit Bracelets.

“Let’s go.”

Su Xuan motioned and the blue jade[2. The Chinese sometimes don’t distinguish between blue and green. Instead, they are often referred to as shades of the same color.] pearl returned to her jade hands. She stroked its cyan surface as she smiled and said, “Let’s get over there. Fast.”

“Yes!”

The other four agreed, then burst out in unison, easily passing the three stone statues that’d gotten in their way just a few minutes ago.

Su Xuan brought out the Dense Water Spiritual Pearl again, while Guo Xiong and the other three burst forward on full attack, in an attempt to lessen the pressure on Su Xuan. The group of five charged straight forward.

The Heavenly Dipper Sword Faction and Earthen Way Sect followed closely behind them. These factions had the advantage of numbers, and furthermore, they’d joined forces, so their combined strength was now far greater than it’d been before.

Everyone charged straight ahead. As long as they could get past the Stone Guardians, they’d reach the Spirit Treasury and obtain the supreme treasure!

However, the price for such a straightforward charge was a heavy one to pay. Mournful screams echoed endlessly through the black basin, and the faint smell of blood permeated the air. Many faces turned pale.

Mu Chen’s party relied on Su Xuan’s Dense Water Spiritual Pearl. Even though they suffered no injuries or deaths, their advancement grew tougher by the step. Finally, Mu Chen decided that he had no choice but to summon his Stone Guardian as well. Unfortunately, his Stone Guardian was already badly damaged and looked to be on the verge of collapse — however, it could buy them some time to catch their breaths.

“There have been quite a few deaths from White Dragon City.”

Su Xuan moved the Dense Water Spiritual Pearl again, and waves as heavy as mountains crushed the arm of one Stone Guardian that was in the process of charging them. Then she looked to her right, where the experts of White Dragon City were already bathed in

fresh blood. Even one of the Heavenly Transform Stage Initial Phase experts had died. No doubt a disastrous loss for them.

“We’re approaching the central region.”

Mu Chen nodded with a grave look in his eyes. He’d already noticed that the deeper they went, the more violent the Stone Guardians became, as though they were desperate to keep them from reaching their destination.

It was clear that they’d soon reach the heart of this Spirit Treasury.

“There’re abnormal movements from White Dragon City!” Su Ling’er urged.

Mu Chen and Su Xuan turned surprised expressions to see that White Dragon City had split their party into two. One was headed by Bai Dong, with four Heavenly Transform Stage Initial Phase experts protecting him. The other was lead by Bai Xuan and was swiftly charging forward. The goal of this formation was clear — Bai Xuan was trying to open a path for the other group to forge ahead.

Mu Chen narrowed his eyes. “They know that they’re attracting too much attention because they have too many people. They’re trying to split up into smaller groups, so they can move faster!”

He had to admit that White Dragon City’s strategy was quite effective. While Bai Xuan and his group were attracting all the attention, Bai Dong and his smaller party had already disappeared into the darkness.

“What do we do now? If this goes on, they’ll be able to be the first to enter!” Guo Xiong anxiously cried.

Su Xuan smiled bitterly. She could try charging in alone; however, she knew the others would find it difficult to protect themselves without her.

As Su Xuan helplessly considered her options, Mu Chen suddenly

spoke with a soft voice. “I’ll chase after them. You guys can catch up later.”

“You alone?” Everyone looked at Mu Chen with an astonished expression. They clearly hadn’t expected such a suggestion from him.

“Rest assured. I won’t do something stupid, like seeking my own death.” Mu Chen smiled. However, he didn’t have enough time to fully explain, either.

Su Xuan evaluated Mu Chen’s steady gaze and hesitated. Then, she nodded. “Alright. You go first. We’ll distract the stone statues for you. Remember, if you encounter Bai Dong and his group, just try to buy time.”

“Okay.”

Mu Chen nodded. Then, he moved like a hunting leopard as he slipped between two stone statues and rapidly disappeared into the darkness.

“Will he be alright?” Su Ling’er worried as she looked in the direction where Mu Chen had disappeared.

Su Xuan shook her head and softly replied, “I don’t know where he gets that confidence from, but right now, I can only choose to trust him.”

Su Ling’er, Li Qing, Guo Xiong nodded. That was all they could do in the current situation. Just hope that nothing happened to Mu Chen.

Chapter 254 – Black Demonic Pillar

Shhhhhhhu!

As the darkness enveloped the center of the basin, a single figure streaked over the inky blackness — it was Mu Chen. Suddenly, he came to a halt. His feet briefly brushed the ground before he came to a full stop more than ten feet away from a Stone Guardian.

Bang!

A stone fist fell with the power of a meteor striking the earth, right at the spot where Mu Chen had touched just a few moments before. A series of cracks spread over the ground.

Mu Chen steadied his feet as his Spiritual Energy surged and he burst forward again. He swiftly passed through a gap in the Stone Guardian's offense.

Right now, he was somewhere deep inside the basin. As a result, the number of Stone Guardians had increased, and they'd grown more violent as well — to the point that even Mu Chen didn't dare to confront them. All he could do was take advantage of the gaps between them and charge ahead.

However, his charge only lasted for a few minutes before he was cut off, and Mu Chen suddenly found himself surrounded by six Stone Guardians. They moved their mountainous steps as they rained punches down that could shatter the sky.

Mu Chen warily observed the Stone Guardians as they sealed off his only path of retreat. Finally, he knitted his brows and waved his sleeve, summoning his own Stone Guardian. It stood like a stone shield before him.

Bang!

Six heavy stone fists landed on Mu Chen's Stone Guardian, and more cracks spread over its body. At last, it exploded with a bang.

Mu Chen felt his heart ache. The statue had been a faithful servant to him, and he hadn't expected to see it destroyed just like that. It was too much of a waste.

"I wonder if the White Dragon Medal has any effects on these Stone Guardians?"

Mu Chen felt excitement in his heart. He'd been entertaining the idea for a while, but the Stone Guardians had been too violent for him to risk it. He was also afraid that he'd repeat the situation in the stone palace hall — that he'd only end up provoking the stone statues to attack even more. But now that he'd been driven into a corner, he couldn't care less about those risks.

Mu Chen decided that it was time to act. With a wave of his hand, the White Dragon Medal appeared in his hand and he activated it with his Spiritual Energy. The silver medal began flickering with a faint glow.

The moment the White Dragon Medal appeared, Mu Chen noticed that the Stone Guardians' attacks had become sluggish. But before he could celebrate the fact, they attacked him anyways.

"It doesn't work?"

A smear of disappointment flashed through Mu Chen's eyes. So it seemed he couldn't rely on the White Dragon Medal to control these Stone Guardians.

However, it wasn't entirely useless. At least its presence had slightly suppressed their attacks — which meant that the White Dragon Medal had some effect after all.

Something flickered in Mu Chen's eyes as he poured everything into the White Dragon Medal. The glow from its metallic surface grew stronger, and Mu Chen was enveloped in its light.

From a distance, Mu Chen looked like a patch of fuzzy white light. You couldn't even see his tracks if you tried.

While Mu Chen was bathed by the white glow, he kept an eye on

the six Stone Guardians that'd been attacking him. Their offense had finally ceased and their scarlet stone eyes had dimmed to a flickering glow in their empty sockets.

"It looks like the White Dragon Medal can interfere with the stone statue's senses! They can't see me!"

Mu Chen finally had a grasp of what was going on, and a moment of exhilaration passed over him. Even though the White Dragon Medal couldn't control the Stone Guardians like he'd imagined, he could use it to interfere with their senses. With it, he could reach the heart of the basin with the greatest speed.

This was no time to delay. Mu Chen stepped up his speed and charged through the statues in a flash, heading towards the depths at lightning speed.

This time, Mu Chen encountered no other obstacles. The Stone Guardians he passed only stared at him with blank expressions, without attacking.

Borrowing the medal's cloaking effect, Mu Chen passed through the field of stone statues within minutes. Finally, he slowed his pace when he sensed that there were fewer Stone Guardians in the area. Up ahead, it looked like there were none.

"Am I already at the heart?"

Suddenly, Mu Chen sensed something. He sped up again, and a moment later, the darkness began to retreat from his vision. What appeared before him was a dusky landscape scattered with large stones. At the center of these stones stood a black stone pillar roughly a hundred metres wide.

This stone pillar didn't give off a majestic feeling like the ones from before. But now that Mu Chen knew why, his heartbeat quickened.

As Mu Chen carefully approached it, he realised this black stone pillar wasn't made of ordinary stone — in fact, it wasn't made of

stone at all, nor was it made of gold or wood. However, it appeared extremely ancient. A strange design was scrawled over its surface. As Mu Chen studied it, a baleful aura quietly began to spread around him, strong enough to devour the heavens and earth. Mu Chen's eyes turned a little red.

He felt himself go unfocused for a moment as he drew even closer and lightly placed his hand on the mottled surface.

Boom.

The moment he touched the pillar, a massive explosion sounded in his mind. Images flashed through his consciousness.

There was a deep pool filled with scarlet liquid that looked like blood. Human bodies were being tossed down from somewhere above and melted as they splashed into the pool. Down under the bloody surface stood a black pillar and a hidden demonic god that devoured all with its baleful aura.

Above the abyss stood a fuzzy figure with white hair, clad in a white robe. He looked exactly like the White Dragon Sovereign.

The figure looked down upon the bloody scene and a look of unbearable pain flashed through his eyes. He slowly clenched his fist.

Boom!

The bloody pond was jolted by an explosion and a column of blood suddenly rose from its surface and reached for the clouds. The abyss split open and the bloody light soared from the the pool and into the heavens, and remained suspended upon the horizon.

The black pillar was painted in rivers of endless blood. An endless flow of demonic patterns swirled around on its surface. The support was rent with deep claw marks, as if it'd collapse at any moment.

The sudden outburst from the ancient demonic pillar shattered everything. Even the heavens and earth seemed to lose their colour

in that single moment. An endless baleful aura blew across the scene, causing even yin and yang to tremble.

Even the powerful being who stood above the abyss, shrouded in light, couldn't help taking a step back in the face of such a baleful aura.

Mu Chen concentrated his mind on the scene. The baleful aura even seemed to infect his heart as an ominous feeling replaced his rationality.

"Liiiiii!"

A clear cry suddenly resounded within his body. The sound wave instantly woke Mu Chen from that state of mind.

Mu Chen recovered with his body drenched in a cold sweat. He looked up at the cracked pillar with the expression of a hungry ghost. It was almost in his hands. However, he retreated with eyes filled with astonishment and wariness.

What was that goddamned stone pillar? Why did it possess such a frightening baleful aura?

Mu Chen knitted his brows as he moved his eyes over the black pillar. Finally, his eyes found the peak, where there rested a white spiritual pearl, roughly the size of an infant's head.

Its clear surface sparkled as it dispersed the darkness with a milky-white light. Mu Chen's heart grew calmer as he stared at that light.

A heavy atmosphere rolled within the white spiritual pearl, like a sea of clouds. He could barely make out the shape of a white dragon roaming within its curved surface and hear its vigorous cries.

"That's..."

Mu Chen focused his eyes on the white spiritual pearl that emitted such frightening Spiritual Energy. Just a glance told him

that it was an extremely rare treasure.

He licked his lips as he studied the pearl with heated eyes. The black demonic pillar was simply too strange, but there weren't any demonic traces inside the white pearl. It was clearly a treasure at first glance. If he had to choose between the two, of course he'd want the white spiritual pearl.

Mu Chen made his decision and flew towards the white pearl with outstretched hands.

Shhhhuuu!

The moment before Mu Chen laid hands on the pearl, a strange gale whipped up from behind him. His eyes widened as a cold chill ran down his spine. The Spiritual Energy inside him surged as he threw out a punch.

A pitch-black Spiritual Energy swept out and black flames surged with a shocking ferocity.

Bang!

The two collided with a dramatic dispersal of Spiritual Energy. The jolt forced Mu Chen backwards by several steps before he could steady himself. His expression was dark as three figures swiftly stepped out of the darkness.

"Hmph! You're really a despicable thing that never dies. You actually managed to reach this place ahead of us!"

Bai Dong was one of the figures who'd walked out of the darkness, albeit in a fairly torn-up shape. He was accompanied by only the grey-robed elder and one other guard. The other two Heavenly Transform Stage Initial Phases must have fallen during their charge.

Right now, Bai Dong and the grey-robed elder were eyeing Mu Chen with cold expressions tinged with astonishment. They never expected him to reach this place ahead of them.

If they'd arrived any later, Mu Chen probably would've taken everything.

Mu Chen looked at the two of them with a strange mixture of boredom and bloodlust.

A savage smile appeared at the corner of Bai Dong's mouth. He raised his head towards the elder and said, "Elder Qiu, the two of you go deal with him. Don't give him another chance."

The grey-robed elder slowly nodded and stepped out with the Heavenly Transform Stage Initial Phase guard beside him. His eyes locked onto Mu Chen like those of a venomous snake.

Mu Chen studied the two Heavenly Transform Stage Initial Phase experts as his gaze also turned a little colder.

Chapter 255 – Bai Xuans True Strength

The grey-robed elder and the Heavenly Transform Stage Initial Phase guard slowly stepped forward, their cold, snake-like eyes fixed on Mu Chen.

The supreme treasure was right before them. If they could just get rid of Mu Chen, they'd be able to safely seize their prize. Therefore, this obstacle before them had to be dealt with.

"Brat, since you don't want to get lost on your own, then you can leave your puny little life right here." The grey-robe elder threatened. They had two Heavenly Transform Stage Initial Phases on their side. With power like that, he could kill Mu Chen as easily as he could turn his palm.

Mu Chen was expressionless as he slowly spread his hands. Even he found it difficult to fight two opponents of this level — however, he had no other choice. But if these guys really wanted a fight, then he wouldn't mind letting them know that this so-called "pushover" wouldn't be that easy to deal with.

"Go!"

The grey-robed elder was done with this nonsense. They wrapped their fingers around the empty air, and black spears materialised on cue. Then, the two of them acted at the same time and rushed towards Mu Chen at lightning speed.

Mu Chen quickly retreated from their powerful attacks. With a twitch of his own fingers, the Nine-Layered Pagoda appeared and expanded in a flash, becoming a solid defense between them.

Clang! Claaang!

However, the grey-robed elder and the guard weren't intending to be merciful. They circulated their Spiritual Energies to the limits and whipped their spear images on the pagoda like raging vipers. The force of the attack even shoved the structure back.

Mu Chen's emotions were rolling, but there was no panic in his eyes. He made use of the precious time that the Nine-Layered Pagoda had bought him, and quickly formed a series of confusing hand seals while circulating his Spiritual Energy.

Faced with such an opponent, of course Mu Chen had to get serious.

He formed the seals with both hands and a wave of majestic Spiritual Energy washed over them. The natural Spiritual Aura around them was also rapidly gathering towards him.

"Be careful! That kid is going to unleash some Spiritual Art!"

The grey-robed elder and the guard both noticed the intense ripple in the natural Spiritual Energy around them. The grey-robed elder icily glared at Mu Chen as he barked, "Get rid of him!"

They thrusted the long spears in bursts of Spiritual Energy, jolting the Nine-Layered Pagoda and knocking it back. Then they burst towards Mu Chen like lightning.

"Hmph."

Mu Chen's pitch-black eyes turned into a pair of deep black pools and he coldly snorted as he formed more hand seals. A torrential Spiritual Energy swept out like waves of the great seas.

Boom!

The skies above Mu Chen became starry and a colossal white tiger formed from their light. It crouched upon the sky as a deep, baleful aura swept out.

"Four Gods Constellation Scripture, Divine Seal of the White Tiger!"

Mu Chen furiously glared at his opponents, just like the roaring white tiger above him. He formed the last seal with both hands and set it out.

"Roar!"

The White Tiger Divine Beast stepped on the starry sky and roared, shaking the heavens and earth. The starry light responded to its call and slammed down upon the grey-robed elder and the guard.

“It’s Deity-Tier Spiritual Art!”

Their expressions changed and their voices grew shriller. They hadn’t expected such a Spiritual Art from Mu Chen — and he was able to fully exert it!

Their faces turned grave and their postures showed that they weren’t affording the slightest negligence. They circulated their Spiritual Energies without the slightest bit of restraint. They immediately joined their efforts and threw out a palm. The turbulent Spiritual Energy surged into a Spiritual Energy light barrier a hundred feet tall, solid and firm as any wall.

Boom!

The starry light struck the light barrier with a thunderous Spiritual Energy. Violent shockwaves swept out. The huge, messily scattered stones were instantly ground to dust.

Bang!

The light barrier shattered under the force of the attack and the grey-robed elder was sent flying several hundred feet back. He groaned as a scarlet line appeared on his lips.

Mu Chen’s Divine Seal of the White Tiger had injured both opponents with that attack. But instead of continuing the barrage, he paused his offense and turned to Bai Dong.

Bai Dong was stunned into silence by Mu Chen’s fearsome might. He couldn’t understand it. Why was this Heavenly Fusion Stage Middle Phase youth so hard to deal with?

His two Heavenly Transform Stage Initial Phase experts should’ve easily killed him. However, they’d been wounded by him instead. The methods that Mu Chen had used to accomplished this

alarmed Bai Dong.

So when he saw Mu Chen suddenly burst towards him, his expression drastically changed. All thoughts of stealing the treasure had been banished from his mind as he rapidly retreated.

“You want to leave?”

Mu Chen coldly smiled as he circulated his Spiritual Energy and chased after Bai Dong.

Bang!

Bai Dong took the full attack; however, he could only guard against Mu Chen’s six Limitless Death Seals. Blood trailed from his mouth as his torn body flew backwards. But before he could regain his bearings, a chilly sword ray stopped at this throat. He froze in place, not daring to move.

“Brat, you dare!”

The grey-robed elder and the guard had recovered by now, only to see Bai Dong fall into Mu Chen’s hands. Their faces twisted in rage.

“Turn around and leave this place.” Mu Chen slowly said with an indifferent expression.

No one moved as they glared at Mu Chen with ferocious expressions. If they did that, wouldn’t they be leaving the supreme treasure to Mu Chen? That was something they weren’t willing to let happen. They couldn’t afford to pay the consequences.

Mu Chen held their eyes and frowned. It looked like they considered this supreme treasure to be far more important than Bai Dong.

Even though Bai Dong was terrified, he still managed to spit out vicious threats. “Piece of shit! The supreme treasure is what we value most. You can kill me, but my father will definitely shred you to pieces! Your companions won’t escape either!”

“Yeah, I know.”

Mu Chen lightly smiled. Bai Dong was startled by the expression, and Mu Chen took advantage of that to throw out a palm. Bai Dong flew backwards with a face full of disbelief and fresh blood. Mu Chen’s palm had nearly severed his life — he clung to life by only a hair-thin thread.

The grey-robed elder and the guard rushed forward to catch Bai Dong. Their expressions grew grave as they evaluated his condition.

“He still has some breath left. If you don’t do anything, he won’t hold on for much longer,” Mu Chen sighed to them.

The two of them understood Mu Chen’s intentions — he wanted to use Bai Dong’s heavy injuries against them.

“You!”

The grey-robed elder was furious as he snarled that word. Suddenly, a thunderous boom echoed from somewhere outside their pocket dimension and an indescribable Spiritual Energy swept over them.

Bang! Bang!

The remaining stone pillars in the black basin instantly shattered and the dark sky once again regained its light. Outside, the White Dragon Sovereign’s powerful light barrier had finally collapsed.

The violently attacking Stone Guardians had shattered to pieces.

A light bathed over them and they blankly raised their heads towards the source. The black and white dragons had slowly lost their glow from the long battle and the frightening might that’d engulfed the space slowly started to disperse.

The two Sovereign Clones had exhausted their Spiritual Energies.

The light screen that’d shrouded the black basin had disappeared. The stone statues had also lost their fighting

strength.

All the challenges that'd stood in their way were now gone.

The other experts that were still engaged in a battle stopped their fighting and blankly evaluated the situation in their heads. Then, the expressions rushed back to their faces as they burst forward at the same time, and the basin was drowned out by the howl of wind as they rushed towards the depths.

Mu Chen had lost his indifferent expression as well. He never thought that the two great Sovereign Clones would disperse just like that. Once the White Dragon Sovereign's Clone dispersed, the place would become a free-for-all.

Rustle!

Mu Chen immediately stood up and headed towards the white spiritual pearl resting atop the black demonic pillar.

"Hmph!"

But just as he reached the top of the pillar, a cold snort cracked like lightning from somewhere above.

Mu Chen immediately looked up to find Bai Xuan glaring down at him with a chilly face. When Bai Xuan saw that Mu Chen was about to make a dive for the pearl, he narrowed his eyes and threw out a punch. The Spiritual Energy surged with the weight of a tsunami as it crashed down on Mu Chen.

At just the right moment, Mu Chen's body flickered with a black light and the Nine-Layered Pagoda appeared around him.

Clang!

The Nine-Layered Pagoda suffered the heavy attack and its black light instantly dimmed. Even inside, Mu Chen felt the blast from Bai Xuan's fist and his face turned ashen as he coughed up red blood. He staggered and flew out, colliding with the black demonic pillar. With a twist of his wrist, he steadied himself using the

pillar.

“Brat, hand it over!”

Bai Xuan’s eyes were like a cold blade. With a shout, he rushed at Mu Chen with bloodlust in his aura.

“Shhhhhhuu!”

But just as Bai Xuan initiated his charge, a brilliantly glowing jade pearl cut between the two and exploded with waves of water, shrouding Mu Chen within a protective barrier.

Bang!

Bai Xuan’s sharp attacks clashed with the azure waves; however, his attacks were only pushed back by the protective water.

Bai Xuan’s expression dropped a few degrees in temperature when he glanced towards the source of the attack and found Su Xuan. She appeared right in front of Mu Chen, cautiously affording him protection.

“Brat, hand it over. Or don’t blame me for starting a massacre.” Bai Xuan’s eyes were savage as he glared at Mu Chen like a venomous snake.

Mu Chen wiped away the trickle of blood at the corner of his mouth. With a flick of his wrist, he picked up the pearl that rippled with frightening Spiritual Energy and stowed it away. But as he did so, he failed to notice that a drop of blood from his hand had landed upon the black demonic pillar. The drop seeped into the pillar and didn’t even leave a trace behind.

“So, you think she can keep up with me.” Bai Xuan studied Mu Chen and Su Xuan and the corner of his mouth slowly turned into a mocking smile.

Mu Chen’s pupils shrank as he looked at the darkened Bai Xuan. Something wasn’t right.

“Did you really think I was only this strong?”

Bai Xuan took a step forward with eyes like icy frost. A black bracelet on his arm suddenly crumbled to dust. Mu Chen and Su Xuan's faces both changed.

They felt the surge of oppressive Spiritual Energy sweeping out from Bai Xuan's body.

This strength — he'd already reached the Heavenly Transform Stage Late Phase!

Bai Xuan had actually been hiding his strength this entire time!

Chapter 256 – Space Shattered

Heavenly Transform Stage Late Phase!

Mu Chen and Su Xuan's faces took on drastically different expressions as they warily observed Bai Xuan. The latter stood as an imposing figure overflowing with majestic ripples of Spiritual Energy. Their expressions slowly turned grave and determined. The City Lord of White Dragon City was a very patient man. He'd managed to conceal his true strength, even though he'd had to suffer such great losses while battling the stone statue formations.

This patient man made their hearts turn cold.

"City Lord, the Young City Lord was heavily injured by that brat. Even now, he only hangs on by a thread!" the grey-robed elder reported from behind Bai Xuan.

The bloodlust in Bai Xuan's eyes flared as he fixed his eyes on Mu Chen. Even his hoarse voice was saturated with his desire to kill. "Brat, you should start praying that I don't get my hands on you. Or I'll definitely skin you and pull out your tendons, one by one. I'll make you regret being born into this world."

However, Mu Chen wasn't stirred in the slightest by Bai Xuan's threat. His black pupils were as indifferent as if Bai Xuan had never spoken. When Bai Xuan's men had first attacked them in the forest, he'd already concluded that something like this would happen. So even if he didn't cripple Bai Dong, the outcome would be the same.

"The leftovers of the Demonic Dragon Palace dared to act so impudently in the Northern Heavens Continent? Aren't you afraid that our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy will send out experts to behead all of you?" Su Xuan coldly warned.

"Haha. Did you think that this continent belonged to your Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy? If it hadn't been for that

unfortunate incident, our Demonic Dragon Palace would've destroyed your Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. And you still dare to spout nonsense here?" Bai Xuan laughed.

"You are the ones who lost. That's still a fact." Mu Chen smiled, as he poked the festering wound and pulled Bai Xuan back to reality.

The smile on Bai Xuan's face vanished as his palms slowly came together. In a flash, a savage blood-red spear appeared in his hand, emitting a frightening and baleful aura. It was clear to all that this was an Ominous High Rank Spiritual Artifact.

"Since you like to speak of reality, then I'll tell you guys what you will face now is the reality, brats of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy!" Bai Xuan's gaze were cold. He took a step forth and the blood-red long spear trembled. Torrential blood-red light rays surged. In those light rays, it was as though an overflowing sea was made from blood. The stench of blood was spreading throughout the heavens and earth.

"Blood Devouring Sea Spear!"

Boom!

The scarlet rays were spreading like rivers of blood as they swept towards Mu Chen and Su Xuan from all directions. Mu Chen and Su Xuan narrowed their eyes at the sight of them. Bai Xuan had been a Heavenly Transform Stage Late Phase to begin with. If you added on the power of the Ominous High Rank Spiritual Artifact, then he was like a tiger that'd grown wings.

Su Xuan's charming face turned grave as she released her own majestic Spiritual Energy. The Dense Water Spiritual Pearl in her hand also exploded with light and the azure waves of pure Spiritual Energy became as heavy as the mountains. The waves spun into a massive barrier, protecting both herself and Mu Chen.

"You're just a Heavenly Transform Stage Middle Phase, but you

still think you can withstand my attack?!”

Bai Xuan coldly smiled upon seeing Su Xuan’s defense. The spear in his hand trembled as bloody rays of light gathered on its tip, as if rivers of blood were gathering in a basin at its point. Then, without warning, the spear was thrust forward and smashed into the azure water barrier.

Bang!

A terrifying Spiritual Energy swept over them, even though the azure water barrier managed to halt the attack. However, Bai Xuan snarled as he forced the bloody spear tip even harder, until it finally tore the water barrier apart.

Bang!

The water barrier exploded outwards and turned into mist as it dispersed. Su Xuan’s face turned pale as a trickle of blood appeared at the corner of her mouth.

The spear of dense baleful aura tore through the sky and shot towards her.

Shhhhhhuuuuuuuu!

A surge of Spiritual Energy announced the cyan longsword as it flew out from behind her and met the blood-red spear.

Clanng!

A metallic clash resounded and the Spiritual Aura surged. The longsword fell back and tore the flesh between Mu Chen’s thumb and forefinger, where he’d been holding the hilt. Fresh blood flowed onto the sword blade as he took several steps back. His emotions surged as his face turned pale.

“Big Sister!”

A cry of alarm sounded from somewhere behind them. With a gust of wind, Su Ling’er, Guo Xiong, and Li Qing flew over and landed beside Mu Chen and Su Xuan. Their faces changed as they

realised that both of them were heavily injured.

During this journey, Su Xuan had always been calm in her fights. She could easily defeat all her opponents. Likewise, Mu Chen didn't look strong on the outside, but he could pull miracles and reverse almost any situation.

Before they knew it, the two of them had become crucial members of their small party. But now, the two of them were heavily injured.

By now, quite a few forces had managed to gather in the depths of the basin. However, they quickly backed away with fearful expressions when they sensed Bai Xuan's strength. Even the Heavenly Dipper Sword Faction and the Earthen Way Sect were cautious about taking action. Every level of the Heavenly Transform Stage had a huge gap to the next. The two forces collectively possessed four Heavenly Transform Stage Initial Phase experts, but even they'd be slaughtered in only a few blows against someone like Bai Xuan.

That was the difference between the Heavenly Transform Stage Initial Phase and Late Phase.

"Brat, you should be smart and hand it over. Maybe I'll let you die quickly." Bai Xuan said as he hovered in the air, overflowing with bloody-red light. His eyes were sharp as he stared at Mu Chen.

Mu Chen coldly smiled back. This Bai Xuan was powerful indeed, especially with the High Rank Spiritual Artifact. He was exceptionally powerful for someone still in the Heavenly Transform Stage. But if he thought that he could make Mu Chen grovel in fear, then he was still too naive.

If Mu Chen didn't have a life-preserving trick, how could he dare to fight Bai Xuan?

Mu Chen's hand slowly closed as black flames surged in the depth

of his eyes. It looked like he had to borrow the power of the Nine Netherbird this time. He'd have to pay a decent price, but he couldn't worry about that right now.

Drip.

Thoughts flashed through Mu Chen's heart and more blood dripped from the tip of the sword onto the black demonic pillar beneath his feet, and disappeared.

Onom.

"Look at that black stone pillar!"

Someone cried out in surprise. Dark-red runes were slowly lighting up on the surface of the crumbled stone pillar — the only one still standing at the center of the black basin. Even the heavens and earth seemed to take on a red tint.

Mu Chen was also startled by the strange change and he grabbed Su Xuan by the wrist. "Get away from the stone pillar!"

By the time his warning landed in their ears, he'd already taken Su Xuan and retreated. The others immediately followed.

"Trying to leave?!" Bai Xuan's eyes turned cold as he followed too.

Boom!

The instant that Bai Xuan burst out, the black demonic pillar exploded with a blinding bloody light. The light soared into the clouds like a column of scarlet blood and dispersed into the sky, turning it into sea of blood. A ominous ripple spread beneath the sky.

It made that Ominous High Rank Spiritual Spiritual Artifact in Bai Xuan's hands look like a fragile toy.

The abrupt events startled everyone present. Even Bai Xuan's face took a drastic change. He sensed a frightening and indescribable ripple from that sky of blood.

“What’s that black stone pillar? Why’s it so horrifying?!” Bai Xuan stared at the claw marked pillar in shock.

“Could that stone pillar be the supreme treasure of this Spirit Treasury?!”

Bai Xuan’s heart trembled. His mission was to retrieve a supreme treasure from the White Dragon Sovereign’s Spirit Treasury; however, he had no detailed information of the treasure’s characteristics. At first, he thought it was the white spiritual pear that Mu Chen had seized — the Spiritual Energy ripples that it emitted told him that it was most likely ranked as a supreme treasure. But now, this mysterious black pillar was even more shocking!

It was so horrifying that even Bai Xuan didn’t dare to move.

The bloody sea of clouds spread and covered the entire dimension. Everyone watched in shock as the space around them twisted and seemed ready to shatter.

Even this mysterious space couldn’t suppress that frightening stone pillar?

Countless experts became overwhelmed with shock. Just what kind of treasure was it? Could it be a Divine Artifact?!

“The space is going to shatter!” Bai Xuan warned.

Mu Chen and the rest immediately circulated their Spiritual Energies to guard their bodies.

Bang!

All Bai Xuan could do was clench his fist as he no longer dared to move. He immediately circulated his Spiritual Energy to protect himself.

Bang!

The space twisted until it reached its limit. With a bang, it shattered like a mirror, sending violent ripples through the fabric

of space around them.

One maelstrom of space appeared after another and devoured the people still trapped inside. Before anyone in their party could say anything they, too, were enveloped by a space maelstrom and disappeared.

——

White Dragon Hillock

Far in the distance, a series of holes appeared in the sky. Numerous figures fell out like trash being dumped into a garbage pit.

Mu Chen and his party were lucky, since they hadn't been separated as they were thrown out. They stabled their fall and landed together on a mountain peak.

"All out." Su Xuan said in astonishment as she looked at the sorry figures dotting the mountain range.

"Just what was that black stone pillar? It was so horrifying!" Guo Xiong asked, dumbstruck. The space created by the White Dragon Sovereign had been extremely stable. However, it'd been so easily destroyed by the black stone pillar.

Only experts like the White Dragon Sovereign, or stronger, could accomplish something like that, right?

Mu Chen was deep in thought. He'd seen something like that before. He understood that the black demonic pillar was the supreme treasure that the White Dragon Sovereign had stolen from the Demonic Dragon Place. However, that item was way too demonic. Even Mu Chen was wary of touching it.

"We need to leave while Bai Xuan hasn't noticed us!" Mu Chen declared.

That Bai Xuan was indeed formidable. It'd be best if they could avoid him. Otherwise, a battle to the death would be unavoidable.

Su Xuan and the rest nodded as they turned around and prepared to leave.

However, that instant they did so, Mu Chen saw a new crack appear before them and a torrent of ominous energy surged out. Before he could even react, a bloody light burst from the rift and hit Mu Chen dead between his widened eyes.

Mu Chen’s body stiffened. He could sense an extremely frightening ominous aura spread throughout his body, originating from the black demonic pillar.

Chapter 257 – Primordial Ominous Artifact

Boom!

A horrifyingly baleful aura burst from Mu Chen's body. His eyes instantly turned bloodshot as an overwhelming bloodlust surged from the depths of his heart and tried to overtake his rational mind.

However, Mu Chen's will stayed steady and firm. He could still cling to consciousness, even in such a situation. He immediately circulated the Great Pagoda Art, using his Spiritual Energy to keep the invading baleful aura at bay. He knew that if his mind gave in to the baleful aura, then he'd become nothing more than a murderous puppet.

Damn it!

His heart roared angrily as he desperately tried to resist the baleful aura's invasion.

Su Xuan and the others tried to step in when they noticed Mu Chen's predicament. However, they stopped in shock when they saw his body begin to shake uncontrollably and his eyes turn scarlet-red.

"Mu Chen, what's going on?" Su Ling'er anxiously cried.

"What a heavy baleful aura!" Su Xuan's charming face changed as she continued, "Could this aura have invaded him while he was in the Spirit Treasury?"

"What should we do now?" Guo Xiong urgently asked. This baleful aura was simply too terrifying — even the White Dragon Sovereign's personally crafted dimension couldn't contain it. And Mu Chen had been infected. Didn't this spell disaster for him?

"We should get out of here first." Su Xuan said through her teeth. Of all times for something to happen, something just had go wrong now. And that something had happened to Mu Chen. Their

fighting strength would be down, and the conditions of their present location were extremely discouraging. After all, Mu Chen had managed to steal the white spiritual pearl. If they stayed here, then they'd definitely attract more unwanted attention.

"Yes!"

Li Qing and the other three quickly nodded, then hauled Mu Chen with them as they burst out of the White Dragon Hillock at lightning speed.

Far away on a mountain peak, Bai Xuan materialised. His eyes were dark as he looked in the direction that Mu Chen's party had disappeared to.

Underneath the surface, Bai Xuan was furious. If that peculiar black demonic pillar had been his objective, then he'd failed his mission. And now that the Spirit Treasury had been shattered, any traces of the black demonic pillar had been lost with it. He didn't even know how to start searching.

Given the circumstances, Bai Xuan had failed his mission. If he returned empty-handed, then he'd be severely punished. He had to make up for this failure, somehow. Maybe, if he killed Mu Chen and his party, and stole the White Dragon Spiritual Pearl, then he might be able to redeem himself slightly.

At the very least, they'd spare his life. Otherwise, he might find his head separated from his shoulders, even if his father was an Elder of the Demonic Dragon Palace.

"Trying to leave? What a pipe dream!"

He turned into a streak of rainbow light and chased after them.

Inside Mu Chen's body, the red baleful aura was taking down his defenses, one after another. It charged onwards, devastating anything Mu Chen could throw at it as it invaded his body even further and evaded his will.

Liiiiii!

But just as Mu Chen was about to collapse from the aura's rampage, a clear screech tore through his body. The young man instantly felt relieved upon hearing the sound — the Nine Netherbird was finally moving.

Boom!

Black flames swept from Mu Chen's aura sea and surged like tidal waves. They clashed with the scarlet aura and started devouring each other like mad animals.

The fear of being possessed finally lifted a little.

But before Mu Chen could sigh in relief, the Nine Netherbird spoke in a grave voice. "Be careful. This demonic pillar isn't as simple as you think it is. In my current state, even I cannot withstand it."

"What?!" Mu Chen's heart received a jolt. Even the Nine Netherbird couldn't defeat that strange demonic pillar? Just what was that thing?!

"If I've guessed correctly, this demonic pillar is an extremely powerful Primordial Ominous Artifact. Even a Sovereign expert wouldn't be able to suppress it!" the Nine Netherbird thought to him. There was an unconcealable fear in its voice.

"A Primordial Ominous Artifact?"

Mu Chen had no reaction to the phrase — it was clearly the first time he'd ever heard of it. Not that it mattered. His situation still wasn't any better.

"Then what do we do?" Mu Chen asked with a bitter smile. If the Nine Netherbird couldn't even defeat this Primordial Ominous Artifact, then wouldn't he end up losing control of his body to it?

The Nine Netherbird made a long pause. "Perhaps you can lure this Primordial Ominous Artifact into your aura sea."

"What?" Mu Chen was startled. That was the entire reason he'd

been fighting it so desperately. And now the Nine Netherbird actually wanted him to let it into his aura sea? Once this pillar took over that place, Mu Chen would be resigned to eternal damnation.

"If I was at full strength, I might've been able to fight it," the Nine Netherbird continued. "Besides, isn't there something else inside your body, aside from myself?"

Mu Chen was confused for a moment before he realised what the Nine Netherbird was talking about. "Are you talking about that mysterious black paper?"

"Yes."

"What is that black paper?" Mu Chen bitterly smiled. Why did so many unknown things have a tendency of piling up inside of him? He still didn't know how to use that mysterious piece of black paper.

"That black paper contains ancient ripples of energy. It seems to be the Primordial God Scripture, though an incomplete copy," the Nine Netherbird explained.

"What's the Primordial God Scripture?" Mu Chen was blankly asked.

"It's something similar to a Deity Tier Spiritual Art, except far more powerful. Ancient records describe its divine abilities as heaven-defying. Whenever a Primordial God Scripture appeared, forget ordinary Sovereigns, even Earth and Heavenly Sovereigns would flock to it. The Primordial God Scripture could help them take an even bigger step in their path of cultivation."

Mu Chen was stunned. So even Sovereign experts were attracted? He never imagined that this mysterious piece of black paper would have such a rich history. Pity that it was incomplete.

"Remember the mandala flower in your aura sea? That's the Divine Seal Array. If you lure the Primordial Ominous Artifact into your aura sea, you can use that flower to suppress it."

Mu Chen turned his thoughts towards his aura sea, towards the dark purple mandala flower quietly floating above a sheet of black. He couldn't feel any shocking ripples being given off from it.

But Mu Chen wasn't fooled; he'd already experienced how powerful the mandala flower could be. Back when the Nine Netherbird tried to take over his body, it'd been suppressed and sealed by this very same flower.

"Then let's give it a try."

Mu Chen wasn't an indecisive kind of person. The Primordial Ominous Artifact was so strong that even the Nine Netherbird couldn't contend against it, so he had no choice but to rely on his hidden trump card. True, there were some risks involved, but it was still better than idly sitting by and waiting for death to come.

"Huuuuu."

Now that Mu Chen had decided on his course of action, he cut off all thoughts of hesitation. He turned his mind and all of his Spiritual Energy — including the efforts he'd been spending to keep the baleful aura at bay — back into his aura sea. The Nine Netherbird's majestic black flames also rapidly receded.

Boom!

The moment he and his bird backed off, the baleful aura frantically invaded. The black demonic pillar buzzed as it hovered at the heart of the baleful aura. Then, as Mu Chen nervously watched, it turned into a streak of black light and charged into his aura sea, leaving a gust of baleful wind in its wake.

Shhhhuuuu!

The wind was blowing out in the real world. Su Xuan and the others were moving as fast as they could while Guo Xiong and Li Qing carried the seemingly-unconscious Mu Chen. His entire body was flushed red and his muscles were tightly wound.

"Hurry! We can brainstorm ways to expel the baleful aura from

him, after we leave the White Dragon Hillocks," Su Xuan urged as she kept looking over her shoulder. She couldn't see anyone chasing after them, but she still felt uneasy for some reason.

Did Bai Xuan really let them off, just like that?

A thought flashed through her mind and her face drastically changed. "Careful!"

Boom!

A scarlet lightning burst from the top of a mountain in front, and shot towards Su Ling'er.

Su Xuan raised her jade hands and an azure wall of water surged from the Dense Water Spiritual Pearl.

Bang!

The scarlet blow smashed into the wave and dispersed powerful ripples of Spiritual Energy and water. Steam rose from the energy of the impact.

The party drew to a halt as they turned towards the mountain with ugly expressions on their faces. A fiendish, god-like figure stood upon that peak, holding a scarlet spear, and staring down at them with annoyance.

"It's Bai Xuan!" Guo Xiong cried. So he'd chased after them. As expected.

"I said it already. None of you brats are escaping today." Bai Xuan announced as he looked down on Su Xuan's party. Their heartbeats sped up as they saw the raw bloodlust in his eyes.

"Big Sister, what do we do now?" Su Ling'er anxiously asked. Bai Xuan was too powerful for them to handle. On top of that, one of their main fighters was in a coma. They were completely at a disadvantage.

Li Qing's beautiful eyes coldly glared back at Bai Xuan. "Ling'er, you take Mu Chen to a safe location. Guo Xiong and I will aid your

sister.”

There was no way Su Xuan could win against Bai Xuan. But Li Qing and Guo Xiong might be able to take some of the pressure off her shoulders.

Su Ling’er’s charming face was filled with anxiety. She knew that they couldn’t change their situation, even if the three of them worked together.

Su Xuan sighed in a low voice. “We’ll do our best to delay Bai Xuan. If you can, you should take Mu Chen with you and escape ahead of us.”

“Big Sister!” Su Ling’er was startled.

“Stop. We don’t have any other options.” Su Xuan’s sweet-tempered expression turned cold. It was one expression she almost never made.

Su Ling’er bit her rosy lips and nodded, even though her eyes were brimming with tears. Finally, she held onto Mu Chen and retreated, though she briefly landed on a faraway mountain and nervously looked back at the confrontation.

Bai Xuan simply watched her go. Then, he raised his blood-red spear and stomped a foot. The entire mountain shook.

At last, he spoke in a voice that seemed to contain all the bloodlust between heaven and earth. “Prepare your last words. Then, prepare to die!”

Chapter 258 – Suppressed

Su Xuan, Guo Xiong, and Li Qing stood in the mountain forest. A majestic Spiritual Energy swept over them like a hurricane. Even the sea of trees stirred and bent under its pressure.

Su Xuan was the most powerful among them; she was already a Heavenly Transform Stage Middle Phase. She also owned the High Rank Spiritual Artifact Dense Water Spiritual Pearl, so her fighting strength was far greater than ordinary. Li Qing was useful if she borrowed the power of the Draconic Spirit Bracelets. That meant that Guo Xiong was the weakest among them; however, his cultivation technique focused on defense, so he made an extremely tough shield. If the three of them put their strengths together, they could be a force to be reckoned with.

But even then, the three of them had no confidence that they could defeat Bai Xuan. But given their circumstances, they couldn't resign to their fates, either. They had to put up a fight, even if they knew that they were going to die.

"A bunch of ignorant brats."

Bai Xuan's eyes were cold as he appraised the three of them. Then, flashed a cold smile as he gripped his scarlet spear. His eyes turned sharp and red as he stepped forward and a frightening wave of Spiritual Energy erupted like a volcano.

The frightening Spiritual Energy pressure washed over them.

"Go!"

Su Xuan's charming eyes focused as she shouted. She was the first to burst forward with a jade hand in the air. The glowing Dense Water Spiritual Pearl shot forward and raised a mountainous azure wave that swept towards Bai Xuan.

"Roar!"

Li Qing circulated her energy through one of the Draconic Spirit

Bracelets, which swiftly turned into a huge scarlet flood dragon. It roared with a frightening Spiritual Energy and charged towards Bai Xuan.

Guo Xiong also snarled and a dark yellow Spiritual Energy swept out. He tightened his fingers and a similar-coloured shield appeared, engraved with heavy mountains, and giving off an aura of infinite weight and steadiness.

“Impudence!”

Bai Xuan’s cold smile only grew broader as he watched them launch their terrifying offensive towards him. His form burst forward and the scarlet spear trembled as a majestic Spiritual Energy surged like rivers of blood to meet their attacks.

Bang!

A frightening gale of Spiritual Energy whipped up and wrecked havoc on the forest below.

Everything exploded into battle.

…

Boom!

Like a supreme ominous beast from ancient times, the black demonic pillar tore into Mu Chen’s aura sea with its baleful aura.

The moment the demonic pillar crashed into Mu Chen’s aura sea, he was instantly overtaken by an intense sense of pain. It felt like his aura sea was going to shatter.

The baleful aura flowed into him like bloody rivers. The black demonic pillar buzzed, as if it was celebrating the fact that it’d conquered him.

Mu Chen’s spirit stood up from its place on the Spiritual Energy wheel. His small face was grave as he watched the baleful aura. Behind him on the mandala, the Nine Netherbird also stood up, flapped its flame-clad wings, and hovered. Together, they

cautiously watched the black demonic pillar.

“You activate the mandala flower. I’ll keep it busy,” said the Nine Netherbird.

“Alright.”

Mu Chen nodded and his spirit moved towards the top of the mandala flower and sat down. At his current stage, he couldn’t control the mandala flower growing from the black paper; however, it’d been inside of him for years, so he was familiar with it. He could at least slightly activate it.

Liiii!

The Nine Netherbird flapped its wings and cried loudly. A baleful aura and an earth-shattering sea of black flames swept towards the black demonic pillar.

Onom! Onom!

The black demonic pillar sensed the attack and immediately countered. The buzzing rang louder as its bloody aura grew denser and crashed into the black flames like two waves colliding and destroying each other.

Even though the Nine Netherbird wasn’t at full strength, it seemed that the black demonic pillar wasn’t either. The two fell into a deadlock when neither managed to gain the upperhand.

However, that still wasn’t good news to Mu Chen. The baleful aura was simply too oppressive — it would damage his body if it stayed here for too long. He had to settle this as soon as possible.

Mu Chen’s spirit quietly sat on the mandala flower. Even though he understood the urgency of the situation in front of him, he wasn’t panicking. He knew that panicking wouldn’t help him solve his problems.

His mind gradually quieted down as he blocked off all external senses and immersed his state of mind into the mandala flower he

sat on.

As Mu Chen's mind sank into the mandala flower, his tightened facial muscles gradually loosened, and a look of peace took its place. An indescribable sense of vigor and boundless profound intent rippled through his heart.

The mandala beneath him began emitting a faint, dark purple glow, and its beautiful petals slowly blossomed open. However, there was also a frightening power within its beauty.

The violet light rippled and collected into a sphere of light around the mandala flower. Mu Chen had the vague sensation of an ancient Sanskrit chant echoing and buzzing through his aura sea.

When the sound reached the baleful bloody aura, a ripple spread over its savage surface and pacified it.

The black demonic pillar within the bloody sea flickered with scarlet runes. The ancient Sanskrit resounding across Mu Chen's aura sea made it feel dangerously uneasy.

However, the feeling only provoked its anger and it exploded with an undeniable rage, breaking through the Nine Netherbird's sea of black flames.

"Let it through."

Just when the Nine Netherbird was preparing to re-engage, it was startled by the voice from behind. The creature turned to face Mu Chen, who was still sitting on his flower. His eyes were already open, but they were a strange, dark violet hue.

The moment Mu Chen's spirit leapt from the mandala flower, the flower exploded with beams of dark purple light. The rays intertwined with each other and formed a net of purple light.

Shhhhhuu!

The net woven of light sailed through the air and landed

perfectly on the black demonic pillar. The moment the pillar was captured by the net, its bloody baleful aura dispersed.

Onom! Onom!

Bloody runes appeared on the surface of the black demonic pillar as it shifted into various shapes in an attempt to escape the net. Eventually, it realised that there was something strange with the light net.

This purple light net wasn't as simple as it seemed. It appeared as only beams of light, but upon closer inspection, those lines were actually rivers of mystical runes. Those runes were the reason why the black demonic pillar couldn't break free.

The violet mandala slowly circulated and tugged on the black demonic pillar, just like a venus flytrap that'd caught its prey.

Boom! Boom!

The pillar's bloody sea surged as it desperately struggled. Slowly, the ancient baleful aura even managed to stop the mandala's pull.

The mandala flower was a mysterious existence, but the black demonic pillar was just as strong.

"Nine Netherbird, attack it!" Mu Chen urged when he saw the pillar's crazed struggle.

The Nine Netherbird nodded and snapped its wings. Black flames gathered and turned into a pair of formless black wings that burned with a dark light; however, there were no flames blazing from its surface. Even so, Mu Chen could sense the frightening energy gathered there.

"Shhhhhhuuuu!"

The black wings carried their owner forward in a streak of light, right into the demonic pillar at lightning speed. The pillar shook at the force of the impact and was sent flying. The mandala flower wasted no opportunity to pull it forward.

The moment the black demonic pillar was pulled into the mandala flower, those beautiful petals rose and closed the flower into a tight bud. Glowing runes floated over the petals and turned into violet shackles, binding the black demonic pillar.

Clash!

The black demonic pillar continued to struggle and the chains clinked and clanged in response. However, the number of shackles only increased, until the black demonic pillar was thoroughly sealed.

Mu Chen and the Nine Netherbird suddenly felt as if a heavy weight had been lifted off their shoulders.

Mu Chen's spirit carefully approached the mandala flower. The black demonic pillar still towered, even though it was now tangled in countless violet shackles and its powerful energy had been suppressed.

"I've finally dealt with the big guy."

Mu Chen smiled as he looked over the tattered black pillar. His eyes suddenly focused on something and said in astonishment, "There seems to be name inscribed on it..."

He studied the ancient characters and knitted his brows. Words this old were quite hard to recognize.

"Great...Meru.....Demonic Pillar?"

Mu Chen muttered, "Is 'Great Meru Demonic Pillar' the name of this item?"

He turned back to the Nine Netherbird. "You should know something about it, right? Since you've lived for so long." If they were to speak of knowledge and experience, the Nine Netherbird clearly possessed more than him.

The Nine Netherbird stared at him for a moment, then glared and flapped its wings. "Among the Nine Netherbirds, I've only just

reached adulthood!”

Mu Chen was startled, “You’re already so powerful, even though you’ve just reached adulthood?”

The Nine Netherbird proudly raised its slender and graceful neck. “Did you think that absolute geniuses only existed among your human race?”

Mu Chen rubbed his nose.

The Nine Netherbird lazily peered down at Mu Chen, “Anyways, you’d better think about how to deal with the aftermath of what just happened. Even though the black demonic pillar has been sealed, it has still left a large amount of baleful aura inside your body. If you don’t get rid of it soon, your body will be corroded.”

Mu Chen smiled and narrowed his eyes, as an eager smile rose at the corner of his mouth. He wasn’t surprised. Of course he already knew that.

“This baleful aura is also a form of energy… I got it. I’ll need to use them next.”

Chapter 259 – Wont Die

Boom!

A violent Spiritual Energy swept over the forest like a storm, leveling the trees with its sheer force.

Claaaang!

A bloody Spiritual Energy violently tore at the sky. Whenever one of his opponents — the azure wave or the scarlet dragons — charged at it, they were thrown back. Neither of them could match its might.

Su Xuan and Li Qing were pale — especially Li Qing, whose heavy chest was heaving. Even though she owned the High Rank Spiritual Artifact — Draconic Spirit Bracelets, she was still only at the Quasi-Heavenly Transformation Stage. There was simply too much of a distance between herself and Bai Xuan. If Su Xuan hadn't been pressuring him, she probably would've lost by now.

Even so, the situation wasn't encouraging.

"How long can you guys hold on?"

The bloody spear in Bai Xuan's hand trembled and a razor-sharp bloodlust swept around him. He coldly smiled at the two young women who were backing off.

Su Xuan ground her teeth as she continued to circulate the Dense Water Spiritual Pearl to resist Bai Xuan's incoming attacks.

"I'm done playing around. I'm not wasting any more time on you!" Bai Xuan announced as his eyes turned cold. The longer this dragged on, the thinner his patience wore. Even though he still controlled the situation, he still had to deal with them quickly to avoid unnecessary trouble.

Boom!

The moment his words landed, he tightened his grip on his

bloody spear and his eyes turned cold. A boundless Spiritual Energy swept out, and the sky seemed to darken in response.

Lines of blood-red light illuminated the sky behind him, surged, and took the shape of a massive bloody python. Its pupils were scarlet-red and filled with deep animosity.

“Soul of the Blood Python!”

Bai Xuan’s expression was cold. Then, the spear in his hands exploded forward in a dazzling scarlet light. The Blood Python struck out from behind him, so swiftly that it whipped up a wind as strong as roaring thunder. The serpent swung its tail, coiled around the spear, and soared towards Su Xuan and her allies in a sea of blood-red light.

The sheer oppressiveness shocked them.

“Mountain of Dense Water!”

Su Xuan’s expression turned exceptionally grave as she moved the Spiritual Energy within her body and growled. A massive azure wave rose into the air like a solid mountain of blue water, gathering and twisting, until even the space around it seemed to bow before its frightening weight.

“Draconic Spirit Bracelet, Dragon-Flood Dragon Massacre!”

Li Qing also circulated her Spiritual Energy through the Draconic Spirit Bracelets as much as she could. Two spiritual loops erupted with whistles of spiritual light as the scarlet dragon and flood-dragon intertwined in a red spiral. The pressure of this display was impressive, to say the least.

Boom!

The frightening attacks clashed again and again. Surges of Spiritual Energy rippled out and created a berserk hurricane that ravaged everything in this land. The wind howled.

“You guys want to defeat me, just by yourselves?” Bai Xuan

questioned as he watched their attacks meet with a cold smile in his eyes. He clenched his fist and the massive python darted away, emanating a baleful aura.

Boom!

The Blood Python crashed into the azure mountain of water. The frightening impact forced the mountain of water to give in, until finally, the entire wave exploded.

The azure water mountain had been dissipated and the Blood Python hadn't been injured. It charged forward with its dense, baleful aura, and met the scarlet dragons again.

Dong!

An earth-shattering impact rang out, and the two dragons mournfully cried. The Spirit Bracelets dimmed and flew backwards, landing in Li Qing's hand.

Pfffft.

Li Qing and Su Xuan both turned pale and coughed up mouthfuls of fresh blood. Their auras dimmed as the attack sent them flying backwards. It was clear that they'd suffered heavy injuries.

The Blood Python continued its charge towards them, with whatever strength it had left.

"Mountain Shield!"

Guo Xiong shouted as he took a step forward. His yellow shield exploded with a blinding light and a mountain of runes materialised on its surface, giving it a deep sense of profound intent and stability.

Dong!

The Blood Python hit the light shield with a loud noise, and Guo Xiong was nearly jolted off his feet. He took a few steps back as fresh blood flowed between the fingers of his shield hand.

But Guo Xiong was a strong-willed warrior. Even if he bled in

rivers, he'd still hold on to his shield of light. Like Su Xuan and Li Qing, he was also sent flying by several metres before he managed to catch himself with a roar of frustration. Only now did the Blood Python run out of Spiritual Energy and disperse.

Guo Xiong heaved for air as he caught his footing. His arm was still trembling as he turned his sweat-filled face towards the pale-faced Su Xuan and Li Qing and asked through his teeth, "Are you alright?"

Su Xuan and Li Qing bitterly smiled. Bai Xuan was way too powerful. There was no way they could defeat him, even if they worked together.

Guo Xiong ground his teeth as he solemnly declared, "You two go ahead. I'll keep him."

"You can't do that alone."

Su Xuan clenched her fists, ground her teeth, then suddenly turned around to face the mountain peak that Su Ling'er perched on. She was still watching them with a face full of anxiety. Su Xuan growled, "Take Mu Chen with you and leave!"

"Big Sister!"

Su Ling'er was so anxious and upset that her eyes had turned bloodshot. She stomped her feet in frustration and the unwillingness to abandon them and escape.

"Don't let us die in vain!" Su Xuan sternly retorted.

This was the first time Su Ling'er had seen such a stern expression on her sister's face. Tears flowed down her face as she ground her teeth and picked Mu Chen off the ground, preparing to escape.

"Haha, what a righteousness act to abandon yourself and save others. But it's pointless." Bai Xuan coldly stated as he watched them. "Do you really think you can block my way?"

Guo Xiong coldly smiled back. “You’re welcome to try!”

Bai Xuan’s eyes turned cold. Without warning, he moved like a ghost and appeared right in front of Guo Xiong. The scarlet spear thrust forward, overflowing with a baleful aura.

Guo Xiong was caught off guard; however, his powerful light shield managed to form again, just in time.

Clang!

Sparks flickered and Guo Xiong was overwhelmed with shock as he watched a series of cracks rapidly crawl over the surface of his shield.

“Break!” Bai Xuan’s arm trembled and the light shield exploded. The spear whipped towards Guo Xiong’s chest like a dragon flying at lightning speed.

Shhhhhhuu!

An azure wave rose between them and caught the spear, causing it to veer off course just enough so that the spear tip pierced through Guo Xiong’s shoulder.

Guo Xiong howled in pain as he drew back. Blood gushed from the hole in his shoulder — the wound had rendered his entire arm useless.

Su Xuan and Li Qing immediately took defensive positions in front of Guo Xiong. They glared at Bai Xuan, who looked back at them with the mocking expression of a cat toying with a mouse.

“Little miss, if you try to run, your Big Sister and your friends might die by my hands.” Bai Xuan threatened as he smiled at Su Ling’er. She was still holding onto Mu Chen and was prepared to escape.

She paused her steps as she bit her rosy lips so hard that a thin line of blood trickled down. Her lovely face was filled with glistening tears and desperation. But finally, she made her

decision. She wiped those tears from her face and raced away with Mu Chen in tow. She knew that staying any longer would only make all their sacrifices be in vain.

Bai Xuan smiled at that. There was a vicious glint in his eyes as the bloody spear trembled, then burst towards Su Xuan's party in a powerful attack.

Su Xuan's party was suddenly surrounded by the dangers of Bai Xuan's sudden outburst. That blood-red spear could pierce through any one of them.

"Haha! Your Big Sister won't be able to hold on for much longer."

Bai Xuan ferociously rained attacks on them, all the while taunting the small trembling figures with a cold, distant, and demonic voice.

Su Ling'er covered her rosy mouth with a small hand, then clumsily wiped away her tears. Finally, she recovered enough of her composure to declare, "Bai Xuan, I definitely won't let you go!"

Bai Xuan coldly smiled. "Really? Then let's wait until I kill your sister and your friends. Then, I'll get rid of you." He turned to the three, whose offense was steadily growing weaker. Suddenly, his eyes took on a chilly expression and he launched the bloody spear with a powerful energy, heavily smashing it into all three of them.

Pfffft!

The three of them coughed up mouthfuls of blood as their bodies flew backwards. Their faces were as white as paper.

"Take another step, and your Big Sister is really going to die!" Bai Xuan threatened with a smile as he moved to stand right over Su Xuan. The bloody spear in his hand stabbed towards her slender snow-white neck with enough force that a gale whipped up around them.

Without turning around, Su Ling'er imagined the scene that was occurring behind her back. She paused and her shoulders

trembled. More blood spread over her rosy lips.

But just as Bai Xuan expected Su Ling'er to turn around and attack him, she spoke in a low, hoarse voice. "Bai Xuan, I will definitely find you. And when I do, I will definitely kill you."

Then, the whites of her eyes flushed red and she flashed away.

Bang!

But before she could get too far, a firm arm suddenly stopped her. Su Ling'er was startled by the touch and looked down to see Mu Chen slowly raise his head from her arms.

His face was flushed and his pitch-black pupils were now scarlet-red. Veins stood out from under his skin, and fresh blood oozed from his skin. All this, coupled with the indescribably baleful aura in his eyes, gave him a horrifying appearance.

Mu Chen was like a bloodthirsty Asura who'd just climbed out from Purgatory.

Others felt stabs fear from the mere sight of him.

"Mu Chen...you..."

Su Ling'er was also frightened by Mu Chen's appearance. She found herself overwhelmed by her emotions and broke down sobbing. "I was supposed to make sure that nothing happened to you. Otherwise, Big Sister and the others would've died in vain. Hurry up and leave me."

A boundless baleful aura rippled through Mu Chen, and he slowly raised a bloody, veined hand to wipe the tears from the young woman's cheek.

His face — that made others cower in fear — brightened with a smile that Su Ling'er was so familiar with.

A soft voice soothed her emotions. "Don't worry. I promise that not a single one of them will die."

Chapter 260 – Power of the Ominous

Su Ling'er stood on the mountain peak, staring wide-eyed at Mu Chen's terrifying appearance. She didn't know why Mu Chen had assumed this form, so she wiped her tears and asked, "What are you planning to do?"

She wondered what he was planning. Did it matter? The end had been foretold — Bai Xuan was simply too powerful. Even her big sister wouldn't be able to defeat him. So how could Mu Chen, who was only at the Heavenly Fusion Stage, possibly do anything?

"Wait for the chance to escape with your big sister and the others. Run far and don't come back for me. Understand?" Mu Chen demanded, even as the strength in his eyes weakened as his voice grew hoarser. It seemed as if there was an endless baleful aura surging within his voice, and made it sound ice-cold to others.

Su Ling'er was so frightened that she took two steps back. Mu Chen seemed as though he was trying to suppress something. The bloody marks covering his body constantly flickered, like a murderous Asura that'd climbed out from Purgatory.

She speechlessly stared at Mu Chen, then nodded.

Mu Chen accepted her acknowledgement, then turned away without another word. Then, he moved like a streak of lightning towards the horizon. His hoarse voice echoed over the land. "Bai Xuan. The item you seek is in my possession. But as to whether or not you can take it back... that depends on your ability."

Bai Xuan coldly smiled as he watched Mu Chen with eyes like flying blades. "Haha! So you came back, in the end."

"Mu Chen, you...!"

Su Xuan and the others grew even more distressed — they'd desperately managed to delay Bai Xuan in order to buy time for Su Ling'er. But now, Mu Chen had suddenly come charging back?

However, Mu Chen didn't bother with what was going through their heads. The ripples in his scarlet eyes were growing weaker by the moment; eventually, they disappeared entirely.

He tightly clenched his fist, then slowly loosened it.

If they had the power to see into his body, they'd find the baleful energy raging through his meridians with frightening power. But every time it pulsed through him, his meridians moved a little in response. An indescribably baleful aura filled him.

However, it was this pain that allowed Mu Chen to keep a clear mind, even as the baleful energy invaded him.

"What a madman."

The Nine Netherbird couldn't help shaking its head as it looked upon the carnage in Mu Chen's aura sea. The baleful energy was an extremely oppressive force and excelled at corroding the mind; once Mu Chen's mind fell under the the baleful aura, he'd turn into a murderous puppet, forever unable to wake up.

The baleful energy was powerful, but also risky to engage with. A single misstep and Mu Chen would be giving himself to it. What a daring individual!

Mu Chen quietly stood in the sky. The instant the ripples in his eyes disappeared, his aura nearly faded away as well.

The blood-red marks stuck to Mu Chen's skin and wriggled like worms. It was an uncomfortable sight, to say the least.

"We're already this far, and yet you're still trying to deceive me? What a reckless fool!"

Bai Xuan coldly smiled when he saw the strange look in Mu Chen's eyes. He didn't feel threatened by Mu Chen's current form; after all, Bai Xuan was a Heavenly Transformation Stage Late Phase. Plus, Bai Xuan had a High Rank Spiritual Artifact and his combat abilities were top notch, even among his peers. Wouldn't it be easy for him to deal with a single Heavenly Fusion Stage brat?

“Die!”

Bai Xuan burst forward and the bloody spear in his hand rippled with Spiritual Energy as it tore through the air towards Mu Chen.

“Mu Chen, watch out!” his allies cried.

Mu Chen didn’t seem the register their warning. The moment before the bloody spear pierced his chest, he reached out a hand and grasped its shaft.

Creak! Creak!

The infinitely sharp spear emitted an ear-piercing screech as fresh blood flowed from Mu Chen’s hand, down the tip of the spear. The bloody marks on Mu Chen’s skin darkened.

Bai Xuan’s expression slightly changed. He was starting to feel uneasy.

This Mu Chen was different from the one he’d met back inside the treasury.

Mu Chen gripped the spear tip as he raised his head to show his bloodshot, scarlet-red eyes. It was as if his eyes were two seas of blood, rolling and overflowing with a baleful aura.

Bloody marks appeared on his face and gave him the image of a bloodthirsty Asura.

“Boom!”

The baleful aura surged out of Mu Chen’s body like a bloody sea. The sky turned dark red.

Thin bloody lines were slowly trickling down Mu Chen’s skin, from places where his veins had burst through. Even though Mu Chen himself was a powerful force, the baleful energy was still too powerful and oppressive for his body to handle.

“This…”

Bai Xuan, Su Xuan, and the others all watched in astonishment at

the familiar scene before them.

They trembled as they became overwhelmed with shock. Wasn't this exactly what'd happened to the demonic black pillar, when it first broke its seal?

But now, the baleful energy was far more horrifying than it'd been before.

But why was this happening to Mu Chen?

Su Ling'er remembered Mu Chen's demand and quickly made her retreat, even as she towed the other three along.

Mu Chen made sure that they'd escaped a good distance before he flashed a smile filled with bloody marks. But now, it was an extremely savage sight. The animosity on the wind even affected Bai Xuan's aura.

"What a façade!"

Bai Xuan glared as he snarled. His palm trembled as he pulled back on the blood-red spear and tore it from Mu Chen's hands with a red shower of blood. He stepped forward, then swept the spear back towards Mu Chen, this time with enough force that it left dizzying afterimages.

Boom!

A blood-red baleful aura surged from Mu Chen's body, like a shell of red armour. He allowed Bai Xuan's sharp spear to reach him.

Shhhhiiiiiii!

The moment the powerful spear met the shell of baleful aura, it was corroded away. However, the spear's gale still ripped open new wounds on Mu Chen's body.

But those new wounds weren't enough to deter Mu Chen. On the contrary, his scarlet eyes deepened in colour and a deep roar built up in his throat. He released it as his torrential baleful energy took the form of a second bloody spear.

Shhhhuuuuu!

Mu Chen trembled from the surges in his body and his clash with Bai Xuan. Powerful shockwaves rippled from the impacts, and the nearby mountain peaks crumbled.

On one faraway mountain peak, Su Xuan and the others stood and watched the confrontation with fear and worry in their eyes. They realised that right now, Mu Chen was capable of standing his own against Bai Xuan!

Guo Xiong couldn't help his astonished murmur. "How could he have grown so much?"

Something flickered in Su Xuan's charming eyes. "That's the same power as the black demonic pillar back in the Spirit Treasury. My guess is that Mu Chen has been taken by its baleful aura."

When Su Ling'er heard that was said, she instantly grew anxious. "Then Mu Chen...?"

"I think he's trying to use the battle to expel the baleful aura inside his body. But if that's true, then he's in an extremely dangerous position, right now. That baleful aura is extremely oppressive; if Mu Chen doesn't handle it properly, he could be devoured. The baleful aura would take over his senses and he'd turn into a massacring puppet."

Su Xuan sighed as she stared at the faraway figure shrouded in red. "The best we can do right now is trust in Mu Chen."

Clang!

The two blood-red spears clashed and the force rippled out. Even the space around them began to twist.

Bai Xuan's face turned steel-grey and astonishment filled his eyes. He refused to believe that Mu Chen had actually kept up with him for several exchanges, and still didn't show any signs of slowing.

It was as if Mu Chen's strength had caught up to his.

Bai Xuan was in disbelief. But he wasn't your average expert — he slowly began piecing together the clues and filling in the rest with calculation.

"Is he borrowing the baleful energy that's invading his body?"

Something flickered in Bai Xuan's eyes as he stared at Mu Chen's blood-marked face. There wasn't the slightest hint of emotion in Mu Chen's eyes. Just a pure bloodlust. Bai Xuan flashed a savage smile. "How are you any different from a bloodthirsty beast?"

It was clear to him that Mu Chen had borrowed the power of the baleful energy; but in exchange, he'd lost consciousness and had turned into the massacring puppet.

"Since you're in such deep pain, let me free you."

Bai Xuan abruptly shot up, stirring up waves of Spiritual Energy. He roared and a boundless Spiritual Energy rose from behind him, like a colossal blood-red beast. A dense animosity soared into the heavens.

"Demonic Blood Beast, Blood Smelting Sea!"

Bai Xuan shouted as his scarlet beast suddenly exploded. It turned into waves of blood that filled everything between heaven and earth.

Onom!

The bloody sea carried an earth-shattering power as it swept down from the heavens and ground every mountain in its path into dust.

"Die!" Bai Xuan savagely smiled. Mu Chen slowly raised his head as a mocking smile spread across his strangely marked face. The scarlet pupils, that'd been filled with animosity, rippled.

"Roar!"

An endless sea of baleful aura surged from Mu Chen's body,

forming its own version of a bloody, starry sky. Within this bloody sky, a massive white tiger took shape. One with scarlet-red eyes.

This Divine Seal of the White Tiger, which contained a boundless killing intent, slowly merged with the baleful aura, becoming an even more fearsome force. Even heaven and earth trembled before it.

Mu Chen hovered as the animosity filled the sky around him. As he floated before the huge white tiger, the mocking smile on his blood-marked face grew even wider.

“It’s you who’ll die!”

Chapter 261 – Bitter Blood Battle

“Roar!”

The white tiger hovered in the starry sky, its scarlet eyes contained a bloodlust that could murder the world. Its terrible animosity and killing intent soared into the clouds. All of the beasts within a hundred miles trembled with fear.

Su Xuan and the others stood on a faraway mountain peak with astonishment plastered all over their faces. It wasn’t because they’d never seen Mu Chen execute the Divine Seal of the White Tiger — it was the same one he’d used back at the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, when he’d withstood Li Xuantong’s sharp attacks.

But this Divine Seal of the White Tiger, was far from what it’d been before.

The white tiger in the sky looked like a living, breathing animal. Its limitless bloodlust blanketed the entire region.

“Roar!”

The white tiger roared towards the sky and lept forward, treading over the starry sky. Its glowing killing intent overflowed from its body and began twisting the space around it, as it charged towards the bloody sea that was rushing to meet it.

Bang!

The white tiger and bloody sea clashed and created a powerful gale that leveled the forest and crumbled the mountain peaks around them.

Chhhhhiiii. Chhiiiii.

The tiger’s stripes glowed with bloodlust. Every time the two forces met, it was as if a river of lava had met an avalanche — freezing and melting in repeated cycles.

Mu Chen's Divine Seal of the White Tiger was renowned for its murderous intents — adding the baleful aura made it even more powerful. Words could not describe the terrifying power it now contained

"How is this possible?!"

Bai Xuan's face twisted when he saw what'd happened. His finishing move was completely ineffective against Mu Chen!

"That damned brat is still conscious?" Bai Xuan snarled through his teeth. Just what kind of monster was he? How could he still maintain his consciousness, with that baleful energy corroding his body?

"Withstand it!"

The bloody spear in his hand trembled in response to his order. A torrent of Spiritual Energy swept out with his bloody sea in a tireless effort to divert Mu Chen's attack.

"Roar!"

The tiger snarled furiously in the face of the obstacle, and its red eyes grew even brighter. Then, without warning, its body began shrinking; however, its murderous stripes stayed as bright as ever.

The glowing stripes charged onward, dispelling Bai Xuan's bloody sea wherever its paws landed. The bloody fight filled the sky, as if the entire space had turned into an Asura's battlefield.

Bang! Bang!

The bloody sea continued to crumble under the assault of the Divine Seal of the White Tiger. The beast was an unstoppable fiend as it charged towards Bai Xuan.

"I refuse to believe that you're not dying today!"

Bai Xuan's eyes reddened as he watched the ferocious Divine Seal of the White Tiger bear down on him. He was a Heavenly Transformation Stage Late Phase; however, h'd been beaten into

such a sorry state by the Heavenly Fusion Stage Middle Phase Mu Chen. How can he bear such shame?

“Octa Desolate Blood Battle Art, Blood Soul War Spear!”

Bai Xuan shouted as he formed several hand seals. Surges of Spiritual Energy gathered around him and turned into a blood-red war spear, roughly a hundred feet long. It was the color of freshly-spilled blood and emitted a savage aura.

It was clearly an offensive Spiritual Art of great power.

Onom!

It pierced through the sky with its dense, desolate aura and clashed with the Divine Seal of the White Tiger!

Bang!

Heaven and earth trembled as the Spiritual Energies exploded. Both Mu Chen and Bai Xuan suffered heavily and flew back, smashing into the peaks of separate mountains. Massive cracks appeared on the cliff walls behind their backs.

“Pfffft.”

Bai Xuan coughed up red blood as his eyes became filled with anger and anticipation. He looked towards Mu Chen, who was presently picking himself out of his own crater on a mountain not far away. His body was also covered in blood, making him look like a creature with red skin. His scarlet eyes still glowed with a limitless anger.

However, Mu Chen acted as if he’d suffered no wounds at all; he ignored the intense pain he must have felt, as if he were only a mere tireless doll, made only to fight.

“That bastard!”

Bai Xuan’s eyes were dark as his heart let out a roaring wail. Even he couldn’t help the tinge of fear in his heart as he faced against this new Mu Chen.

Mu Chen couldn't care less about his state — he simply allowed the blood to flow from his wounds. However, his scarlet eyes were fixed on Bai Xuan as he licked the drop of blood at the corner of the lips and flashed him a savage and bloodthirsty smile.

Shhhhhhu.

His scarlet eyes stared at Bai Xuan. Then, he burst out again.

"I'll kill you, brat!" Bai Xuan roared as a boundless Spiritual Energy whistled. A vigorous fist of wind heavily smashed head-on into Mu Chen.

Both of them used their fiercest moves as they struggled for another dozen exchanges. Both suffered more injuries. The layer of blood on Mu Chen's body grew thicker, and more blood rained off as he moved.

Bai Xuan wasn't in a very good state, either. His clothes were shredded as he, too, became covered in blood. Among his wounds was one finger mark that'd nearly penetrated his chest and reached his heart.

Su Xuan and the others felt their skin crawl as they watched the two blood-dripping men battle. Those two must be insane.

Between the two of them, Mu Chen had been infected by the baleful energy; therefore, his consciousness was faint. Meanwhile, Bai Xuan had been driven into such a state purely by Mu Chen's fierce and persistent offence.

Because he's facing Mu Chen's suicidal-like attacks, if he was a little less ruthless, he would have collapsed long ago.

But even so, there was no way he could endure for much longer.

No matter how ruthlessly Bai Xuan fought back, he was still made of flesh and blood; he could still feel fear. However, the Mu Chen before him didn't even know of this emotion called fear...

Bang!

Up in the sky, the two man clashed again and coughed up more mouthfuls of blood out and flew in opposite directions. Bai Xuan trembled as he ground his teeth. “Crazy little brat…”

He looked at his own body, which was covered with wounds. The intense pain made him tremble and the ruthlessness that’d been in his eyes was beginning to be replaced with fear.

“I can’t carry on like this. This madman’s conscious has long been corroded away by the baleful energy. He’s doomed already, so I can’t risk my life with him!” Something in Bai Xuan’s eyes flickered. He’d lost control of current situation a long time ago. How could he have expected that he’d be forced to such a state by Mu Chen?

Bai Xuan ground his teeth as his figure flew out. As he retreated, he called out a piece of black jade and shattered it with a twitch of his fingers.

A black cloud quietly dispersed.

Rustle!

But as Bai Xuan made his retreat, the blood-soaked Mu Chen quickly caught up to him. His attacks were ruthlessly aimed at Bai Xuan’s vitals.

Bai Xuan didn’t want to risk his life, so he began slowly retreating; but he soon realised that it was an ineffective strategy. Mu Chen was already running amok, right before his eyes.

“Brat, I’ll kill you!”

Bai Xuan was enraged.At first, he thought that he was in control of the situation. But, right now, it had turned into an awkward situation that he couldn’t retreat, even though he wanted to. The knowledge drove him mad. He picked a good opportunity and stabbed the bloody spear in his hand towards Mu Chen’s chest with lightning speed.

But Mu Chen didn’t even try to evade the ferocious attack. He

shifted slightly and simply allowed the spear to run through his shoulder. Then he moved forward, and closed the gap between himself and Bai Xuan in only an instant.

After Bai Xuan's spear pierced through Mu Chen's shoulder, he directed his line-of-sight towards Mu Chen's face, which was filled with a bloodthirsty and savage look. Bai Xuan's lips shivered, "Madman!"

Mu Chen's way of fighting without any regard for his life had completely shattered Bai Xuan's confidence.

"Shhuuuuu!"

Mu Chen's bent two of his fingers as a bloody light surged. He took the opportunity to attack whileBai Xuan was shocked. The attack carried the baleful energy with it as it stabbed towards the latter's throat at lightning speed.

Bai Xuan's heart turned cold as both of his palms immediately moved to defend his throat.

Mu Chen's scarlet eyes flickered as all the baleful energy within his body was forced into his two fingers. His fingers then turned blood-red, to the point that even bloody crystals started to form at the tips of his fingers.

In that instant, Bai Xuan felt that something wasn't right. However, before he could retreat, Mu Chen's fingers pierced his palms.

An intense pain coursed through him as Mu Chen's fingers, which looked as though they were molded from fresh blood, pierced through his palms. Furthermore, his ferocious might didn't decline in the slightest. After piercing his palms, Mu Chen aimed for Bai Xuan's throat once more.

Shhhhiii!

A fine sound was heard as a bloody light pierced through the back of Bai Xuan's head.

Bai Xuan's body turned stiff as he widened his eyes. His face was filled with disbelief. His lips trembled, and he looked like he wanted to speak, but not a single word came from his mouth.

Mu Chen's fingers penetrated through his throat. He slowly raised his scarlet pupils and the redness in his eyes washed away, like a tide pulling back. His pitch-black pupils and spirit were restored as well.

"Who told you...that my conscious was corroded away? I was only making use of the baleful energy." Mu Chen said with a hoarse voice. His face was covered in blood as he gave Bai Xuan a smear of smile. Meanwhile, Bai Xuan still had blood flowing out of his mouth.

"If you want to kill me, then there'll be a price to pay..."

Mu Chen gently patted Bai Xuan's face and gave it a gentle push. The latter tottered for a moment, then fell onto a mountain peak.

Bang! Bang!

Both of them landed on the mountain peak. Mu Chen, who'd suffered heavy injuries to begin with, spurted out a mouthful of blood. He looked to the side at Bai Xuan, whose eyes were wide open as fresh blood flowed from the corner of his mouth. The latter was trembling as he stared viciously back at him. A faint and hoarse voice sounded out, little by little.

"You...you guys, not a single one of you will be able to escape!"

Mu Chen looked at Bai Xuan, who slowly took his last breath. His brows frowned. Even on his deathbed, this guy still made others uneasy. Not a single one could escape? What could Bai Xuan in his current state do to them anyways?

Mu Chen shook his head. Although he felt uneasy, he could only lie down on his stomach. He couldn't even move as the intense pain coursed through his body and made him understand that his injuries were extremely serious.

The current him no longer had any fighting ability left.

Shhhhuu! Shhuu!

A gale sounded out as Su Xuan and the other three came towards him at a fast speed. When they landed on the mountain peak, they saw Bai Xuan, who had already taken his last breath, and Mu Chen, who couldn't move. They were shocked, but after a long moment, they exchanged complicated glances.

This guy really managed to kill Bai Xuan...

That was a Heavenly Transformation Stage Late Phase expert!

"Are you alright?" Su Ling'er immediately moved forward and carefully lifted Mu Chen, who was covered with blood.

"Quick, let's leave this place."

Mu Chen said in a hoarse voice with the last of his energy.

When Su Xuan the rest heard what he said, they were stunned for a brief moment. They didn't question Mu Chen as they lifted him and rapidly moved away.

However, just when they were about to leave, a faint laugh abruptly sounded from the sky, causing their bodies to turn stuff.

"Haha, how formidable. You actually managed to kill Bai Xuan. The Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy's reputation is truly justified..."

Su Xuan and the rest immediately raised their heads and saw a black-robed youth standing on top of a pine tree, looking at them with a smile.

That youth's appearance wasn't very outstanding. But at the center of his brows was a black mark of a coiling demonic dragon. As he smiled, the demonic dragon grew savager, little by little.

When Su Xuan and the rest saw the black-robed youth carrying a longsword on his back, their faces couldn't help drastically changing.

“Mo Longzi?!”

When Mu Chen heard that name, his heart trembled.

Mo Longzi, ranked 2 on the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy’s bounty board.

Chapter 262 – Reinforcements

Mo Longzi.

This name was known to them just a few days ago, when Su Xuan mentioned the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy's Bounty Board. As for those students that were training themselves in the vast Northern Heavens Continent, this name was as frightening as a fiend.

It's said that this person possessed excellent cultivation talent and was extremely ruthless. He was fully nurtured by the Demonic Dragon Palace. After all these years, nearly every student that has encountered him, when they're training outside, lost their lives. Furthermore, his methods were extremely cruel. Everyone that was killed by him were decapitated and their heads were placed on top of the corpse. On the top of every head, there were three joss sticks that were covered in fresh blood.

Even the higher-ups of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy were furious at the cruelty of this person. They had once sent the Punishment Squad to get rid of him. However, although they were able to heavily wound him, they'd also paid a great price. But the crucial part was that he managed to escape every single time. Whenever he reappeared, he would become even harder to handle.

If someone asked who was the most fearsome person that a Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy's student could encounter, it would be Mo Longzi.

The face of Su Xuan and the rest turned pale as they directed their lines-of-sight towards the top of the pine tree, towards that black-robed youth with a longsword behind him. The latter had a light smile on his face, but they could feel the chill that was coming from their bones.

Who could have imagined that they would encounter that unlucky star here?

This was definitely an existence even more fearsome than Bai Xuan.

Su Xuan tightly clenched her teeth as she felt helpless. When they encountered Bai Xuan, they could still put up a fight. But now that they've encountered Mo Longzi, it'd be difficult for them to have any chance of escaping.

"It seems like this calamity won't be easy to escape." Guo Xiong bitterly smiled as the despair was seen within his eyes.

Mu Chen wiped the fresh blood off the corner of his mouth with great difficulty as he endured the intense pain that coursed throughout his body. He tightly stared at that figure and also felt helpless in his heart. His state was too terrible. If he fought again, he would probably have to pay a huge price.

But, at this point of time, the baleful energy within his body was already exhausted. If he fought again, he could only depend on Nine Netherbird's power.

But if that's the case, then the injuries on his body would worsen.

If he is unable to see any other choice, then he could only take that course of action. Even if the consequences are dire, it's still better then throwing his life away.

"Haha, what's with all your expressions? To kill Bai Xuan, you guys are still pretty formidable. Within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, I believe that none of you are nameless people, right? I wonder, what's your ranking in the Heavenly Ranking?" Mo Longzi said gently with a smile at everyone from far away.

"None of your business!" Guo Xiong's expression turned dark. Towards this executioner, whose hands were drenched with god knows how much blood from the students of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, he was naturally disgusted with him.

"What great bravery, I'm impressed." Mo Longzi smiled as he gave Guo Xiong a big thumbs up. Shortly after, he abruptly raised

his thumb and thrust it out.

“Careful!”

Su Xuan’s face changed as her jade-like hand rose. The Dense Water Spiritual Pearl burst out with a dazzling light as the azure tidal wave swept out and formed a heavy line of defense.

Shhhhhuuu!

The fine sound of a gale was heard as a black light tore the heavy waves of water apart. Thereafter, it heavily hit onto Guo Xiong’s arm and a bloody hole appeared with fresh blood flowing from it.

Guo Xiong’s face turned pale, but was unyielding. He clenched his teeth and didn’t issue a sound. His ferocious gaze stared towards Mo Longzi.

Mu Chen covered his mouth as he heavily coughed. His eyes turned a little cold at this moment as he stared at Mo Longzi and softly said, “Friend, if you push us too much and if there isn’t any path for us, even if I die, I’ll drag you along.”

Su Xuan and the rest were startled as they blankly looked at Mu Chen. If anyone else said that to Mo Longzi, perhaps they would find it funny. But towards Mu Chen, who had just managed to kill Bai Xuan, they didn’t have that kind of mood.

Along the way, they’ve seen too much of this youth, who doesn’t possess the powerful strength, but the means that he was able to exert could shock others.

Far away, Mo Longzi’s eyes slightly narrowed as he looked at Mu Chen indifferently. Thereafter, his voice sounded out, “Bai Xuan was killed by you, right? Indeed, you’re formidable, since you’re actually able to achieve this step with only Heavenly Fusion Stage Middle Phase strength. It’s simply unimaginable.”

“However, did you really think that you’re qualified to threaten me?” He smiled as the demonic dragon mark slowly stretched out, displaying its ferocity.

“Then, you can give me a try.”

Mu Chen’s eyes slightly closed as he lightly broke free from Su Ling’er’s support. He slowly stepped out and at the depth of his black pupils, black flames surged out, little by little. As for the surface of his body, black flames began to surge.

The temperature in this heaven and earth was raised.

“Mu Chen!”

Su Xuan and the rest said in alarmed tones. They were a little anxious and worried. No matter what method Mu Chen possessed, the current him was already heavily injured. If they were to encounter another battle, it would naturally be a huge burden for him.

Mu Chen waved his hand, as his black pupils blazed with black flames, staring at Mo Longzi. At this time, there wasn’t any other path for them left. This person before them wasn’t someone easy to deal with.

Mo Longzi slightly narrowed his eyes as he looked at Mu Chen, whose body was blazing with a peculiar black flame at this point in time. His brows were slightly raised as the smile that he had on his face lessened. From the latter, he could vaguely sense the danger.

“What an interesting kid. But if that’s the case, then I want to see more of your methods.” Mo Longzi smiled. His character was too ferocious. Mu Chen’s speech was clearly not sufficient to scare him.

Mu Chen sighed in his heart. It seems like this was inevitable.

The black flames blazed on the surface of Mu Chen’s body. The intense pain that came from his body made a cold sweat appear on Mu Chen’s forehead. However, he did not say a word and took a step out.

Faraway, Mo Longzi also smiled as he stretched his hand out and slowly grab onto the longsword that was behind him. He lightly

trembled as the screeching of the sword resounded throughout the heavens. A frightening sword aura soared up into the clouds.

Mo Longzi was just holding onto the longsword and did not take any action. An earth-shattering amount of sword aura gathered around him. Slicing the pine tree beneath him, as well as the cliff into pieces.

“There aren’t that many students in your Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy that can make me use this Dragon Scaled Sword. Today, you’ve forced me to use it, pretty good.”

The longsword in Mo Longzi’s hand was slowly raised as he pointed towards Mu Chen. The sword aura was spreading and, vaguely, the roar of a dragon could be heard.

The face of Su Xuan and the rest turned even more pale. This Mo Longzi obviously wanted to kill Mu Chen, as he was immediately using his Dragon Scaled Sword.

“You guys, retreat first.” Mu Chen said softly.

Su Xuan and the rest clenched their teeth, then nodded their heads, before retreating at fast speeds.

Mo Longzi’s figure gradually started to float as he stared at Mu Chen. He lightly smiled and tightened his grasp on the longsword that was held by him, as though it was made from dragon scales and gently slashed out.

“Dragon Scaled Sword Art, Beheading Dragon!”

A sword slashed out without any sound. Thereafter, Mu Chen could see that the entire space looked like it was shattered by Mo Longzi’s sword. A frightening sword aura was roaring as it took the form of a dragon and flew over with a frightening speed and demeanor.

That sword was impossible to dodge.

Mu Chen deeply inhaled a mouthful of air. His eyes turned

solemn as both of his fists were clenched tight, and he was ready to borrow Nine Netherbird's strength to confront his enemy.

Onom!

However, just when Mu Chen was about to take action, the sky behind him was ripped apart. A dark gold long spear shot out like a golden comet, bringing along an unrivaled gale, and heavily clashed with that dragon-imaged sword aura.

Bang!

A shocking, clashing sound was heard as the sword aura and spear light swept up, causing even the space to turn twisted.

Mu Chen, who was about to take action, was stunned by the scene before him. Who was it that helped them?

That golden long spear dispersed the sword image. With a whirl, it landed on the sky above, creating a towering image. An extremely shocking might rippled and engulfed everything between the heavens and earth.

The golden long spear was roughly ten feet in length, with a ferocious exterior appearance. The tip of the spear was like a golden lotus. The lotus petal was closed and formed an extremely sharp spear tip. A golden light circulated, while looking as though it could rip the space apart.

"That's..."

Su Xuan and the rest was stunned at the sight of the golden long spear. Shortly after, joy flushed out of their eyes, "Heavenly War God's Lotus Spear!"

"Shen Cangsheng?!"

Hearing that name, Mu Chen's heart trembled. That belonged to the legendary figure in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, ranked 1 in the Heavenly Ranking, Shen Cangsheng?

Boom!

There was a violent gale that burst from the sky from far away. A golden light that looked similar to a meteorite was flying over. With several flickering lights, it crossed a distance of over ten feet and appeared in before them.

The moment that golden light figure took action, the golden war spear emitted a buzzing sound as it flew back and was held firmly by a huge hand.

Mu Chen also turned his head around at this moment, and looked towards that direction. The golden light slowly dissipated and a black-clothed youth appeared in his line-of-sight. His black hair was draped over his shoulders. His face was resolute, his eyes looked quiet, like a deep pond. An appearance that looked as though he wouldn't be shaken, even if the sky fell.

He held onto the golden war spear as he stood on the sky. A disdainful aura was spreading out that caused others unable to neglect it.

"It really is the upperclassman, Shen Cangsheng."

The moment Guo Xiong saw that figure, a flame blazed in his eyes. He spoke with joy, and was ignoring the pain that was inflicted on his body.

Su Xuan and the rest were slightly relieved with a feeling that they had just escaped a calamity. Who could have thought that Shen Cangsheng, who was rarely seen, would appear here?

The youth that was holding onto the golden war spear raised his head and a faint smile appeared on his firm face.

"Mo Longzi, if you want to fight, then I'll accompany you. Why trouble my underclassmen?"

Chapter 263 – Shen Cangsheng

Up in the mirror-clear sky, a youth stood, wielding a golden war spear. His fighting spirit flashed through his eyes and he carried himself with a dazzling air that attracted everyone's attention.

Mu Chen also looked at him in surprise. He'd heard about this number one from the moment he entered the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. As far as the student body was concerned, he was, perhaps, the only one who could become the undisputed overlord.

His place as the first of the Heavenly Rankings was unshakable.

Mu Chen never imagined that the rarely-seen first in the Heavenly Rankings would make an appearance here.

Mo Longzi watched Shen Cangsheng from a short distance away, with his hand tightly wrapped around the dragon-scaled longsword. Then, he smiled. "You've been chasing me for two months now. Aren't you tired yet?"

"I accepted your bounty mission. How could I return without your head?" Shen Cangsheng smiled back. His golden spear trembled slightly.

"You can't kill me."

Mo Longzi shook his head and lazily replied, "You're formidable, but not even the elite team could kill me. There's no way you could accomplish it all by yourself."

"At the very least, if I keep chasing you, then you won't be able to kill more students of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy."

Shen Cangsheng smiled as a light flashed across his eyes, "Furthermore, I'm good at finding opportunities. The moment you slip, you might find your life belonging to me."

Mo Longzi narrowed his eyes and the demonic dragon on his

forehead writhed even more viciously. He gripped his longsword and lightly said, “Well if you put it that way, then, wouldn’t it be better for me to kill you, so you won’t cause me any more trouble?”

“If you’ve finally thought it through, then come and fight me.” Shen Cangsheng challenged as he pointed his golden spear towards Mo Longzi. His eyes overflowed with his fighting spirit.

Mo Longzi coldly stared at Shen Cangsheng. A forest of sword lights slowly took shape around him, until even the space around him seemed like it’d been sliced into ribbons.

The spear in Shen Cangsheng’s hand trembled and surged with a golden energy. His body flared with a brilliant light, as if he’d turned into a golden sun. His fighting intent soared, as if he was a god of war.

“If you treat me like that moron Yu Yuan, then you’re going to get the worst of it.”

Mo Longzi lightly smiled as a sword-sharp look filled his eyes. He took a step forward and the longsword slightly shook. That instant was filled with the sounds of swords cutting through air. An ashen-grey light rose from behind him and turned into an earth-shattering quantity of sword images.

Each sword image looked genuine, and his sword aura surged into the skies, as if it could tear the sky apart.

“Dragon Scaled Sword Art, Sky Shattering Myriad Sword!”

Onom!

The longsword whistled through the air, raising another wave of sword images that rained down on Shen Cangsheng in an astonishing display.

Mu Chen’s expression was grave as he watched the terrifying attacks. Mo Longzi was powerful, indeed. Mu Chen guessed that he’d probably already reached the Heavenly Completion Stage.

His talent must be monstrous to reach the Heavenly Completion Stagee at such a young age. But since Mu Chen came to this world, such monstrous talents were in no short supply.

Even though Mo Longzi was his opponent, Mu Chen couldn't help sighing in admiration. From the looks of it, Mu Chen was only four or five years older; however, Mu Chen was still speechless at his strength. No wonder he was the number 2 on the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy's Bounty Board — he was someone who could make the Punishment Team fail every single time.

Shen Cangsheng raised his head, and the myriad of swords were reflected in his pupils. He tightened his grip on the Celestial Lotus Wargod Spear, which flickered with golden light. Then, his arm trembled and the spear thrust forward.

"Celestial Lotus Rain!"

Onom!

A golden light flickered as a golden lotus bloomed on the tip of his spear, expanding until it was a few hundred feet wide.

Shhhuuuuuu! Shhhhuuu!

The golden lotus slowly revolved as it blossomed, before it burst into thousands of individual petals, all bathed with golden light.

That golden light filled the skies and shattered the spectacular golden rain. Its beauty contained deadly power.

Boom! Boooom!

The shattered lotus petals gathered again and formed a single golden pillar. The column streaked across the horizon and crashed down on the sword images. In that instant, everything between heaven and earth trembled from the collision.

A series of loud explosions rang out as a wild Spiritual Energy rippled out. The forest below suffered a fatal blow and was leveled. The surrounding majestic mountains were sliced into huge

boulders before they fell into pieces.

The two flowing powers crashed as each attempted to destroy the other; however, neither was able to gain the upperhand. After remaining in a deadlock for more than half an hour, they finally dispersed and released powerful gales of Spiritual Energy.

“Haha, no wonder you’re ranked first in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. It’s not surprising that Yu Yuan fell by your hands. As far as today goes, we’ll let you off. But if we meet again, you won’t be so lucky.”

Mo Longzi focused on the disappearing sword images, then turned to smile at Mu Chen and his friends. Then, he disappeared. In the span of only a few breaths, he’d completely vanished; however, his faint voice still echoed over the forest.

Mo Longzi was very straightforward with his actions; with Shen Cangsheng there, he wouldn’t be able to gain an advantage, forget about killing Mu Chen’s group. Therefore, it’d be better for him to retreat and save his energy.

Shen Cangsheng looked in the direction that Mo Longzi had vanished to, but he didn’t give chase. His fingers twitched and the golden spear disappeared. Then, he turned around to face Mu Chen, who was still hovering in midair. Black flames still blazed around him, showing his cautiousness.

A look of shock flashed across Shen Cangsheng’s face when he finally had a chance to study those black flames wrapped around Mu Chen. He didn’t know why, but something made him feel slightly threatened.

Mu Chen sensed Shen Cangsheng’s gaze. Finally, he allowed the black flames to gradually retreat into his body and revealed a body covered in blood and wounds.

“Many thanks, Senior Brother Shen.”

Mu Chen cupped his hands towards Shen Cangsheng as he made

a hard smile. If Shen Cangsheng hadn't shown himself, Mu Chen might've had to endure a savage battle. His wounds would've become even graver.

"You killed Bai Xuan?" Shen Cangsheng asked as he looked at Bai Xuan's corpse on a nearby mountain slope. There was a smear of astonishment in his voice.

Of course, he could tell that Mu Chen's cultivation was still that of a Heavenly Fusion Stage Middle Phase. There was a wide gap between him and Bai Xuan. But even still, before Shen Cangsheng had shown himself, Mu Chen had dared to stand against Mo Longzi. His courage was commendable.

Mu Chen lightly nodded, but didn't care to fill in the details. He'd only been able to kill Bai Xuan because of the Great Meru Demonic Pillar's ominous energy in his body.

"Mu Chen is a freshman who enrolled in our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy only a few months ago. But don't underestimate him! If it wasn't for him, I'm afraid that we wouldn't have escaped safely." a soft and gentle voice sounded. Su Xuan and the other three had flown over.

"A freshman?" Shen Cangsheng was stunned as he looked at Mu Chen again. His voice was filled with surprise as he spoke, "I never thought that such an excellent freshman would appear in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. It seems like the future will be lively."

"I only relied on a few backdoors[1. A euphemism for barely legal cheating.]," Mu Chen smiled.

"Having access to backdoors is also a form of power. In a battle of life and death, only the result is of consequence," Shen Cangsheng said firmly.

Mu Chen felt the same. If he were caught in a life and death battle, of course he'd use every means to survive. It didn't matter if

they were backdoors or not.

Next to him, Guo Xiong stared at Shen Cangsheng with blazing eyes. The very thought of meeting this Ranked 1 excited him.

“Your wounds are grave. Here’s a Profound Life Pellet. It should help your current state.” Shen Cangsheng extended his hand and revealed a tiny, exquisite box resting in the center of his palm. Inside the box was a faintly glowing white medicinal pellet. Circles of light revolved around the pellet as its fragrance permeated the air and drew their attention.

Mu Chen was slightly stunned. This pellet didn’t look like an ordinary one. It would be a great help for any wounded person. However, the gesture felt too heavy and made him hesitate briefly.

But his hesitation didn’t hold out for long before he accepted it and cupped his hands. “Many thanks for the pill. I, Mu Chen, will remember this favor. I will return it when chance arises.”

Right now, Mu Chen desperately needed such a medicinal pellet to help him recover from his injuries. Refusing too hard would be pretentious — he obviously needed it — so why not accept it? At most, he’d owe Shen Cangsheng a favor. All he had to do was return it when he got the chance.

Shen Cangsheng smiled. He was pleased with Mu Chen’s lack of pretentiousness. As for the favor, he could care less. At Mu Chen’s current strength, it’d be hard for him to return it.

“I’ll have to trouble you this time.”

Su Xuan gave Shen Cangsheng a grateful look. If Shen Cangsheng hadn’t reached them in time, then their small party would’ve suffered a considerable loss, given the situation at the time.

They didn’t know what tricks Mu Chen had pulled from his sleeve, but whatever he’d done, he’d paid a high price. She didn’t want to see him suffer for saving them.

Shen Cangsheng shook his head. “I’ve been chasing after Mo

Longzi for the past two months. He seemed to have received some sort of message from the Demonic Dragon Palace and rushed over here. I only followed him, and never expected to run into you guys."

Guo Xiong inwardly smacked his lips. Shen Cangsheng was probably the only student in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy who could pursue Mo Longzi.

"What are you going to do next?" Shen Cangsheng asked Su Xuan's party.

"We've accomplished our mission. Now, we'll be returning to the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy." Su Xuan answered. Their journey had been half a month long and filled with danger. Therefore, they should return to the Academy and get a long, good rest.

"I'll see you guys there. Junior Brother Mu Chen was gravely injured; therefore, your fighting strength should be down by quite a bit. Mo Longzi is vicious, merciless, and unnaturally cunning. Who knows when he might secretly turn back." Shen Cangsheng muttered.

"Then, we'll have to thank you again."

A relieved sigh passed around their small party. With Shen Cangsheng guarding them until they returned, their group would be entirely secure.

Mu Chen also smiled as he looked north. They could return the Academy at last.

Chapter 264 – Returning

With a bodyguard as powerful as Shen Cangsheng seeing them back, of course they wouldn't meet any trouble. In only two short days, they'd already closed in on the border of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Over those two days, Mu Chen recovered a lot from the ominous energy, thanks to the medicinal pellet that Shen Cangsheng had given him. Furthermore, the strength of his Spiritual Energy had also risen.

Although the ominous energy was a dark and foreboding existence, it could also be considered a form of power. Mu Chen had exhausted most of the ominous energy during his battle with Bai Xuan, but he still had a little left over. He could benefit from absorbing those remains.

Mu Chen was elated at his quick recovery and felt even more grateful towards Shen Cangsheng. If it hadn't been for his medicinal pellet, then Mu Chen's wounds would've taken even longer to heal.

In the sky outside the Northern Heavens City, several light figures flew overhead and landed on a nearby mountain peak. It was Mu Chen's group, rushing back to the Academy.

"Senior Brother Shen Cangsheng, are you not following us back to the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy?" Mu Chen enquired as he looked at the black-clothed youth.

Shen Cangsheng smiled and shook his head. "I accepted Mo Longzi's bounty mission, but I haven't completed it yet. So, I won't return for now."

Guo Xiong smacked his lips when he heard that. No wonder Shen Cangsheng was Ranked 1 of the Heavenly Ranking. He actually dared to pursue the savage Mo Longzi. He was probably the only one in the entire Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy who would dare to do such a thing.

“Then, we’ll part here. I hope you’ll successfully accomplish your mission. By the way, our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy will be hosting the annual Hunting War next month. Will you be back for it?” Su Xuan smiled.

“Hunting War…” Shen Cangsheng narrowed his eyes.

“This year’s Hunting War will be especially challenging. According to my sources, the Guardians will be the three great generals of the Punishment Hall,” Su Xuan explained.

“The three great generals of the Punishment Hall? Those three? They’re actually coming out this year?” Shen Cangsheng was shortly taken aback, and a look of shock flashed across his eyes.

Su Xuan shrugged and nodded. “Those three were the top students of our seniors’ class. Even though they graduated, they still stayed to cultivate in the Punishment Hall. So if you don’t come back, then I’m afraid we might end up losing this year’s Hunting War.”

Shen Cangsheng knitted his brows, “I never thought they’d come out. Well, in that case, I’ll try my best to rush back in the time. Those three aren’t easy to deal with, and I also wish to spar with them.”

Su Xuan nodded with a light smile as she continued, “Since you’re willing to come back, then we might have a chance at the last stage. With you and Li Xuantong.”

Shen Cangsheng smiled and stayed briefly to make some more light conversation before he left in a streak of light and rapidly disappeared over the horizon.

“Haha, if Senior Brother Shen Cangsheng comes back for the Hunting War, then we might have a chance of winning.” Guo Xiong smiled as he looked in the direction that Shen Cangsheng had disappeared to.

“Hunting War? What’s that?” Mu Chen asked in confusion.

“The Hunting War is an event that our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy hosts every year. It’s a grand occasion where almost every single student participates in an intense battle. Who knows how much unexpected geniuses might appear?”

“Don’t make a mistake by thinking that all the formidables figures are already listed in the Heavenly Ranking. Some people are really good at enduring and hiding their presence.”

Mu Chen sighed and nodded. With so many students, there was no way all of them could be listed in the Heavenly Ranking. There were still more formidable figures hiding away.

“Shen Cangsheng was a dark horse. He used to be relatively unknown in our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. But his fame shot through the roof during one particular Hunting War — he defeated the Heavenly Ranking’s Rank 1, as well as the Guardian of the event. Since then, his name has spread far and wide throughout the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Even today, his position as the Rank 1 of the Heavenly Ranking is unshakable,” Guo Xiong said with adoration.

Mu Chen lightly nodded. Shen Cangsheng clearly wasn’t an ordinary guy.

“Then, who are these Guardians?” Mu Chen asked again. He realised that didn’t know a thing about these huge events in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.

“There are Guardians in every Hunting War. They’re never current students — instead, they’re from the Punishment Hall. Most of them are graduated students who didn’t want to leave the Academy, and simply stayed here to cultivate, instead. All of them are extremely powerful.”

Su Xuan lightly continued, “I heard that they’re sending out three Guardians this time — the Three Great Generals of the Punishment Hall.”

“Three Great Generals of the Punishment Hall?”

Mu Chen blankly repeated those words.

“Haha. Back in the days, the three of them were famed throughout our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. They still possess such fame within the Punishment Hall. Rumors say that a year ago, the three of them set out together on a mission to hunt down the Rank 1 on the Bounty Board, Mo Xingtian.”

“Mo Xingtian?”

Mu Chen was stirred by that. Mo Xingtian topped the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy’s Bounty Board. He was rumored to be the youngest Elder in the history of the Demonic Dragon Palace, and possessed monstrous talent and tremendous strength. He was far more powerful than Mo Longzi, who they’d encountered a few days before.

If the Three Great Generals were strong enough to chase after someone like that, then their strength must be extremely frightening.

“What was the outcome of that chase?” Mu Chen couldn’t help asking.

“Outcome?” Su Xuan said helplessly with a smile. “How could it be easy to deal with Mo Xingtian? Even the Three Great Generals together returned empty-handed. However, the fact that they were able to make a full escape from Mo Xingtian was already a considerable feat.”

Mu Chen also nodded. Mo Longzi alone was already very powerful, so the the Ranked 1 of the Bounty Board, Mo Xingtian should be even more fearsome. He wouldn’t be ranked so highly if he could be easily killed.

“For this Hunting War, the Three Great Generals will be the students’ common enemy. You can only claim victory by defeating them. Afterwards, you can exchange your Spiritual Light for

mouthwatering rewards." Su Xuan paused as her charming eyes lit up, "That would be the Spiritual Light Empowerment."

The moment she mentioned this Spiritual Light Empowerment, Mu Chen clearly noticed a burning desire flash across Li Qing's frosty face. He only smiled in confusion.

"This 'Spiritual Light' is formed from the purest Spiritual Aura. It'll be one of our objectives during the Hunting War. The more Spiritual Lights we collect, the more rewards we'll receive from the Spiritual Light Empowerment."

Su Xuan saw the blank expression on Mu Chen's face — he clearly hadn't followed her explanation, so she smiled and tried again. "I heard that you participated in the Spiritual Road before, so you should know about the Spiritual Road Empowerment, right? This Spiritual Light Empowerment is roughly equivalent to the Spiritual Road Empowerment. Both can greatly unleash your potential and enhance your strength."

"Oh?"

Now Mu Chen understood. His heart trembled. No wonder the Hunting War often allowed students who'd been in hiding to expose themselves. So, there were such great rewards at stake.

Mu Chen had participated in the Spiritual Road before, so he knew about the importance of the Spiritual Road Empowerment. If he hadn't possessed those means, then it would've been hard for him to catch up to the Kings of the Spiritual Road.

If the Spiritual Light Empowerment really had such miraculous abilities, then he definitely couldn't afford to miss out.

"But, in order to obtain the Spiritual Light Empowerment, you'll have to defeat the final Guardian, of course. That's where the Three Great Generals of the Punishment Hall come in — they will definitely be our opponents."

Su Xuan gently smiled, "Otherwise, why would I remind Shen

Cangsheng to come back for the Hunting War? Wouldn't I be finding more formidable opponents for myself?"

Guo Xiong sighed. "That's right. In the past, there's always been only one Guardian. But this time, there are three, and they're the renowned Three Great Generals of the Punishment Hall. Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong are probably the only ones who can contend against such formidable figures."

Mu Chen lightly nodded. Right now, you could say that Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong were the most powerful two in the entire Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. If the two of them weren't enough, then none of the students would win much from this Hunting War.

"Alright, we're almost there. Let's visit the Northern Heavens City to turn in our report and get the invitation to the Academy." Su Xuan said as she pointed towards the grand city — the Northern Heavens City, one of the external defenses of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.

Everyone else nodded in agreement to her words. Then, they moved and streaked across the sky, and entered the majestic Northern Heavens City.

They didn't stay for long in the Northern Heavens city. They quickly found an Academy mansion to make their report and successfully obtained an invitation. Soon, they were passing through the vast borderlands of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Within two hours, they were within sight of the endlessly imposing Academy itself.

They stared at the vast Academy grounds and couldn't help their sighs of relief. Smiles appeared on their faces. Their mission was complete.

Chapter 265 – Handing Over the Mission Report

In the sky of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, several lights were flying over from far away. They looked at the training grounds below as the numerous light images streaked across the sky. Their tightly tense emotions finally eased down.

After experiencing those killings, they were only able to feel at ease when they reached the gentle atmosphere within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Over here, they they were able to put down their worries as students of Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Over here, they would receive the protection from those colossal figures.

Mu Chen's party entered the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy and made their way towards the Mission Hall. Now that they've successfully completed their mission, it's better for them to hand their mission report over first and receive their rewards.

The Mission Hall sat at the northwest corner of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Within the crowd, a towering majestic huge hall stood to one side. On the sides of the huge hall, there was a frightening amount of people flowing in and out.

In the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, the Mission Hall was the most well-loved location. However, all of the students that could come here to accept the mission were those with the ability to. Especially the missions that required them to head towards the Northern Heavens Continent, those missions have strict requirements.

Mu Chen and his group landed in the Mission Hall under Su Xuan's lead.

Inside the Mission Hall, it was abnormally lit up. Along the walls, there were many crystal screens, and on those screens, there were

various missions that constantly changed.

Mu Chen's line-of-sight swept around and landed on the middle of the Mission Hall. There was a blood-red crystal pillar and on the pillar, there were names carved on it.

The ghastly colour caused this crystal pillar to attract the most attention in this vast hall. Every student that came here would look at those names on the blood-red crystal pillar with fear.

"Bounty Board"

Mu Chen focused his attention towards the top of the crystal pillar. There were three blood-red names flickering there that were dazzling to the eyes. This was the Bounty Board that he had heard so much about along his way here.

Mu Chen looked up on the crystal pillar and several familiar names entered into his eyes.

"Rank 1 of the Bounty Board, Mo Xingtian. Reward – 10,000,000 Spiritual Value Points, 1 Supreme Spiritual Artifact, 1 Deity Tier Spiritual Art."

"Rank 2 of the Bounty Board, Mo Longzi. Reward – 8,000,000 Spiritual Value Points, 1 Deity Tier Spiritual Art."

"Rank 3 of the Bounty Board, Blood Dragon – Mu Gu. Reward – 5,000,000."

"Rank 4 of the Bounty Board, Guo Xiong [1.This isn't the guy that's in Mu Chen's group, it's someone else]. Reward – 3,000,000."

The scarlet letters showed the danger that those names posed. The sky-high rewards would make the eyelids of others jump. However, everyone understood that not everyone could enjoy the sky-high rewards.

"Mo Xingtian's reward actually reached 10,000,000 Spiritual Value Points." Mu Chen couldn't help letting out a sigh. Ten

million, he could basically buy anything he wanted. Even the Blood Essence of the Northern Sea Dragon, he could get two of those.

“Up till today, no one has succeeded in obtaining his reward.” Su Xuan helplessly smiled as she continued, “That kind of figure is no longer someone that we, students, could handle. Even Shen Cangsheng could only go for Mo Longzi.”

Mu Chen lightly nodded. He encountered Mo Longzi before and understood the latter’s formidability. But that Mo Xingtian was even more powerful than Mo Longzi. According to his intuition, that fellow had probably stepped into the Heavenly Completion Stage cultivation long ago.

Even in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, being at the Heavenly Transformation Stage would allow someone to obtain an Elder rank. In those slightly weaker continents, they could basically proclaim them as Small Sovereigns.

“Let’s go and hand over our mission report. Furthermore, we also have to inform the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy about the emerged Demonic Dragon Palace.” Su Xuan said lightly. Thereafter, she took several steps towards the center of the Mission Hall. Over there, there was a huge crystal screen with students arriving and handing over their mission reports.

However, in that kind of place, the difficulty of mission had different rewards. Su Xuan walked straight towards the middle of the huge crystal screen, there was a white-haired elder that was snoring away. His thunder-like wheezing sounded out, but no student dared to bother him.

When Su Xuan saw him, she lightly smiled as she walked up. Her jade-like hands grabbed the elder’s beard and lightly pulled.

“Ah! Who?!” the elder that was in the middle of his beauty sleep instantly jumped up as he grabbed onto his beard and snarled in anger. But when he saw the smiling Su Xuan, he only snorted, “It’s you again. If you’re handing over your mission report, then hand it

over. Why are you treating an old man so crudely?"

"Hmph, you're always goofing off. I say, maybe I should pluck your beard off." Su Ling'er also walked up and snorted tenderly.

"You two brats."

Elder Liu helplessly rolled his eyes and directed his line-of-sight towards them, "You've completed the Heaven Rank Mission? So quickly? Why is there a Heavenly Fusion Stage brat, as well?!" his line-of-sight suddenly fell onto Mu Chen and was stunned. Thereafter, he said in a grave voice, "Girl, you actually brought that brat to the Northern Heavens Continent? Nonsense, what if something happened? Could it be that you sisters are fond of him?"

His words were decent, to those in front. But when he saw the person in the back, his words changed and instantly caused Su Xuan and Su Ling'er's faces to flush red.

"Damnable old fart, what nonsense are you speaking?!" Su Ling'er's face was boiling.

"Hehe." Elder Liu chuckled and continued, "What a joke. However, this complacency is against the rules. This brat's reward will be cut by half. Don't stare at me, this is only because we're familiar with each other. Otherwise, he would only dream on getting a single Spiritual Value Point."

Mu Chen was shocked, his Spiritual Value Points will be cut by half?

Their location was the Heaven Rank Mission's counter. Therefore, when Su Xuan and her party came, they attracted quite a bit of attention from their surroundings. The Su sisters possessed quite a bit of fame in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Naturally, it was easy to recognise them.

Elder Liu's voice also attracted a lot of attention. Everyone's gaze was staring weirdly at Mu Chen. That brat only possessed

Heavenly Fusion Stage strength, he shouldn't have the qualifications to accept a Heaven Rank Mission, right? Why did Su Xuan bring him along? Could it be that between them, there was some kind of relationship?

"Oi, old fart. Stop speaking such nonsense. The information said that it was a Wealthy Spirit Treasury when we accepted the mission. But when we arrived at the White Dragon Hillock, it was clearly a Sovereign Spirit Treasury. So what if Mu Chen's cultivation is only at the Heavenly Fusion Stage? The City Lord of White Dragon City, Bai Xuan, still die by Mu Chen's hands. If it wasn't for him, we wouldn't have been able to come back!" when Su Ling'er heard that Elder Liu was about to cut Mu Chen's Spiritual Value Points, she instantly became anxious and furiously barked.

When her words were spoken, there was a moment of silence in the surroundings. Even Elder Liu was slightly stunned. Clearly, he had yet to digest the information from Su Ling'er's words.

"Sovereign Spirit Treasury?"

"You're saying that this brat killed the City Lord of White Dragon City? How is that possible? I've gone to the White Dragon Hillocks for a mission once before. The City Lord of White Dragon City has cultivated to the Heavenly Transformation Stage!"

"It must be fake, right?"

The surrounding people exchanged glances as whispers broke out from them.

"Sovereign Spirit Treasury?" Elder Liu also recovered and carried on with some astonishment, "Isn't that impossible? From the news that we've investigated, it was just an ordinary Wealthy Spirit Treasury."

"Nonsense, the Sovereign Spirit Treasury was clearly left behind by the White Dragon Sovereign who fell in that place a few

hundred years ago. The City Lord of White Dragon City was also a chess piece from the Demonic Dragon Palace. Their aim was to obtain the Supreme Treasure left behind by the White Dragon Sovereign." Su Ling'er snorted.

"White Dragon Sovereign?! Demonic Dragon Palace? Are you guys speaking the truth?" when Elder Liu heard those two names, his face changed as he abruptly stood up. His face was filled with bewilderment.

"Hmph, how could it be fake? In the end, that bastard, Mo Longzi, had also arrived. If it wasn't for Senior Brother Shen Cangsheng, who arrived just in time, we wouldn't have been able to return anymore!"

Anger was struggling within Su Ling'er's charming eyes, "We struggled with our lives to get back. In the end, the fault was on your side, since the information wasn't accurate. If it wasn't for Mu Chen, none of us would have been able to return. If you dare to cut his Spiritual Value Points by half, I won't let you off!"

"Mo Longzi?!"

When the surrounding students heard that name, they instantly felt a chill in their bodies. A dense shock rushed from their eyes. Su Xuan and her party actually encountered Mo Longzi?

Elder Liu's face was filled with dread. His face no longer had any laziness as his line-of-sight was directed towards Mu Chen. Thereafter, he asked Su Xuan, "Was what she said the truth?"

"Correct, what Ling'er said was the entire truth. Elder Liu, if you don't believe us, you can question Guo Xiong and Li Qing, as well. Or, perhaps when Shen Cangsheng returns in the future, you can question him, yourself." Su Xuan lightly nodded as she continued, "Bai Xuan was someone from the Demonic Dragon Palace. His strength had reached Heavenly Transformation Stage Late Phase. Furthermore, it really was Mu Chen who killed him. In this mission, his credit was enormous. Therefore, Elder Liu can't be

confused.”

Next to her, Li Qing and Guo Xiong heavily nodded their heads.

Their surroundings were in complete silence, even Elder Liu was looking at Mu Chen with disbelief. He actually killed Bai Xuan, who was at the Heavenly Transformation Stage Late Phase with just his Heavenly Fusion Stage strength? How is that possible?!

Mu Chen was stared at by those gazes and felt unease. He helplessly spoke up, “Elder Liu, it was only due to some special means that I was able to kill Bai Xuan. It wasn’t my genuine strength.”

Hearing his words, shock filled the eyes of the surrounding people. They could care less about the means that Mu Chen used. They only knew that this brat, whose cultivation was only at the Heavenly Fusion Stage Middle Phase, actually killed an expert with Heavenly Transformation Stage Late Phase cultivation.

Heavenly Transformation Stage Late Phase, even in the entire Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, the number of students that reached that height could be counted on one’s fingers, right?

Elder Liu’s eyes looked at Mu Chen and only after a brief moment, did he retract his gaze. He extended his hands.

“Pass me all your Spiritual Value Point Cards. The reward will be as usual; however, you guys have to clearly tell me everything you learned on this mission. I have to report this to the Elders Regiment.”

Chapter 266 – Wheel

Mu Chen and his party exited the Mission Hall, raised their faces towards the blue horizon, and sighed breaths of relief. Now that they'd turned in their report, their mission was considered complete.

"Thanks for back there." Mu Chen smiled as he held his Spiritual Value Point Card. 1,500,000 Spiritual Value Points. This was his largest harvest since entering the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. And now, he was also another step closer towards the Blood Essence of the Northern Sea Dragon.

Su Xuan smiled back. "It's all thanks to you that we managed to complete this mission. It'd be ridiculous for us to let your rewards be halved."

The other three nodded at that. If it hadn't been for Mu Chen, they might not have returned alive — forget about the mission.

"Mu Chen." Li Qing suddenly spoke up. She raised her jade-like hands, called out her Spiritual Value Point Card, and tapped it. A concentrated light flew out from her medal.

She looked at him and quietly explained, "As I said before, you helped me win the Draconic Spiritual Bracelets, so my mission reward is now yours."

Mu Chen helplessly smiled back. Li Qing was a cold and strong woman — once she decided on something, there was no way to change her mind. All he could do was nod and accept the light streaming into his Spiritual Value Point Card. In an instant, his Spiritual Value Points was over 3,000,000.

Guo Xiong smiled too. "Haha. Here's some from me. I took Bai Xuan's High Rank Spiritual Artifact, even though you're the one who killed him. You definitely have to accept these 1,500,000 Spiritual Value Points."

A second light flew out from Guo Xiong's Spiritual Value Point Card.

When Mu Chen killed Bai Xuan, he didn't keep his High Rank Spiritual Artifact – Blood Spear — instead, he gave it Guo Xiong. After all, Mu Chen had already reaped the largest rewards from their mission to the White Dragon Hillocks. Not only did he obtain the White Dragon Spiritual Pearl, there was also the Ominous Artifact currently suppressed in his aura sea.

Mu Chen had clearly benefited the most from this mission.

Mu Chen could only smile bitterly as he watched the light pour from Guo Xiong's card into his own. But he knew nothing about the Great Meru Demonic Pillar inside of him. As of right now, he needed all the Spiritual Value Points he could get — therefore, he could only resign himself and accept their gifts. All he could do was make note of Guo Xiong's favor in his heart.

Su Ling'er spoke up as well. "Mu Chen, do you need more Spiritual Value Points?" Her slender fingers were wrapped around her Spiritual Value Point Card. She intended to help him, as well.

"I need a huge number of Spiritual Value Points — but everyone here also participated in this mission and deserves their rewards. I'll accept Li Qing and Guo Xiong's favors, and I'll return them when I get the chance. As for the rest, please stop giving me more favors to carry." Mu Chen sighed helplessly. Of course, he wanted to collect all the Spiritual Value Points he needed to purchase the Blood Essence of the Northern Sea Dragon, but he still found it hard to take his teammates' mission rewards.

Su Ling'er saw the determination in his eyes and quietly murmured, "Alright then. But if you ever need more Spiritual Value Points, you should come find me."

Mu Chen smiled and nodded in acknowledgement. Then, he turned to cup his hands towards the entire group. "Since the mission is over, I'll take my leave first and return to the freshman

area.”

He hadn’t seen Luo Li for nearly half a month and his heart was all tense from the yearning. He wanted to appear before her immediately, break the clam within her pupils, and take her into his arms.

Su Xuan and the others nodded. “Alright then. See you later.”

Mu Chen took his cue and turned to fly towards the freshman area. Barely ten minutes later, he slowed down as the familiar scene spread out before his eyes.

At the center of the freshman campus was a clear lake, and next to it was the plaza. Many members of the Goddess Luo Association were quietly seated and cultivating. At the center of the plaza were Zhou Ling and Ye Qingling.

Shhhhuuuu.

A gale whipped up and many of the cultivators opened their eyes in alarm to watch a single figure slowly descend into the plaza.

“Boss Mu Chen has returned!”

“Boss Mu Chen is back!”

The freshmen broke the silence and cried out in surprise when they saw him. Everyone stood up with joy in their eyes.

“Mu Chen?”

Zhou Ling and Ye Qingling also opened their eyes in disbelief when they saw Mu Chen standing in the plaza with them. A moment later, those expressions were replaced by joy.

“So, this guy is finally back.” Zhou Ling walked up to him and smiled.

Mu Chen smiled back, then looked around. “Where’s Luo Li?”

The moment he mentioned Luo Li, everyone’s expressions turned stiff. The other members of the Goddess Luo Association

also hesitated.

Mu Chen knit his brows at their hesitation. “What’s wrong?”

“Luo Li is recuperating in that small building of yours.” Zhou Ling mumbled as if he was hiding something.

“Recuperating?” Mu Chen’s face instantly froze over as he looked at Zhou Ling. His voice was ice-cold when he spoke. “Just exactly what happened?”

Ye Qingling bitterly smiled.” Quite a few things have happened in the half month you were gone. Yang Hong disbanded his Wyvern Union and took some of his men to join the Demon’s Gate.”

“Demon’s Gate?”

“The Demon’s Gate is a force created by the Rank 4 of the Heavenly Ranking, He Yao. It’s well-known in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy and it’s especially powerful. They’re second only to Li Xuantong’s Xuan Clan and Shen Cangsheng’s Judgement Squad.” Zhou Ling immediately explained.

“He Yao?” A cold light flashed through Mu Chen’s eyes as he continued, “What does he have to do with Luo Li’s injury?”

“Right after Yang Hong joined the Demon’s Gate, he started targeting members of our Goddess Luo Clan. He used to be afraid of you, but now that he’s joined the Demon’s Gate, he’s grown bolder. Plus the fact that you were gone from the Academy — he basically had nothing to fear. He started leading squads to stir up trouble and provoke us.”

Zhou Ling grounded his teeth as wrath filled his eyes. “We couldn’t bear it and fought with him. But he’s an extremely formidable enemy and his current cultivation has already reached the Heavenly Fusion Stage Late Phase. Even I couldn’t beat him.”

A look of embarrassment crept over his face as he admitted it.

“Zhou Ling wasn’t the only one who was injured. Any

messengers we sent to him also returned with injuries." Ye Qingling growled. "At first, we didn't tell Luo Li about it, because we didn't want to disturb her cultivation. But Yang Hong only grew more aggressive — he sent us a message demanding that we disband the Goddess Luo Association."

Mu Chen's eyes turned stone-cold. Since when was Yang Hong so unreasonable?

"The issue grew bigger and bigger until it reached Luo Li's ears." Ye Qingling bitterly smiled. "Of course, she took action."

"This matter grew bigger and bigger and entered into Luo Li's ears." Ye Qingling bitterly smiled, "Thereafter, she took action. She fought against three members from the Heavenly Ranking's top 20."

"She defeated more than ten despicable experts from the Demon's Gate. When those guys saw that they were losing the fight, they changed their tactics. Luo Li ended up fighting over fifty experts all alone. But in the end, those three top rankers still lost to her."

"But Luo Li also suffered from that battle, and that's why she's recuperating. The Demon's Gate hasn't dared to provoke us since, for fear of Luo Li's strength. That Yang Hong has also vanished without a trace." Ye Qingling grounded her teeth. Her hatred for Yang Hong was blazing.

Mu Chen narrowed his eyes as a chill flickered in his black pupils.

"Mu Chen, I'm so sorry. It's our fault. We were so weak that we needed her to help us in such a simple matter." Zhou Ling flushed red and the other members of the Goddess Luo Association lowered their heads in shame. True, Luo Li had challenged the experts of the Demon's Gate and beat them with no small amount of fame, but that fame felt like a knife to their pride.

Mu Chen lowered his eyes. "There must be someone else behind

Yang Hong. That's why a coward like him would dare provoke us."

"Someone else?" Ye Qingling's expression changed. "Are you talking about the Demon's Gate's boss, He Yao?"

He Yao was the only one who could order around the experts of the Demon's Gate. Otherwise, why would anyone listen to a nobody like Yang Hong?

Mu Chen's expression turned even colder as he stared at the ground. He Yao was probably pulling the strings. But why would he target the Goddess Luo Association?

Mu Chen balled his hands into fists. Right before he'd left on his mission, He Yao had asked him to hand over the seat that Su Xuan had given him. But Mu Chen had rejected him. At first, Mu Chen had thought nothing of it. But now, it was a very likely motive for He Yao's grudge against him. What a petty-minded person.

He Yao had probably done this to try and teach him a lesson. But he'd miscalculated — he hadn't expected there to be another formidable figure like Luo Li still guarding the Goddess Luo Association.

"He Yao." Mu Chen's cold eyes shifted.

Zhou Ling grounded his teeth again. "Mu Chen, what do you plan to do? If you're going to stir up trouble with the Demon's Gate, then take us with you. It doesn't matter how injured we are. We'll have them know that the Goddess Luo Association isn't a bunch of cowards!"

Mu Chen shook his head and smiled. "Don't worry. Let me handle this."

This wasn't Zhou Ling's fault. Mu Chen just simply never expected He Yao to be so petty. No wonder Su Xuan despised him so much.

"Then, what are you going to do?" Zhou Ling asked.

Mu Chen lightly smiled as he approached his small building. A quietness fell over the plaza.

“Send a message to the Demon’s Gate. Tell them that Mu Chen would like to visit five days from now, to express his ‘thanks’.”

Chapter 267 – Preparation

Creak...

The door to the small building was tightly shut. Mu Chen gently eased it open and peeked inside at the spotless interior. Then, he stepped through the entrance and slowly opened the door to Luo Li's room.

A faint fragrance wafted through the doorway — the kind that could captivate anyone who caught its scent. Mu Chen turned his eyes towards the window, where a young woman lazily reclined. She wore only a thin wrap that showed her pale, glossy legs.

Her slender jade-like arms were wrapped around those legs, and her exquisite porcelain-like face was resting against one knee. Her long hair, usually tied up, was currently draped loosely over her shoulders, like a bright splash of the Milky Way.

She was asleep. So relaxed and peaceful.

Mu Chen looked at her with deep affection in his eyes. He slowly stepped closer.

She sensed his presence the moment he entered her space. The tightly-shut eyes snapped open and her clear pupils flushed with alarm.

But that tension and alarm quickly dissipated when she laid eyes on the handsome youth at her side. A smile crept over her face as she exhaled a weak question that was filled with immeasurable joy. "You've returned?"

Mu Chen studied her exquisite face — she was definitely looking a little pale. It didn't look like it was anything serious, but his heart still ached for her, and his anger towards He Yao boiled hotter.

"I heard that you were injured?" Mu Chen asked as he moved a hand to cup Luo Li's tender cheek.

Luo Li shrank from his cold touch and shook her head with a smile. “No, I wasn’t.”

“Are you lying to me?” Mu Chen raised an eyebrow as he wrapped one arm around her slender waist, and the other below her knees, and pulled her into his embrace.

“Ah!”

Luo Li softly cried as she wrapped her jade-like arms around Mu Chen’s neck. She stared at him in embarrassment and pouted her small lips, “You just got back, and already started bullying me?”

Mu Chen’s heart pounded as he stared at the young woman pouting her small lips. It was a rare sight for the calm and distant Luo Li to show such a feminine side.

Luo Li noticed that Mu Chen was staring at her rosy lips and flushed a light pink. She twisted around his his arms with a displeased expression. “What are you trying to do?”

“Absence makes the heart grow fonder. What do you think I’m trying to do?” Mu Chen teased. Before Luo Li could react, he bent down and kissed, gently tasting the sweet and fragrant delicacy.

Luo Li stiffened at the sneak attack, but then surrendered to it. She loosened her hold around Mu Chen’s neck and allowed him to do as he wished.

Mu Chen enjoyed the warmth for a good moment, before putting her down. He couldn’t help grinning as he looked at Luo Li, who was now gasping for breath and flushed deep red. “What a delicious taste. I must inform you that this taste now belongs to me. As for how long… an eternity!”

“You rogue! Dream on!” Luo Li’s face became a deep red from his embarrassing words.

“Do you want me to bully you even harder?” Mu Chen grinned as he hugged her a little tighter.

Luo Li glared at him and turned away, fuming.

Mu Chen gently smiled as he laid Luo Li back on the soft bed. However, her arm was still around him, refusing to let go. Finally, he looked into her eyes and furrowed his brows. “How are your injuries?”

Luo Li lightly shook her head, “It's nothing much. I just exhausted myself. They had the advantage of numbers, but if I’d been fighting seriously, then they wouldn’t have gained an advantage.”

“The experts of the Demon’s Gate might be strong, but they’re nothing we can’t handle. The only problem is their Boss, He Yao. While you were gone, I always had to make sure I saved enough strength to guard myself against him.”

Not even Mu Chen had an accurate gauge of Luo Li’s strength. But since she could challenge more than ten experts of the Demon’s Gate all alone, then she should’ve at least reached the Heavenly Transformation Stage. However, He Yao still hadn’t made a move, so Luo Li had to keep her guard against him. That’s why she’d held back and gotten injured by the other experts.

“He Yao…” Mu Chen’s black pupils flared with a chill. However, he quickly smiled again. “If that guy isn’t going to act like a decent human being, then I don’t have to treat him like one.”

“What are you going to do?” A look of concern flashed across Luo Li’s face. The Demon’s Gate and He Yao weren’t that easy to deal with.

Mu Chen snorted. “They dared to hurt my woman. What kind of man would I be, if I simply took that?”

Luo Li flushed red again and rolled her eyes at him. However, a soft arc rose at the corner of her mouth.

“Then, I’ll go with you.” Luo Li said flatly. He Yao wasn’t weak. If Mu Chen went alone, it’d be hard for him to win.

Mu Chen shook his head. A chill flickered in his black pupils.

“No. Let me handle this.”

At that, Luo Li knew that Mu Chen had already drawn his plans. There was nothing else she could do, so she unhappily rested her head against Mu Chen’s chest and curled up in his arms like a kitten. Her long eyelashes blinked once, then closed as she absorbed his warmth and slowly fell asleep.

Mu Chen gently smiled at her — she was sound asleep. But when he raised his head again, a chill clouded over his charming face.

“He Yao... I originally intended to let you be. But, since you brought the fight to me, then don’t blame me for getting impolite.”

...

A deep night had settled over the compound. Mu Chen quietly stepped out from Luo Li’s room and made his way to the roof. He twitched his fingers and the the Spiritual Value Point Card appeared. A faint light illuminated the set of glittering icons on its surface.

Mu Chen’s eyes glazed over as he swept his eyes over the inventory, searching for the items he needed.

He was furious. If he did nothing, then this would happen again. Since He Yao thought he had nothing to fear from him, then he’d teach him a good lesson.

Even a Heavenly Transformation Stage Late Phase expert like Bai Xuan had died by Mu Chen’s hands. He had nothing to fear from a single He Yao.

His eyes finally pinpointed the items he needed. Then, he stowed away the card, turned into a streak of light, and flew towards the Spiritual Value Hall.

...

The next day, Mu Chen left the house after saying goodbye to Luo

Li. Zhou Ling and the others had already done as instructed, and passed Mu Chen's message to the Demon's Gate.

The message caused some disturbance within the ranks of the Demon's Gate, but the majority of those experts were only laughing at it. True, Mu Chen had left a deep impression at the Spirit Battle Stage, but no one thought he could compare to the top 10 of the Heavenly Ranking. Not to mention that the Demon's Gate had He Yao, Rank 4 of the Heavenly Ranking. What could a single Mu Chen possibly do to them?

They simply laughed it off. In fact, some of them even hoped that Mu Chen would actually pay them a visit. Did the boy really think that by receiving three moves from Li Xuantong, he would qualify to challenge their boss, He Yao?

The members of the Demon's Gate acted like they were watching a show. Everyone had heard the news. After all, both Mu Chen and the Demon's Gate were well-known within the Academy.

Everyone remembered the freshman who'd managed to take three moves from Li Xuantong. But if Mu Chen really went through with it this time, He Yao wasn't going to let him off with only three moves. How would Mu Chen handle it then?

In just two or three days, everyone heard Mu Chen's announcement. But the strange thing was that Mu Chen, the protagonist of the event, had suddenly vanished without a trace. Some suspected that Mu Chen had hidden himself out of fear.

In the Goddess Luo Association, not even Zhou Ling could find a trace of Mu Chen. But they never had any doubts about him. As someone who dared to challenge even Li Xuantong, he definitely wouldn't do something like run away.

There must be a reason why Mu Chen had vanished without a trace.

And time rapidly passed under all the boiling suspicions...

…

The headquarters of the Demon's Gate was located at the north end of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. It was a place filled with pavilions. Everyone there was a member of the Demon's Gate. You could say it was the Demon's Gate's territory within the Academy grounds.

Right now, there was quite a crowd gathered in the main hall of the largest and central pavilion.

At the head of the hall sat He Yao, casually sipping from a teacup. On his right, stood Yang Hong and a number of the Demon's Gate core members.

"Boss, tomorrow is the fifth day. What kind of game is Mu Chen trying to play? He still hasn't shown himself." A lean man asked in a low voice. His name was Chen Hou, ranked 18 in the Heavenly Ranking, and a Heavenly Transformation Stage Initial Phase. Just a few days earlier, he'd lost to Luo Li.

The others nodded. As the deadline drew closer, their curiosity grew stronger. Could Mu Chen have really run away?

He Yao faintly smiled and looked down into his tea. A white mist was curling up from its surface — the entire cup had frozen over as ice. He tightened his grip and the cup, frozen tea and all, shattered into pieces.

"What is there to guess about? We'll find out tomorrow. A freshman who managed to take three moves from Li Xuantong… haha, I'd really like to see what he'll do…"

Mockery filled his eyes.

"If he dares to show himself, then I'll make him understand that in this Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, there isn't a single person single person who can mouth-off at my Demon's Gate."

Chapter 268 – The Visit

Demon's Gate Headquarters.

The place was clearly livelier than usual. The courts outside the ring of pavilions was jam-packed — there were people on the ground, in the sky, and even standing on rooftops. Even more were on their way.

In five days, the news about Mu Chen and the Demon's Gate had spread far and wide. Mu Chen had already gained a reputation for his pact of three moves with Li Xuantong. That event had astonished everyone and engraved his name into the minds of many upperclassmen.

But even still, everyone believed that he was a long ways away from someone like He Yao, who was a genuinely powerful figure.

The pact of three moves had displayed Mu Chen's potential and talent; however, it didn't represent his true strength. Without that restriction, there was no way Mu Chen could've competed against a powerful expert like Li Xuantong.

Even though He Yao was only ranked number 4, there was no doubt that he was strong. Many even felt that He Yao was strong enough to take Rank 3, but was just being patient.

But, either way, Rank 4 was enough to show how powerful He Yao was. And now, Mu Chen wanted to pay a visit to the Demon's Gate to repay a blood debt. It wouldn't be an easy task.

Hundreds and thousands of Demon's Gate's members were already gathered in the spacious plaza in front of the Demon's Gate headquarters. Most of them were laughing and joking with each other, without the slightest care — in fact, many of them had mocking sneers plastered on their faces. They wanted to see how this loudmouthed freshman would come and stir up trouble on their doorstep.

He Yao sat, expressionless, in a tall chair at the very front of the headquarters. His face was stone-cold, except for the brightness of his pupils.

Behind him stood the core members of the Demon's Gate, and Yang Hong, who was towards the side. That guy was no longer arrogant or overbearing. True, his talent wasn't bad, but he was still only a freshman. There was no way he could compare to He Yao, and he knew that — so he made the wise decision of joining He Yao.

By borrowing the Demon's Gate's fame, he could break free from Mu Chen's shadow. As long as he worked hard to cultivate, he'd definitely surpass Mu Chen once again!

Flames lit up in Yang Hong's eyes. He will endure it, for now; but one fine day, he'd stand at the top of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Whether its Mu Chen or He Yao, he'd stand above them all!

The sky above the plaza was filled with countless students who'd come to observe. When they saw Demon's Gate's formation, they inwardly tsked. It looked like all of the Demon's Gate core experts were present. They were waiting for Mu Chen to arrive.

"Is the Demon's Gate using their formation to try and scare Mu Chen from coming?"

"Tsk, tsk. At the front of that group is He Yao, Rank 4 of the Heavenly Ranking. Chen Hou and the other two are ranked in the top 20s, and there are quite a few others in the top 50s. The Demon's Gate's strength is formidable indeed."

"Looks like Mu Chen kicked an iron panel this time."

"That guy really likes to stir up trouble. I heard he also got into a fight with Xu Huang. And now, it's with He Yao."

"But this time, that lucky guy is doomed."

Based on their whispers, they'd already decided on today's

outcome.

A particular group of people stood on the roof of a building, looking towards the plaza. The one leading them was Xu Huang, and next to him was Xu Qingqing. He sneered, “That Mu Chen still causes trouble everywhere he goes. The moment things get peaceful, he goes and knocks on the Demon’s Gate’s door. Does he really think He Yao is that easy to deal with?”

“Big brother, do you think he’s actually going to turn up?” Xu Qingqing asked him.

Xu Huang knitted his brows and looked around, but couldn’t pinpoint Mu Chen’s figure. However, his expression remained the same. “Mu Chen will definitely appear. Don’t underestimate him. If you give him a another year, there will definitely be a spot for him in the top 5 of the Heavenly Ranking.”

Xu Qingqing snorted, unconvinced. That brat wanted to enter the top 5 of the Heavenly Ranking? How was that be possible? His pact of three moves with Li Xuantong wasn’t even a genuine fight.

“He’ll definitely appear. But as to whether he can actually deal with this situation... that’s an entirely different question.” Xu Huang scanned the surroundings again. He really didn’t understand what Mu Chen could possibly do in this kind of situation, with his current ability.

A few rooftops away were Su Xuan, Su Ling’er, Li Qing, and Guo Xiong, who’d clearly rushed over after hearing the news.

“Big Sister, why hasn’t Mu Chen appeared yet?” Su Ling’er anxiously asked as she kept looking around. “Really! That guy just got back to the Academy and he’s already at it again. But this time, there’s not going to be a pact of three moves.

“I heard that He Yao was the one who caused this. After Mu Chen left, he sent his soldiers to stir up trouble with the Goddess Luo Association. Luo Li defeated them all, though I heard she also

suffered some injuries," Guo Xiong explained.

"Mu Chen and He Yao haven't really crossed paths before. It seems He Yao's hatred is because the spot for that mission went to Mu Chen." Li Qing offered with furrowed brows. Her tone implied her impression of He Yao.

Su Xuan nodded. She'd known for a long time that He Yao was a narrow-minded sort of person. But she never expected him to hate Mu Chen for something that small.

"Big Sister, you must help Mu Chen if anything happens." Su Ling'er pleaded.

Su Xuan lightly nodded. "I'm also responsible for this, so, of course, I won't sit by and watch as He Yao bullies him. However, we can't underestimate Mu Chen, either. He's not someone who speaks rashly. Since Mu Chen announced it, then he must have some confidence in dealing with this matter."

"He's the sort of guy who doesn't even fear someone like Mo Longzi. If He Yao wants to pressure him, that's ridiculous."

Li Qing and Guo Xiong also thought the same way. After that period of getting along with Mu Chen, they'd come to understand just how many unexpected tricks that youth had up his sleeves.

They still didn't know how today's events would turn out.

"The Goddess Luo Association is here!"

A disturbance started in the skies, and everyone's eyes turned towards the plaza's main road.

Several hundred figures were quickly rushing down the road. Most of them were freshmen. Their formation was a bit weaker than the one they were confronting, but each of them had their jaws set.

Leading them was a young woman in black with exceptionally exquisite features. Her clear and diamond-like pupils were deep

and calm, and her long hair was bright like the Milky Way as it draped down her slender waist.

Everyone looked at the woman in black with alarm in their eyes.

Even Su Xuan couldn't help praising her temperament. "She's Luo Li? Not a bad woman. No wonder even Mu Chen fell for her."

Su Ling'er was pouting again, but even she couldn't deny that Luo Li was exceptional. Not only in appearance, but but also in the way she carried herself.

The members of the Goddess Luo Association followed Luo Li's leadership and marched into the vast plaza.

The moment Chen Hou and his allies saw Luo Li, they quickly averted their eyes. Their previous fight had been enough to publicly shame them once — and the worst part of it was that they still hadn't gained an advantage.

Their fight had made them understand that among the freshman, Mu Chen probably wasn't the most formidable one — it was this beautiful girl who'd kept herself hidden.

He Yao stared at Luo Li and something stirred in his eyes as he took in her composure and features. In the past, he'd believed that Su Xuan was the loveliest woman in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. But this girl standing before him was even lovelier than her.

That bastard had such great luck with women.

He Yao narrowed his eyes as he swept his eyes over the new arrivals. "What about Mu Chen? Didn't he send a message that he'd pay our Demon's Gate a visit? Why is he hiding in his turtle shell when the time has come?"

Luo Li replied with a calm and clear voice. "He said he'd come, so he'll come. All you need to do is just wait."

He Yao angrily laughed at Luo Li's calm reply. "Wait? What

arrogance. Just who does he think he is? Is he worth our Demon's Gate's time to wait?" Had that guy even thought about what He Yao's reputation was, and what his reputation was?[1. He Yao's reputation and Mu Chen's reputation]

Luo Li's long eyelashes slightly fluttered down as she replied, "If you're that impatient, then I can entertain you awhile. But be careful not to lose your standing as the Rank 4 of the Heavenly Ranking."

Huaaaaa!

Shocked exclamations instantly burst out in the plaza and expressions filled with disbelief were aimed at the young woman in black. The crowd clearly hadn't expected such a beautiful girl to say such threatening words.

Su Xuan smiled. "It's a little similar to the way Mu Chen speaks."

He Yao's face drained of colour as he slowly stood up. "What big words. If you want to seize my standing, then we'll have to see if you're qualified!"

When he finish speaking, a frightening Spiritual Energy pressure exploded from his body, like a tsunami. He was clearly enraged by Luo Li's words.

Ye Qingling, who stood behind Luo Li, paled when she saw that.

There wasn't a single ripple in Luo Li's eyes as she stepped forward and prepared to take action.

"Let me handle today's matter."

Just as Luo Li was about to act, a clear and bright laughter rang throughout the plaza, causing a huge commotion. Everyone quickly searched for the source.

The voice came from one towering construct at the edge of the plaza — a young man had been sitting there for who knows how long. His eyes were ice-cold as they became fixed on He Yao and his

followers.

Chapter 269 – Ten Spiritual Arrays

"It's Mu Chen!"

As everyone's gaze gathered towards the youth that was on the top of the building, they instantly yelled in surprise.

Among the Goddess Luo Association's members, Ye Qingling and the rest had joy filling their eyes as they saw that figure. Mu Chen had finally showed up.

"It's true that he appeared. Hmph, I'll see how will he deal with the situation before him. Otherwise, the fame that he got from the Pact of Three Moves with great difficulty will be entirely lost." Xu Qingqing coldly snorted.

Xu Huang's gaze was also directed at Mu Chen. At this time, there still weren't any ripples in the eyes of the latter. However, in his eyes, while there was some faint fatigue, there still wasn't any panic.

"What is that fella...trying to do?" Xu Huang frowned his brows as he mumbled.

In the plaza, He Yao's eyes turned cold as he stared at Mu Chen's figure and faintly mocked, "You finally showed yourself?"

"Not to reciprocate against etiquette. Back then, the Demon's Gate paid a visit to the Goddess Luo Association. And today, I will return the favor." Mu Chen looked at He Yao as he smiled.

"Oh?" He Yao sneered, "Then, what are you trying to do?"

"That's simple, get all those people that stirred trouble at the Goddess Luo Association to apologise. Thereafter, I'll need Senior Brother He Yao to expel Yang Hong from the Demon's Gate. That guy is always calculating and if he remains in the Demon's Gate, it'd be unfortunate for you." Mu Chen faintly smiled.

When Mu Chen spoke, it instantly caused a huge commotion.

“Dream on!”

Behind He Yao, Chen Hou and the rest all had ashen faces as they barked. On one side, Yang Hong’s face was also dark. He found such a great backer like the Demon’s Gate. If he’s expelled, then he would thoroughly lose his face. This request of Mu Chen’s was rather too much.

He Yao’s gaze turned ice-cold. He stared at Mu Chen as a smear of disdain rose to the corner of his mouth, “What are you? You dare to make comments of my Demon’s Gate? You’re just a bunch of freshmen. When Chen Hou and the rest made a trip to the Goddess Luo Association back then, it was just to teach their juniors some of the rules in the academy. Not only are you guys not grateful, you guys still dare to oust them out. Regarding this problem, I’ve not pursued this matter, and yet, you guys still dare to come find us instead?”

As he spoke, everyone’s face in the Goddess Luo Association turned ugly. Clearly, they never thought that He Yao would be so shameless.

Mu Chen’s gaze dropped as he smiled, “Then, what are you? You also dared to comment about my Goddess Luo Association? To teach others the rules, are you qualified to do so?”

The surroundings became silent and many people smacked their lips. This Mu Chen truly wasn’t simple. Even when facing He Yao, his words didn’t gave him the slightest face.

He Yao’s face turned darker, little by little. The Spiritual Energy around him rippled even more violently. Shortly after, he coldly smiled and sat back down on his chair. “What courage. Since that’s the case, then let me inform you that your request is denied. Furthermore, the one that’s apologising isn’t my Demon’s Gate but your Goddess Luo Association.”

His gaze was dark as he stared at Mu Chen, “If you’re not going to apologise, then I’ll let you guys leave here and return, lying down!”

When he finished his speech, he leaned against his chair and coldly smiled. He wanted to see what Mu Chen will do since he said such foolish words in his Demon's Gate's headquarters.

In the Goddess Luo Association, only Mu Chen, as well as that girl named Luo Li, was powerful enough. But just relying on their two strengths to intimidate the Demon's Gate with him in command was too much of a fantasy.

When He Yao finished his speech, the surrounding gazes were, once again, directed at Mu Chen. He Yao had already said that he would not accept any requests. Whatever happened next would have to depend on the means that Mu Chen possessed...

Every gaze was directed at Mu Chen. At this moment, the latter was looking at He Yao with an indifference gaze. Shortly after, he lightly smiled. Except in this smile, there was a small hint of dangerous in it.

"Since that's the case..."

He quietly muttered as he spread his hands out and slowly shut both of his eyes.

The surrounding gazes were staring at Mu Chen with bits of curiosity because they're clearly unsure of what he was doing.

He Yao's indifferent and cold gaze made the members of the Demon's Gate switch to an alert state. Afterall, Mu Chen's current action was a little too weird. Could it be that he got some powerful means up his sleeves?

The atmosphere felt as though it was frozen at this moment.

Silence paced back and forth in this region. What caused everyone to be astonished was that despite them waiting, there were no movements from Mu Chen...

Everyone exchanged a glance as they pondered over what Mu Chen was trying to do.

“What is he doing?” Su Ling’er was also a little lost as she blankly asked Su Xuan.

Su Xuan’s brows slightly frowned as she stared at Mu Chen. Vaguely, she seemed to have sensed some peculiar ripples. Furthermore, these ripples don’t seem to be limited to only Mu Chen’s surroundings.

She swept her gaze around and realised that these ripples seemed to be surrounding the entire headquarters of the Demon’s Gate.

Boom!

With the atmosphere frozen, suddenly a fine vibrating sound was heard. When everyone directed their gazes over, they saw cracks appear on a pavilion that wasn’t far away from Mu Chen.

Huge stones were collapsing from the pavilion and, shortly after, light was spreading out from the pavilion. The light was like a Spiritual Energy light ray as it slowly extended itself up from the pavilion.

Boom!

As the pavilion collapsed, another pavilion in another direction also collapsed.

Boom!

Boom!

Collapsing sounds were constantly heard as everyone’s line-of-sight shifted all around in bewilderment. Thereafter, they saw ten towering pavilions collapse in this region in just a few minutes.

The ten peculiar dazzling lights were like several scorching suns as they rose and surrounded the headquarters of the Demon’s Gate within them.

“What’s that?!” Everyone directed their lines-of-sight towards the ten huge lumps of light that were rising in amazement, as well as doubts.

Chhhiiii! Chhii!

While everyone was busy being amazed, the ten lumps of light continued to slowly rise up. Vaguely, they sensed violent Spiritual Energy ripples coming from them.

“That’s…” Su Xuan, Xu Huang, as well as those pinnacle students were watching as the lumps of light expanded. The Spiritual Energy’s trajectory made their pupils shrink back, “Spiritual Arrays?!”

“Those are all Spiritual Arrays.” Su Xuan said as she slowly sucked in a mouthful of cold air.

“Spiritual Arrays?” Su Ling’er and the rest were shocked as they cried out, “All of those are Spiritual Arrays? How is that possible? How can Mu Chen lay out so many Spiritual Arrays at once? Just how many Spiritual Seals are needed in order to control them?”

From the looks of those Spiritual Arrays, they’re all probably Rank 3 Spiritual Arrays. But in order to lay out ten Rank 3 Spiritual Arrays at once, it’d require a Rank 5 Spiritual Array Master, at the very least, right? But clearly, it was impossible for Mu Chen to achieve the height of a Rank 5 Spiritual Array Master, which is comparable to a Heavenly Completion Stage expert. If he managed to reach that height, wouldn’t he have long become the number one figure in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy?

“No… these Spiritual Arrays seemed to be at the fledging stage of being engraved…”

Su Xuan’s brows frowned again as she looked at Mu Chen, whose eyes were still tightly shut. These Spiritual Arrays seemed to have been directly engraved onto these pavilions. So, the reason why Mu Chen went missing was to hide here and engrave the Spiritual Arrays. If that’s the case, all he’d be required to do was form the Spiritual Seals required to activate these Spiritual Arrays and control them. This way, he’d be able to completely activate these Spiritual Arrays.

But if ten Rank 3 Spiritual Arrays were activated at the same time, the might of them would be extremely terrifying.

However... can Mu Chen really control ten Rank 3 Spiritual Arrays?

“That fellow... truly does have some means up his sleeves.”

On another construct, Xu Huang was looking at the ten lumps of light that were rising in the headquarters of the Demon’s Gate. His expression turned grave, “So the reason why he went missing these last few days wasn’t to hide, but to conceal himself in the headquarters of the Demon’s Gate and engrave the Spiritual Arrays... So, from the beginning, he already had this all planned out.”

“What’s the use of just engraving Spiritual Arrays. With his strength, isn’t he just dreaming if he wants to engrave the amount of Spiritual Seals needed for ten Rank 3 Spiritual Arrays?” Xu Qingqing was also shocked by the scene before her, but she was still reluctant to admit how good Mu Chen was.

Xu Huang nodded as his gaze closely stared at Mu Chen, whose eyes were tightly shut. Could the latter really achieve that step?

These changes had clearly caused an uproar in the region. In the plaza, those of the Demon’s Gate had their expressions change as a smear of uneasiness flashed across their eyes.

The surrounding floating ten lumps of light gave them a huge amount of pressure.

A Rank 3 Spiritual Spiritual Array could threaten a Heavenly Fusion Stage. But if all ten of the Spiritual Arrays were activated at the same time, even the Heavenly Fusion Stage experts would have to run as far as they could.

At their front, He Yao’s eyes were still deadly fixed on those huge lumps of light and his eyes were dark. That fellow actually laid down these things right under their noses and, in spite of

everything, they didn't realise it at all...

"However, I refuse to believe that with his strength at the Heavenly Fusion Stage Middle Phase, he could control so many Rank 3 Spiritual Arrays!" His eyes were ice-cold as he coldly smiled.

Onom! Onom!

Under the countless gazes, Mu Chen's surroundings fluctuated with powerful Spiritual Energy ripples. However, the current Mu Chen still had his eyes tightly shut. He shut out all the disturbances from the outside world and was focused in the Heart Array State's perfect control down to the finest detail.

The current him already had a deep comprehension towards the Heart Array State. Even if his eyes were tightly shut, the outside world seemed to have been engraved inside his heart. Shortly after, images of formless wind and ripples of Heaven and Earth's Spiritual Auras appeared in his heart.

However, by just depending on the Heart Array State, it was still impossible for him to form so many Spiritual Seals to activate all those Spiritual Arrays...

His Spiritual Energy was clearly insufficient to control them all.

However...

The corner of Mu Chen's lips slightly rose as the palm that was in his sleeve rose. A light flashed and a round white pearl that was flickering with white light appeared. It was as though a white dragon was spiraling within the pearl.

This item was the White Dragon Spiritual Pearl they he got from the White Dragon Sovereign.

Within the White Dragon Spiritual Pearl, there was a vast amount of Spiritual Energy. Borrowing the power within it, Mu Chen could form all of the Spiritual Seals that he required!

Chapter 270 – Spiritual Lotus Surrounds Demons Gate

When the White Dragon Spiritual Pearl appeared in Mu Chen's hand, his palm suddenly clenched. As a faint white light was released, the deep roars of dragon seemed to have come along with it.

Boom!

The White Dragon Spiritual Pearl in his palm trembled as it resonated. The boundless Spiritual Energy was like a tidal wave as it flowed from Mu Chen's palm into his body.

The Spiritual Energy was pure and powerful, and the roars of dragon seemed to be following it. It was vast and mighty as it filled Mu Chen's body to the point that he found it a little painful. The power of the White Dragon Spiritual Pearl was way too majestic.

Mu Chen deeply inhaled a mouthful of air and didn't dare to lose the slightest bit of concentration. His state of mind was submerged in the Heart Array State. As he borrowed the control ability granted by the state, the Spiritual Seals were being formed by both of his hands.

As his hand signs changed, everyone could see that a dazzling light was constantly fluctuating from within Mu Chen's body. Under the ripples of the light halo, the Spiritual Seals were being formed at an frightening speed, one after another, from Mu Chen's hands.

"He's beginning to form Spiritual Seals!"

Someone exclaimed as their line-of-sight focused onto Mu Chen's body.

Su Xuan, Su Ling'er and their group were also nervously directing their gazes at him. Forming Spiritual Seals wasn't difficult. However, forming Spiritual Seals that could control ten

Rank 3 Spiritual Arrays was the problem.

Under everyone's gaze, the light around Mu Chen became denser as the amount of Spiritual Seals formed by him continued to drastically increase. In just a few short minutes, the amount of Spiritual Seals around Mu Chen had already amounted to over a hundred and was still increasing.

The shocking amount of Spiritual Seals made quite a few people's eyelids twitch. Trying to form over a hundred Spiritual Seals would require someone to at least be a Rank 4 Spiritual Spiritual Array Master.

Members of the Demon's Gate in the plaza became uneasy as smears of restlessness flashed across their eyes. Right now, they finally sensed danger.

He Yao's eyes were still dark, but the hand that he had on the armrest slowly started to tighten. Small amounts of cracks were spreading along the armrest. His instincts told him that it's best to obstruct Mu Chen right then. But the current situation forced him to be seated there, since he already gave the initiative over to Mu Chen earlier. If he disturbed Mu Chen, then it would show everyone there that, right now, there was fear in his heart. If that's the case, then that was clearly something that He Yao could not tolerate.

"I'll see to what extent can you reach!" His eyes were ice-cold as he locked onto Mu Chen's figure. There wasn't any expressions on his face, which made everyone else unable to speak a word.

On one the side, Yang Hong was also uneasily staring at Mu Chen with fear, jealousy and hatred flashing across his eyes. He could sense He Yao's changes and, clearly, even the latter felt unease.

He tightly clenched his fist as he grounded his teeth. He refused to believe that Mu Chen could be so powerful to such an extent!

Onom! Onom!

Under all of the uneasy gazes in the plaza, Mu Chen's body looked as though he had concealed himself under a dazzling light. The hundred plus Spiritual Seals, at this moment, had also seemed to have increased in quantity. Except, because of the dazzling light covering him, they're unable to clearly see how many Spiritual Seals were formed by Mu Chen.

At this moment, everyone raised their heads with hope.

The powerful light gradually started to weaken after a long time and as the light gradually weakened, Mu Chen's figure had, once again, appeared before everyone's line-of-sight.

Everyone's gaze was switched over in that instant as the irregular sound of someone breathing resounded.

The Spiritual Seals were densely packed around Mu Chen. That amount seemed to have surpassed five hundred and under that frightening amount, the people felt dizziness from the astonishment that they'd received.

"How is that possible?"

Someone cried out with overwhelming shock. They couldn't imagine that someone at the Heavenly Fusion Stage Middle Phase could form so many Spiritual Seals. Furthermore, even if he could form so many Spiritual Seals, can he really control them?

The arrangement of the Spiritual Arrays was extremely harsh and the slightest disorder would cause the Spiritual Arrays to collapse.

On a roof, Xu Qingqing was dumbfounded as she watched the scene before her. Not a single ridicule came out of her mouth. No matter how stupid she was, she could understand how frightening five hundred Spiritual Seals represented.

"Five hundred Spiritual Seals."

Before her, Xu Huang also deeply exhaled a breath. His usual calmness was replaced with disbelief as he muttered, "How could

he control so many...?”

“Mu Chen is formidable.” Su Ling’er’s eyes widened as she exclaimed in admiration.

Beside her, Li Qing and Guo Xiong exchanged a look and they noticed the shock from the other’s eyes. Since their mission from before, they already knew that Mu Chen wasn’t normal. Although this handsome youth appeared calm and undisturbed, he seemed to have possessed an endless amount of cards under his sleeves. Even though his age wasn’t that old, he would give other people a feeling of deep and unmeasurable potential.

Originally, everyone thought that Mu Chen would fight straightforwardly with He Yao. But no one expected him to secretly arrange so many Spiritual Arrays in the Demon Gate headquarters. Furthermore, what’s more frightening was that he could actually activate all those Spiritual Arrays at once.

“You guys have forgotten the fact that he is a Spiritual Array Master. Perhaps, he had already reached the heights of a Rank 4 Spiritual Array Master.”

Su Xuan also said softly, “If I’ve not guessed incorrectly, Mu Chen should have comprehended the Heart Array State and it’s probably not in the Initial Phase.”

Mu Chen truly was a Spiritual Array Master. However, the reason why he could control such a frightening amount of Spiritual Seals was only due to the fact that he had comprehended the Heart Array State. Furthermore, his attainments on it wasn’t low.

With his ability as a Rank 4 Spiritual Array Master, the powerful Heart Array State that he possessed, and adding the fact that he already made preparations long ago, it wasn’t impossible for him to control ten Rank 3 Spiritual Arrays after borrowing some external force.

Shhhuuuuu! Shuuuuu!

While everyone was shocked at the frightening amount of Spiritual Seals, Mu Chen's slender fingers lightly tapped them as they dragged a huge wind along with them. All of the Spiritual Seals flew out as they whistled; thereafter, they separated. Under everyone's fearful gazes, the Spiritual Seals shot into the ten huge lumps of light that surrounded the Demon's Gate.

As the Spiritual Seals entered them, everyone saw that the ten lumps of light were expanding at astonishing speeds. Complicated strings of Spiritual Energy intersected with one another and, thereafter, they gradually formed into ten huge massive Spiritual Arrays.

"Great Flame Demon Spiritual Array, Activate!"

Mu Chen's indifferent voice resounded within the region and everyone could see the huge Spiritual Array bursting forth with scarlet light. Violent and blazing ripples swept out thereafter.

"Wind Demon Spiritual Array!" another Rank 3 Spiritual Array was successfully activated as the hurricane sounded like blades whistling in the air.

"Mountain Sealing Demonic Spiritual Array!"

"Roaring Gold Tiger Spiritual Spiritual Array!"

The name of each Spiritual Array was solemnly spoken out from Mu Chen's mouth, one after another. Following his voice, a Rank 3 Spiritual Array was successfully activated.

In just a few dozen short breaths, the ten Spiritual Arrays in the sky were all activated as the lights spread out from them. The Spiritual Aura between the Heavens and Earth also became violent at this moment.

Everyone's expressions were brilliant as they looked at those ten Spiritual Arrays and deeply exhaled as their hearts became filled with astonishment. No one could've imagined that Mu Chen was

really capable of activating those ten Rank 3 Spiritual Arrays.

That fellow was truly monstrous.

“Big Brother Mu Chen’s frightening.” the members of the Goddess Luo Association were blankly staring at the scene up in the sky. Even Ye Qingling, Zhou Ling and the rest had dumbfounded expressions written on their faces. Clearly, they also never expected Mu Chen to create such a scene.

“So, the reason why he went missing was to prepare all of these.” they exchanged glances. From the looks of it, once this fellow was enraged, he was indeed, horrifying.

Luo Li also raised her exquisite face as she quietly watched the weightless figure that was seated on the pavilion. The corner of her mouth rose into a soft smile.

In the plaza, it was absolutely silent. Those from the Demon’s Gate, who were laughing and did not care earlier on, had already lost the ability to laugh. Their faces were turning green as they looked at the ten huge Spiritual Arrays that surrounded their headquarters.

The frightening Spiritual Energy ripples made their feet go soft.

Obviously, the current them could not laugh anymore. How could they have expected that the freshman named Mu Chen would actually create such a large scale scene and completely surrounded their headquarters with Spiritual Arrays?

“Boss, what should we do?” Chen Hou’s lips trembled and his voice was a little hoarse. Being surrounded by ten Rank 3 Spiritual Arrays would cause even them to feel fear. If those ten Spiritual Arrays were aimed towards them, they felt that there wouldn’t be any way for them to survive.

The core members of the Demon’s Gate that were on standby also had their faces turn stiff. If it wasn’t for He Yao being there, they would have lost their wills long ago.

He Yao’s expression was dark as his palm abruptly increased in strength and the armrest of the chair instantly exploded.

As they remained silent, Mu Chen, who was seated on the towering pavilion, slowly opened his eyes. A smear of redness flashed across his face, but his black pupils were indifferently staring at those from the Demon’s Gate.

“Senior Brother He Yao.”

Mu Chen indifferently called out in this quiet region. Everyone focused their gazes as the calm voice of this youth seemed to have possessed an indescribable pressure at that moment. The pressure was spreading from him and made it so that no one dared to belittle him.

“I wonder, does the current me possess the qualifications to pay a visit and seek some guidance from you?”

Chapter 271 – Taking the Arrays

"I wonder, does the current me possess the qualifications to pay a visit and seek some guidance from you?"

When the youth spoke with an indifferent voice that was spreading throughout this region, everyone felt as though the air had stopped moving. The youth appeared to be skinny, but he possessed an indescribable pressure. That was the power formed from the surrounding ten Rank 3 Spiritual Arrays and, right now, there wasn't anyone that would laugh at his so-called "visit".

In the plaza, the members of the Demon's Gate were speechless as the ridicule on their faces vanished. They exchanged looks and their expressions were filled with horror.

"Boss." Chen Hou and the rest directed their gazes towards He Yao, who had no expression on his face.

Under the countless gazes, He Yao also slowly placed his hand down on the armrest. Except, the armrest had already been turned into dust as it fell. He lightly tapped the dust and as he raised his head, there was a frightening cold gathering in his eyes, "Mu Chen. I have to say, you have indeed made me feel unexpected."

Mu Chen smiled noncommittally as he stared at He Yao, "If you've done something wrong, then there's a price that you have to pay, right?"

"Did you really think that these ten Rank 3 Spiritual Arrays would make me feel helpless?" He Yao's voice sounded as though it was turning colder with each word.

If the ten Rank 3 Spiritual Arrays were to be activated at the same time, even a Heavenly Transformation Stage Initial Phase expert would be instantly killed. However, if He Yao only had that much ability, then he wouldn't be able to sit firmly at the Rank 4 of the Heavenly Ranking.

Everyone looked at the two who opposed one another and inwardly smacked their lips. This confrontation seemed to be even more fierce compared to Mu Chen and Li Xuantong's Pact of Three Moves.

"These Spiritual Arrays have wasted quite a bit of time for you, right? It seems like I've belittled you. I never thought that you would actually hide yourself within the our Demon's Gate headquarters during these last few days." He Yao gradually stood up. There wasn't any emotion rippling within his voice.

"But, after you've used up these Spiritual Arrays, what other methods do you have up your sleeves?"

His eyes were dark as he stared at Mu Chen. The current card that Mu Chen possessed was clearly the ten Rank 3 Spiritual Arrays. Facing those Rank 3 Spiritual Arrays, not to mention a Heavenly Transformation Stage Initial Phase, even those of the Middle Phase would hide from it's cutting blade. However, just because someone else was unable to withstand it, that doesn't mean that he, He Yao won't be able to.

He Yao straightened his body as a frightening Spiritual Energy rippled like a tidal wave that was sweeping out from his body. The slab beneath his feet quietly shattered as a crack rapidly extended out.

Everyone was instantly shocked as they watched his actions. Was He Yao going to take action and withstand those ten Rank 3 Spiritual Arrays?

"Chen Hou, after I've withstood those ten Rank 3 Spiritual Arrays, you'll lead a group of people and act. Since the other party is acting so atrociously in Demon's Gate headquarters, there's no need to be polite to them." He Yao slowly stepped forth as he spoke with indifference.

"Yes!" Chen Hou and the rest instantly agreed. Shortly after, they ferociously directed their gazes towards those of the Goddess Luo

Association. If the threat of those Rank 3 Spiritual Arrays were removed, then there's nothing to fear from those freshmen. Although Luo Li was also formidable, it was, after all, impossible for her to deal with so many of them at one time. After giving these freshmen a rough beating, they believe that the freshmen will no longer have the guts to stay there.

When Ye Qingling and the rest saw the ferocious lights in the eyes of Chen Hou and those of the Demon's Gate, their faces slightly changed. However, there wasn't any intention to cower back from them.

A cold light flickered in Luo Li's eyes. Shortly after, she extended her slender jade-like hands out and lightly held onto the hilt of her longsword. Vaguely, a sharp sword aura gathered around her.

The atmosphere turned hostile in that instant as multiple gazes fixed onto He Yao, who was slowly moving forth.

As the atmosphere froze, Mu Chen's face still didn't show any ripples as he looked at the approaching He Yao. Shortly thereafter, he smiled, "Senior Brother He Yao, these ten Rank 3 Spiritual Arrays weren't prepared for you."

He Yao's steps paused as he looked at Mu Chen. He wore a cold smile on his face, "Oh? Could the current you still have any ability to do something else?"

He Yao wasn't some normal person, after all. Although they didn't know what methods Mu Chen used to arrange the ten Rank 3 Spiritual Arrays, he could see that Mu Chen was already at his limit. It's not possible for the latter to separate his attention elsewhere to do anything else.

Not only could he see that, even Su Xuan, Xu Huang and the rest had the same feeling as they lightly nodded their heads at that moment. It was already formidable that the current Mu Chen could reach to such an extent. It was basically impossible for the latter to still be able to separate his attention to do anything else.

Mu Chen did not bother with those numerous doubting gazes, but only replied with a smile, “Senior Brother He Yao, these Spiritual Arrays are prepared for those people that came to my Goddess Luo Association. Therefore, I feel that you should let them to be the ones to take these Spiritual Arrays.”

As he spoke, his blade-like cold gaze fell on Chen Hou, Yang Hong and the rest. When they saw his gaze, all of them trembled a little.

“Wait until I take your Spiritual Arrays, they’ll naturally be the ones to test your ability!” He Yao coldly smiled. He did not pay any attention to Mu Chen as he stomped on the ground and shot up. Majestic Spiritual Energy spread out as he flew towards Mu Chen.

“Since that’s the case, I can only use something else to entertain Senior Brother He Yao.”

Mu Chen indifferently smiled. Shortly after, he clenched his hand as a light flickered. A metallic rust-stained ball appeared in his hand. When the golden metallic ball appeared, Mu Chen instantly poured some Spiritual Energy into it.

Onom!

The metallic ball instantly burst forth with tens of thousands of golden lights. Thereafter, as the light swept out, extremely frightening Spiritual Energy ripples started to spread out.

As the Spiritual Energy rippled, everyone could see an extremely huge Spiritual Array rapidly forming in the sky.

That Spiritual Array was extremely huge, greatly surpassing those Rank 3 Spiritual Arrays. As the complicated Spiritual Energy lights intersected, they formed into a cryptic and profound Spiritual Array.

Woooosh! Wooooooooooosh!

A hurricane was formed between the heavens and earth from the ripples of Spiritual Energy. A complicated light Spiritual Array that was toughly a thousand feet in diameter appeared and floated

above Mu Chen's head. It was extremely dreadful.

Everyone had shock on their faces as they looked at the Spiritual Array above Mu Chen's head that had instantly appeared. Everyone could tell that the Spiritual Array before them had far surpassed the boundaries of the Rank 3 Spiritual Arrays.

From the looks of the ripples, even among Rank 4 Spiritual Arrays, this Spiritual Array before them wasn't simple.

"How is that possible?" shortly after, they were at a loss for words. They refused to believe that Mu Chen could arrange a Rank 4 Spiritual Array at such a rapid speed on top of those ten.

From Mu Chen's earlier actions, this Rank 4 Spiritual Array was clearly not engraved beforehand, but was instantly arranged and activated at that moment.

"It's the Spiritual Array Seed."

Su Xuan's charming eyes flickered as she spoke in soft voice that was filled with astonishment, "It's the Spiritual Array Seed from the auction back at White Dragon City. Mu Chen actually managed to thoroughly study it!"

On one side, the face of Su Ling'er and the rest was also filled with shock. They naturally knew about the Spiritual Array Seed. Furthermore, it was a gift that Su Ling'er bidded for Mu Chen. Back then, from its rusty appearance, they thought that it had already lost its effect. However, they never imagined in their wildest imaginations that it could display so much power in the hands of Mu Chen.

"No wonder he wasn't afraid of He Yao, so he had this hidden card." Su Ling'er said with joy. The Spiritual Array that was hidden within the Spiritual Array Seed wasn't weak. Facing a Spiritual Array of such a level, even He Yao would be afraid. Now, how will He Yao be so arrogant before Mu Chen?

"Mu Chen won't do anything that he doesn't have confidence in.

Since he actually dared to visit the Demon's Gate, how would he not have any methods to deal with He Yao?" Su Xuan lightly smiled as her gaze watched the figure of that youth with a peculiar look.

The countless gazes from the surrounding area froze at the sight of the Spiritual Spiritual Array that suddenly appeared. Even He Yao, who was about to charge towards Mu Chen, abruptly stopped moving as his face flickered with doubt.

From the huge Spiritual Array, he could sense a strong amount of danger. This made them understand that he didn't have the confidence to take it.

"What formidable means." He Yao's gaze flickered with a cold light as he stared at Mu Chen, along with a smear of darkness as he said with his teeth tightly clenched.

"Senior Brother He Yao, you're flattering me."

Mu Chen faintly smiled, "Now, I'll have to trouble you to keep silent. Otherwise, I won't mind activating this Spiritual Array Seed. But if I were to activate it, then I won't be able to stop it. At that time, I won't take any responsible for any consequences."

"You dare to threaten me?!" He Yao's hands were tightly clenched as his tone turned cold.

"Senior Brother He Yao, if that's what you think, then I have no other opinion." Mu Chen's hand tightly held onto the rust-filled Spiritual Spiritual Array Seed.

He Yao fixedly stared at Mu Chen as the veins in his hand twitched. However, he still did not take any action in the end. If Mu Chen only had those ten Rank 3 Spiritual Arrays, then he wouldn't have anything to fear. But if there's an additional Rank 4 Spiritual Array, then even he wouldn't entirely be the same. Not even he had the confidence to withstand that.

"Ten Rank 3 Spiritual Arrays, you think that it's sufficient to deal

with my Demon's Gate?!"

He Yao clenched his teeth. As long as he stood there, Mu Chen wouldn't dare to activate the Rank 4 Spiritual Array. Aside from him, there were also three Heavenly Transformation Stage Initial Phase experts. Add the fact that they possess so many people, they can't be belittled if they combined their strength.

"It seems that Senior Brother He Yao still refuses to agree to my request from before." Mu Chen stared at He Yao as he spoke.

"If you want my Demon's Gate to apologise to freshmen like you, I'm afraid that you guys don't possess that capability!" He Yao coldly laughed. If they were to apologise, then what face do they, the Demon's Gate, have?

"Since that's the case..."

Mu Chen faintly smiled. Except that his smile suddenly turned cold as his hand signs suddenly changed. The surrounding ten Rank 3 Spiritual Arrays instantly burst forth with dazzling lights and violent Spiritual Energy ripples swept out.

Everyone felt their hearts trembling. This Mu Chen had really managed to activate the ten Rank 3 Spiritual Arrays.

"Then I'll have to ask those of the Demon's Gate to take the Spiritual Arrays."

Boom!

When Mu Chen finished his last word, a violent Spiritual Energy instantly started to wreak havoc.

Chapter 272 – The Might of Ten Spiritual Arrays

Boom!

The violent energy was like a tidal wave as it spread throughout the region. Ten huge Rank 3 Spiritual Arrays were completely activated. Looking from afar, those Spiritual Arrays looked like ten blazing suns shrouding the headquarters of the Demon's Gate.

Chen Hou and the rest's faces turned green at the sight of this. If it was just a Rank 3 Spiritual Array, then naturally, there's nothing to fear. However, there were ten right before them. Furthermore, the combined power wasn't as simple as one plus one.

However, at this point in time, there wasn't any paths of retreat for them. Looking at He Yao's solemn face, he clearly wasn't willing to admit defeat. Therefore, they had to join hands and withstand the ten Rank 3 Spiritual Arrays.

If they're able to withstand them, then Mu Chen would lose his trump card. At that time, they'll be able to stage a comeback.

"Everyone gather together. We'll all attack at once, I don't believe that we won't be able to handle these ten Rank 3 Spiritual Arrays!" Chen Hou gritted his teeth and barked.

When the other members of the Demon's Gate heard his order, they rapidly gathered around. If they were separated right now, they'd probably suffer the consequences.

Yang Hong also clenched his teeth as he stared at the skinny figure that was seated on a pavilion with hatred and fear. He never imagined that in just several months, the latter's strength would actually be so shocking to such a degree.

On the pavilion, Mu Chen's eyes were indifferent as he watched those Spiritual Arrays soar into the sky from the plaza. Shortly after, his hand signs changed and the ten Rank 3 Spiritual Arrays

up in the sky abruptly changed. The violent Spiritual Energy rapidly gathered together.

Boom!

Boom!

The Spiritual Energy gathered and, in the next instant, ten light pillars tore through the sky and burst out with a shocking demeanor and shot towards the Demon's Gate without any restraint.

"Let's go together!"

The faces of Chen Hou and the rest drastically changed as they watched the ten huge light pillars shoot towards their direction. With a bark, the Spiritual Energy within their bodies also burst out and formed a Spiritual Energy screen up into the sky.

Onom! Onom!

The rest of the Demon's Gate also quickly circulated their Spiritual Energies. Different colours of Spiritual Energy continued to spread out and, one after another, magnificent light screens appeared. The scene was extremely spectacular.

Up in the sky above the plaza, countless gazes were nervously directed towards the magnificent plaza. They wondered which side would be even more fierce in the clash of power.

Dong!

Under everyone's nervous gaze, ten light beams continued to charge down.

Up on the pavilion, Mu Chen's gaze was icy-cold and his palm suddenly clenched. Suddenly, the ten light beams spiraled together under everyone's astonished gaze. As they madly spiraled, they turned into a single spiraling light beam.

Creak!

As the huge spiraling light beam streaked across, even the air

issued fragile noises.

“What fine control!”

Someone cried out. Who would’ve expected that not only could Mu Chen control ten Rank 3 Spiritual Arrays, he could even make them to merge together.

Since that’s the case, they’d be even more fierce and fearsome.

Shhhuuu!

As this train of thought flashed across their hearts, it was like ten enraged dragons were shooting down and heavily clashed against the Spiritual Energy light screens.

Bang! Bang!

The instant they came in contact, everyone could hear each light screen shatter in an instant, one after another. The ten spiraling light beams swept past the defences like a hot knife through butter. On the plaza, huge cracks appeared from the Spiritual Energy.

Pfffft.

Multiple figures flew out, one after another, vomiting blood and were in terrible states. When Chen Hou and the rest that were at the rear saw how fierce those ten light pillars were, their facial expressions underwent a huge change.

Boom!

The Ten Spiritual Energy light pillars that swept over had, once again, charged towards the Spiritual Energy light screens that they formed before them. Suddenly, the light screens violently trembled as ripples rapidly spread out.

“We can’t withstand them!” beside Chen Hou was a person that had also reached Heavenly Transformation Stage Initial Phase in his cultivation. That person’s face was flushed red as he barked.

“Withdraw!”

A smear of fear also flashed across Chen Hou's eyes as the ten light beams combined into one. The impact caused by them was extremely frightening. Although they had combined their strength into one, it was still impossible for them to truly merge their power together. Therefore, it was impossible for them to withstand the fearsome impact.

When the remaining members of the Demon's Gate heard Chen Hou's bark, they could only grit their teeth and immediately retreated at the same time.

Bang!

As they retreated, the Spiritual Energy light screens instantly shattered. The huge light beams were like enraged dragons as they roared and shot past them from the middle of the formation. Everyone that was affected by the impact flew out in an extremely terrible state as they spewed fresh blood.

Shhhhuuu!

As the light beams whistled past, the earth cracked. Thereafter, they charged past the plaza and heavily clashed against the Demon's Gate headquarters.

Even the earth violently trembled. The Demon's Gate headquarters was smashed into pieces from the impact as the huge pavilion was instantly turned into ruins.

After the light beams charged on without restraints for a period of time, the energy was gradually exhausted as it dulled down, bit by bit, and, ultimately, dispersed.

Smoke continued to spread throughout the entire plaza and it was in complete disorder.

Everyone's gaze looked at the scene before them with astonishment. In the vast plaza, there was roughly a huge and deep ravine that was roughly a dozen feet deep. The ravine swept past and went through the plaza, destroying the Demon's Gate

headquarters.

On the plaza, there were many members of the Demon's Gate howling in grief. Only Chen Hou and a small minority with some powerful strength could stand on their feet. However, their faces were filled with fear. Clearly, the frightening attack of the ten combined Spiritual Arrays made them feel fear.

"Those ten Spiritual Arrays were extremely powerful!"

Everyone looked at the slightly shocked and completely disordered members of the Demon's Gate. The power of those Spiritual Arrays was clearly powerful. If they were to fight normally, it would definitely not be so easy to defeat so many opponents at once.

After the frightening power was unleashed by the ten Spiritual Arrays, which caused even the sky gradually turn dull, it dispersed completely.

As the Spiritual Arrays dispersed, the pressure that enveloped the area also disappeared. Chen Hou and the rest who still had some fighting strength left directed their ferocious glares towards Mu Chen.

Mu Chen, however, ignored their gazes and directed his towards He Yao, instead. Along with the Demon's Gate headquarters being destroyed, the latter's face was also especially dark.

"You actually dared to wreck my Demon's Gate headquarters?!" He Yao's body was trembling. Clearly, he was enraged. He stared at Mu Chen with a vicious dark aura emitting from his eyes.

"Being treated like this, isn't it bad?"

Mu Chen lightly stared at him as his gaze became as sharp as blades. His face was also dark, "But when you bullied and humiliated my Goddess Luo Association's members, did you think of the consequences? The grand Demon's Gate actually used a wheeling fighting technique on a girl. Since you guys no longer

wanted your face, then why should I leave such useless things to you guys?”

He Yao’s gaze was dark. The reason why Chen Hou did all of that was he ordered him to. And him doing all of that was just to vent out the anger he had towards Mu Chen for not giving him any face. But who would’ve expected that Mu Chen would actually be so ruthless and did not spare any face for him?

“Boss, we’ll help you capture that brat! We’ll see what else can he do!” Chen Hou barked. Shortly after, him and the other two Heavenly Transformation Stage Initial Phase experts flew out as well and went directly towards Mu Chen.

“Get lost!!”

However, when they moved their bodies, Luo Li’s figure appeared before them. The young girl had her jade-like hands on the hilt of her black longsword. Luo Li’s pupils were ice-cold at this moment. A sharp sword aura swept out, causing cracks on the ground as she threw enraged slashes towards Chen Hou and the other two without the slightest show of mercy.

“You!”

The faces of Chen Hou and the other two drastically changed. They tasted how formidable Luo Li was so, naturally, they wouldn’t be slow. The three of them acted together as their three Spiritual Energies clashed against the sword aura.

Bang!

The earth cracked and the bodies of Chen Hou and the other two trembled. They were sent flying back.

“You dare!” He Yao’s gaze was cold as Spiritual Energy swept out from his body and he was about to take action against Luo Li.

“Same goes for you!” Mu Chen also issued a cold bark as he tightened his grab on the Spiritual Array Seed. The huge Spiritual Array that was above him slowly revolved.

Sensing the huge Spiritual Array emitting violent Spiritual Energy ripples, He Yao's eyes turned even darker as he fixed his eyes on Mu Chen, "Did you really think that you can deal with me by just relying on this Spiritual Array?!"

"Then come and try it!"

Mu Chen didn't yield in the slightest as he coldly stared at He Yao.

"Okay, then today, I'll see how formidable you are!" He Yao laughed with anger as he took a step forth. Spiritual Energy rolled like huge waves.

However, just when He Yao was about to act, a figure flashed over and stood before Mu Chen. That figure gently smiled, "He Yao, this issue was created by your side. Why are you being so overbearing?"

"Su Xuan!"

When He Yao saw the girl that appeared before Mu Chen, his eyes instantly turned dark, "You're trying to help him?"

"I just don't wish to see the both of you fight and cause such unpleasantness." Su Xuan lightly smiled.

The corner of He Yao's eyes twitched from Su Xuan's words. They'd already gone this far and what was this unpleasantness that she spoke of? Su Xuan was good with her words but, clearly, she was siding with Mu Chen.

"What if I refuse?" He Yao said with his eyes darkening.

"Mu Chen has saved the life of us, the two sisters, at least. Therefore, I can't stand by and watch as he's being bullied, so I'll have to apologise." Su Xuan said lightly. However, her words were clear that if He Yao wanted to touch Mu Chen, then she would definitely act as well.

He Yao's gaze was dark as it became filled with an enraged blaze.

Both of his fists were tightly clenched. This was the first time that he saw Su Xuan stand out to protect a guy. This made him feel jealousy in his heart and he was nearly set aflame by the jealousy.

He Yao's palms were tightly clenched to the point that creaking sounds came from his fists. However, he chose not to act in the end, as it's still not the time for him to show his cards.

He deeply inhaled a mouthful of air as the rage within his eyes slowly dulled down. However, he directed his vicious eyes towards Mu Chen and said coldly, "Mu Chen, don't think that you won this time. I still have not treated you as a genuine opponent. But rest assured, in the Hunting War, I will set you as my prey. At that time, you'll pay back everything that you've done today!"

"At that time..."

His dark eyes were, once again, directed towards Su Xuan, "No one will be able to save you!"

When Mu Chen heard his words, he lightly smiled. He slightly tightened his grip and the Spiritual Array Seed settled down and was restored its original rusty state, thereafter, he stored it.

"Senior Brother He Yao, no matter what you're intending to do..."

He stood up on the pavilion and looked at He Yao. Thereafter, he waved his hand towards Luo Li and the rest who were below and turned around. There wasn't that many ripples in his voice, but it resounded throughout the plaza.

"I, Mu Chen, will always accept your challenge."

Chapter 273 – Hidden

On their way back, the members of the Goddess Luo Association were extremely excited to the point that their faces were red. Earlier on, because of the Demon's Gate, everyone was tense and, at the same time, felt like they had a guilty conscience. Although Luo Li's strength was indeed the strongest among them, no matter what, she was, after all, only a girl. There were so many of them, but, in the end, they had to let a girl to stand up for them. Furthermore, Luo Li was injured by the wheeling fighting tactics that the other party had used. This made them feel extremely guilty.

Luckily, Mu Chen returned. Even when he faced the shameless and powerful Demon's Gate, he did not choose to swallow the grudge and, unexpectedly, he descended onto the Demon's Gate headquarters with a shocking appearance and returned everything that the other party had done to them.

The earlier scene filled everyone's hearts with excitement, even now. Even someone as powerful as He Yao still chose not to move in the end and could only watch the ten Spiritual Arrays wreak havoc.

There wasn't that many people that could force He Yao into such a spot, but to achieve that as a freshman, only Mu Chen could do it.

This accomplishment wasn't any inferior to his Pact of Three Moves with Li Xuantong.

When Mu Chen saw how excited everyone was, he only smiled in return and turned his sights towards the black-clothed girl that was following him. Luo Li was staring at him with a tranquil and soft gaze as her eyes rippled with emotion.

Noticing that he was watching her, Luo Li also gave him a light smile. Her smile was soft and clear, which softened Mu Chen's heart.

“Are you injured?” Luo Li asked in a soft voice. She naturally knew that it wasn’t easy for Mu Chen in today’s fight. It definitely wasn’t inferior to his fight with Li Xuantong. However, compared to back then, the current Mu Chen was also much more powerful.

Mu Chen shook his head. Earlier on, they majority of the energy he used was from the White Dragon Spiritual Pearl. However, once he was in the Heart Array State, he acquired some exhaustion. But in terms of fatigue, it was naturally uncomparable to back then.

However, today’s events made him go beyond his own expectations. At the beginning, he really did prepare ten Rank 3 Spiritual Arrays. However, he did not have the confidence to activate all of them at once, since the difficulty to do so was extremely high. But, when he entered the Heart Array State, he was immersed in a state of fine and exquisite control, which allowed him to control the ten Spiritual Arrays as he wished.

‘It seems like my control over the Heart Array State has deepened.’ Mu Chen thought to himself. Currently, the familiarity of his control over the Heart Array State had far surpassed that of what it was in the past.

He really did display a shocking talent in his path of Spiritual Array cultivation.

However, even though the power and might unleashed of what he did today was out of the ordinary, it required long and meticulous preparations. All of the Spiritual Arrays had to be engraved beforehand. Not to mention that the slightest mistake would put all of his efforts to waste.

“Mu Chen!”

A voice called out from behind him. Mu Chen paused as he turned around and saw Su Xuan’s group rushing towards him.

“Senior Sister Su Xuan.” when Mu Chen saw them, he immediately smiled in reply, “Many thanks for your earlier

action.”

Although Mu Chen wasn’t afraid of He Yao flipping out, Su Xuan’s earlier help still made him feel grateful for her actions.

“So you do know how to thank people… you left after we helped you.” Su Ling’er snorted.

Mu Chen awkwardly smiled. He just didn’t want to remain in that location any longer. The surrounding gazes made him feel uncomfortable. Shortly after, he softly coughed and introduced Luo Li.

“Haha, Luo Li long, we’ve heard of you before. Little Sister Luo Li currently holds Rank 15 in the Heavenly Ranking, her fame within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy is even higher than yours.” Su Xuan smiled as she looked at Luo Li with a smear of shock flashing across her eyes.

Back then, Chen Hou and his group came to the Goddess Luo Association to cause trouble, but were defeated by Luo Li, causing her rank in the Heavenly Ranking to rise to Rank 15. However, Luo Li didn’t have any feelings for this as she wasn’t that strongly attached to the rankings on the Heavenly Ranking. All of this happened because others were knocking on their door and, therefore, she fought.

Luo Li was a little embarrassed, “Senior Sister Su Xuan is flattering me.”

The friendship between the girls grew very quickly and when facing with Luo Li with such outstanding temperament, even the ice-cold Li Qing revealed a smile and they rapidly got familiar with one another.

“You have to be cautious of He Yao.” Su Xuan looked at Mu Chen as her gaze suddenly turned a little grave, “He Yao’s always scheming and if I didn’t sense incorrectly, he should have hidden his strength.”

Mu Chen was stunned, but shortly after, he restored himself back to his previous state as he nodded his head. Not only did Su Xuan sense that, even he sensed that there were some dangerous ripples coming from He Yao. That fellow was rather dangerous.

“However, even after being forced to that point, he still refused to reveal his true strength.” Mu Chen narrowed his eyes. What exactly was that fellow trying to do?

“Next month will be the Hunting War.” Su Xuan lightly smiled.

“What you’re trying to say is that he’s planning to show his true strength at the Hunting War?” Mu Chen was shocked. Shortly after, a flash of light went past his eyes and he continued, “He’s planning to surpass you on the Hunting War, right?”

“I’m probably not his true target.” said Su Xuan.

“Then his target is Li Xuantong?” Mu Chen was stunned. So it turned out that He Yao was going after Li Xuantong. No wonder he refused to reveal his strength to him, no matter what. It seemed that Li Xuantong was already making some preparations.

“He Yao’s ambitions are high and he’s not content with being behind someone. The Hunting War is a distinguished meeting of our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. If he manages to surpass Li Xuantong on it, then his fame within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy will surpass the latter and he’ll chase after Shen Cangsheng.” said Su Xuan.

Mu Chen’s expression was a little solemn. He fought with Li Xuantong before and naturally knew how powerful that fellow was. If He Yao does have the confidence to fight with Li Xuantong, then he naturally had his own powerful trump cards that couldn’t be underestimated.

And, right now, the situation between him and He Yao was like ice and fire. The instant the Hunting War was opened, he would definitely be listed in He Yao’s prey list and, at that time, the latter

clearly won't conceal himself.

In the Hunting War, everyone had to rely on their true abilities. And if Su Xuan helped them at that time, he would be mocked and ridiculed instead.

Mu Chen narrowed his eyes as he thought of He Yao's dark gaze. Shortly after, he smiled, "Senior Sister Su Xuan, I know."

Since he had already done those things, he would certainly not regret his actions. No matter how much He Yao had hidden his ability, if the latter thought that he could be easily suppressed, it would definitely not go so easily.

Su Xuan lightly nodded. Regarding this matter, a reminder would be enough. Although He Yao was really powerful, this youth that stood before her wasn't any normal person, either. As for the results between them, it will only be known after they've clashed.

The group of people talked for a moment before Su Xuan's party left. Mu Chen looked at their back figures and fell deep into his thoughts.

"What are you planning? Are you going to participate in the Hunting War?" Luo Li looked at Mu Chen as she asked.

"Since there are so many benefits in the Hunting War, I naturally have to participate in it." Mu Chen smiled. The Spiritual Light Empowerment would clearly benefit one's cultivation greatly. If he were to give it up, then the loss would be too great.

"Then, He Yao..." Luo Li slightly hesitated. If he participated in the Hunting War, then there wouldn't be that many rules and regulations. Aside from not being able to kill, even if they were to heavily injure the other party, there wouldn't be the slightest punishment.

He Yao's schemes were deep and, clearly, he wasn't a simple fellow to deal with. Facing this kind of opponent, one would have to maintain their vigilance and guard. Otherwise, who knew when

he would be fatally wounded by the vicious vemon that was hiding in the dark.

“Rest assured, although He Yao has concealed a portion of his strength, I’m not someone that’s easy to deal with, either.” Mu Chen smiled, “Furthermore, don’t we have a month’s time? In this one month, I intend on entering the Lightning Territory to cultivate and make preparations for the Hunting War.”

Although he managed to obtain the White Dragon Spiritual Pearl, he hadn’t been able to fully grasp its profound intent. And since he had time right now, it's best that he studied it a little bit. Who knows, it might be able to enhance his strength.

There would definitely be many dark horses in this Hunting War and by adding powerful opponents like He Yao, if he were to slack a even little bit, he might be thrown far away. And clearly, this situation wasn’t something that he’s willing to see.

“Then, I’ll accompany you.” Luo Li lightly smiled.

When Mu Chen heard what she said, he couldn’t stop smiling, “This is like the ‘Husband wielding the sword, facing all of the enemies, as the wife plays the zither, and follows the wave’.”

A smear of redness appeared on Luo Li’s face as she stared at Mu Chen. Thereafter, she quickened her steps towards Ye Qingling.

Mu Chen let out a huge laugh and quickly chased after the members of the Goddess Luo Association.

——

When Mu Chen’s group left, the Demon’s Gate headquarters was in ruins. He Yao, however, was solemnly looking at the headquarters that was left in ruins.

“Boss.” behind him, the faces of Chen Hou and the rest were ugly. Being beaten by Mu Chen today was a huge loss of face for them, the Demon’s Gate.

“Boss, if you were to take action, would that brat act so arrogantly?” Chen Hou said with a low voice. After all, he’s a core member of the Demon’s Gate, so, naturally, he knew some of He Yao’s secrets.

He Yao indifferently threw a glance at him, then coldly said, “My opponent is Li Xuantong. A freshman is still not worthy enough for me to reveal my strength.”

“But, you’re just going to let that brat go?” Chen Hou unwillingly said.

Bang!

When he finished speaking, a smear of viciousness flashed across He Yao’s eyes as he threw a palm out. Rolls of Spiritual Energy turned into a huge force as it instantly swept the ruined headquarters. All of the huge stones were turned into dust.

This scene made the members of the Demon’s Gate silent out of fear.

“Rest assured, in the Hunting War, I will make that brat kneel and beg forgiveness for the things that he has done today. A small freshman really thinks that he can stand on top of my, He Yao’s, head? What a reckless idiot!”

“For now, I’ll allow him to live for another month.”

He indifferently swept his sleeve as he turned around and left. His cold voice, however, spiraled around the ears of Chen Hou and the rest with a cold killing intent.

Chapter 274 – Entering the Lightning Territory Once Again

Night engulfed the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy as Mu Chen quietly sat on his bed. Within his hand, a white light was flowing within a smooth pearl. There was also the sound of a dragon roaring, it's deep dragon roar caused even the air to tremble.

Mu Chen stared at the White Dragon Spiritual Pearl in his hand as doubt flashed across his eyes. Within the White Dragon Spiritual Pearl, there was a boundless amount of Spiritual Energy. He could use a small portion of the Spiritual Energy within. However, he could vaguely feel that that shouldn't be the full extent of the White Dragon Spiritual Pearl. However, every single time he attempted to enter the White Dragon Spiritual Pearl, he was rejected. The power within was rejecting his entry.

The rejection appeared weak, but it was extremely frightening to the point that Mu Chen didn't dare to forcefully barge in. Otherwise, the rejection would make him suffer.

"There seems to be a seal set within the White Dragon Spiritual Pearl." Mu Chen tightened his brows together as he muttered.

"You didn't guess wrong." The Nine Netherbird's intent suddenly resounded within his heart.

"You know what's wrong?" Mu Chen was slightly happy as he immediately enquired within his heart.

"This White Dragon Spiritual Pearl should be an inheritance object that was left behind by the White Dragon Sovereign. Except that there's a seal within it and, with your current ability, it is impossible for you to break it." said the Nine Netherbird.

"Are you able to break it?" Mu Chen immediately asked.

"As of right now, I'm afraid that it will be a little difficult." Nine

Netherbird said, sounding a little helpless. After all, she still hasn't fully recovered.

"Then, what should we do?" Mu Chen was a little flabbergasted. If he could not break the seal, doesn't it mean that he could only stare at it?

"To break this kind of seal, perhaps we can use an external force to aid us." said the Nine Netherbird solemnly.

"An external power? What does that mean?" Mu Chen was a little astonished. Where can he borrow such a powerful external power?

"The place that you're intending to go to tomorrow."

A thought flashed in Mu Chen's heart, "You're talking about the Lightning Territory?"

His eyes lit up. Within the Lightning Territory, there was powerful and frightening external power. If he could borrow it, perhaps he'd be able to break through the seal of this White Dragon Spiritual Pearl.

"Yeah."

Mu Chen lightly nodded as he tightly grasped the White Dragon Spiritual Peal. A smear of blaze flashed across his eyes. He wished he could enter the Lightning Territory now and borrow it's power to break the seal on the White Dragon Spiritual Pearl.

"Okay, I'll head for the Lightning Territory tomorrow!"

Hearing Mu Chen's words, the Nine Netherbird's intent also appeared to be excited, "This time, I want to refine a sufficient amount of Divine Lightning Beads. We're still lacking more than 2,000,000 Spiritual Value Points before we're able to purchase the Blood Essence of the Northern Sea Dragon, right?"

Mu Chen smiled as he nodded. In this Heaven Rank Mission, he obtained a total of 4,500,000 Spiritual Value Points, with only

2,500,000 Spiritual Value Points to go before he reached 7,000,000 Spiritual Value Points, the price for the Northern Sea Dragon's Blood Essence.

Although it was not a small amount, at least they're a step closer to it.

Mu Chen's hand gently caressed the White Dragon Spiritual Pearl as expectation roused within his heart. If the Nine Netherbird obtained the Northern Sea Dragon's Blood Essence, then it'll be able to fully recover and surpass the shackles of a Spiritual Beast, and become a genuine Divine Beast, right?

At that time, how powerful will it become? That was something that Mu Chen couldn't wait to see.

The next day, Mu Chen immediately headed out, after bidding farewell to Luo Li, early in the morning and immediately headed towards the direction of the Lightning Territory.

Outside the twisted space of the Lightning Territory, there were countless students rushing in. Among them, Mu Chen sensed a few with powerful Spiritual Energy ripples. On the spot, he inwardly smacked his lips. It seemed like many people were doing everything they could to make preparations for the Hunting War next month.

Outside the twisted space, there was a huge floating stone platform with a frightening amount of people arriving from several different directions. Thereafter, from this stone platform, they would enter the Lightning Territory.

Mu Chen landed on a platform and swept his eyes around. Thereafter, his gaze stopped at the edge of the platform, there was a huge silver tablet. It looked as though lightning was flickering on the huge tablet.

Around the huge platform, it was filled with many people. However, they were all pointing towards the huge silver tablet.

Occasionally, there would be names flickering on top, and, from the looks of it, it was clearly not simple.

“What’s that?” Mu Chen was a little astonished as he did not notice any silver tablets of that sort previously.

“This is the Lightning Territory Tablet, it’s used to record the achievements of those outstanding students that went into the Lightning Territory.” Someone that appeared to be a upperclassman smiled as he said.

Mu Chen looked over and swept his eyes over it, absorbing the information on the silver tablet with his eyes. At the top of it, he saw several familiar names.

Shen Cangsheng, Lightning Territory’s Highest Level, Ninth Level

Li Xuantong, Lightning Territory’s Highest Level, Eighth Level

Su Xuan, Lightning Territory’s Highest Level, Seventh Level

He Yao, Lightning Territory’s Highest Level, Seventh Level

Li Peng, Lightning Territory’s Highest Level, Seventh Level

The densely packed lightning names flickered. Every name represented powerful achievements. Within the Lightning Territory, there was a total of ten levels. The further you go, the more fearsome the lightning power becomes. Those who are slightly weaker wouldn’t even dare to remain in it for long.

The Lightning Territory Tablet was also an aspect to see how many students have concealed their strength in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. On the silver tablet, aside from Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong, who were able to pull some distance between the rest, the next ten were closely packed behind Su Xuan, as well as He Yao. There were some whose names have never appeared on the Heavenly Ranking before. Clearly, the strength that they possessed wasn’t something that could be underestimated.

“As expected of Shen Cangsheng.”

Mu Chen sighed. Previously, he was only able to reach the fourth level, but Shen Cangsheng had already reached the ninth level. If he took another step forward, he’d probably be able to reach the last level of the Lightning Territory.

This strength was, indeed, something that left others stunned.

Li Xuantong wasn’t weak, either. He had reached the eighth floor, which made him just behind Shen Cangsheng. No wonder that person was a formidable figure that could challenge Shen Cangsheng.

“This time, I’ll see how high I can ascend.” Mu Chen’s eyes flashed with the desire to test himself. The last time he visited the Lightning Territory, he was only at the strength of Spirit Realm. But right now, his cultivation was at the Heavenly Fusion Stage and the methods that he possessed was also so much stronger.

Mu Chen glanced at the Lightning Territory Tablet and no longer made any stops as he charged into the twisted space. Lightning flickered and he appeared within the Lightning Territory as the lighting wreaked havoc.

Within the Lightning Territory, the sky was dark with lightning shooting down from every direction. The thunderous sound resounded in this entire space, causing even the heavens and earth to tremble.

This wasn’t the first time Mu Chen visited the Lightning Territory. Therefore, he was quite familiar with this place. The first level of the Lightning Territory was too weak and wasn’t suitable for him. Therefore, he did not make the slightest hesitation as he sped up and headed further into the depths.

The current Mu Chen was clearly much stronger than his first visit. Therefore, he already charged into the fourth level well before ten minutes.

However, he only made a slight stop in the fourth level and felt that the lightning power wasn't suitable for him. Therefore, he made a firm decision, gave up, and headed towards the fifth level.

In the Lightning Territory, the cultivation of Heavenly Fusion Stage was required to enter the fourth floor. As for the fifth level, it was a huge increase and the minimum requirement would be Heavenly Fusion Stage Late Phase or even Quasi-Heavenly Transformation Stage strength.

The further levels required even stricter requirements in cultivation.

Naturally, this level wasn't the only standard of judgement. Those with powerful means could also pass through.

With Mu Chen's current strength, charging into the fifth floor wasn't that difficult. When he entered the fifth floor, he only made a slight pause and shook his head again.

The lightning power wasn't sufficient to break the seal of the White Dragon Spiritual Pearl.

He, once again, pressed onwards.

In a short dozen, or so, minutes, he had already reached the protective screen of the sixth floor. However, all he did was throw a punch out and the violent Spiritual Energy instantly broke the protective screen.

His figure flashed and passed through the crack that lead to the sixth level of the Lightning Territory.

Rumble!

When Mu Chen entered the sixth level of the Lightning Territory, an alarming thunderous roar instantly resounded within his ears, as if it even made the blood within his body to start boiling.

He raised his head. This was the sixth level of the Lightning

Territory, which was even darker. The thunderclouds up in the sky were so huge that the end of it could not be seen. They huge python-like lightning pierced through the heavens and earth. This scene looked as if Judgement Day had arrived.

Mu Chen sensed the violent Spiritual Energy within the heavens and earth. After a moment, he lightly shook his head, “Still not enough!”

Mu Chen muttered to himself. Thereafter, he raised his head towards the depths of the Lightning Territory. If he went in even further, it would be the seventh level of the Lightning Territory. Over there, not even a Heavenly Transformation Stage Initial Phase could withstand the impact of the lightning.

“It requires the strength of Heavenly Transformation Stage Middle Phase...”

Mu Chen narrowed his eyes. Shortly after, his figure flew out. He wanted to break the seal of the White Dragon Spiritual Pearl as soon as possible and he could only rely on the powerful lightning of the Lightning Territory. Therefore, he had to do his best and go further in.

Although a Heavenly Transformation Stage Middle Phase’s strength was powerful, it wasn’t easy to obstruct Mu Chen.

Mu Chen’s hands tightly clenched as his black pupils reflected the lightning world. It was especially ferocious.

Mu Chen rapidly flew past the sixth floor of the Lightning Territory. After a long time, his speed began to slow down as a twisted space appeared before him. A lightning screen pierced the heavens and earth and was blocking him.

Outside the lightning screen, there were many stone platforms with quite a few figures. Everyone that had reached this place wasn’t any nameless figure. Even within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, they also possessed some fame. They were

bitterly training here so that they could break through the screen and enter into the seventh floor of the Lightning Territory.

When Mu Chen arrived, he attracted quite a bit of attention. Especially when these people sensed Mu Chen's strength, they revealed faces of shock. With the strength of a Heavenly Fusion Stage, Mu Chen was actually able to reach the sixth floor?

Mu Chen did not care about everyone's gazes. He approached the huge lightning screen as he tightly clenched his fist. He had to charge through from here.

Chapter 275 – Seventh Level of the Lightning Territory

Rumble

A gigantic lightning screen pierced through the heavens and earth with large lightning arcs leaping about, emitting astonishing Spiritual Energy ripples. It was as if even the space was twisted by it.

Mu Chen's figure stopped roughly a thousand feet outside the lightning screen as his eyes gravely stared at the lightning screen. This was what obstructed access to the seventh level. Therefore, it was naturally out of the ordinary. Even if some Heavenly Transformation Stage Initial Phase experts to exerted their full strength against the lightning screen, it would be hard for them to make a crack on the screen to pass through.

"Strength of a Heavenly Transformation Stage Middle Phase..."

Mu Chen's fist clenched together as he inhaled a deep breath of air. He sat down on the air and closed his eyes.

"What's that fellow doing?"

On the stone platform outside of the lightning screen, there were some people paying attention to Mu Chen's abnormal actions. Immediately, they were a little astonished.

"Hmm, that person looks familiar. Doesn't he?"

Aside from some doubtful people, there were also some that managed to recognised Mu Chen. After all, he was no longer the nameless freshman that he was in the past. After his Pact of Three Moves with Li Xuantong, he was engraved into the memory of many upperclassmen.

"That's the freshman that managed to beat the Pact of Three Moves against Li Xuantong! His name should be Mu Chen, right?"

“So it was him, no wonder he dared to enter the sixth level of the Lightning Territory with just Heavenly Fusion Stage strength.”

“But, from the looks of it, it seems that he’s trying to charge through the seventh level of the Lightning Territory, right? It shouldn’t be possible, right? Not even I can pass through that screen…”

“Yeah. Even though that brat managed to take the three moves from Li Xuantong, his physical strength is still a little too weak. If he recklessly charged into the seventh level, that’s simply seeking his own death.”

Up on the stone platforms, there was an outburst of whispers. Some gazes were gathered onto the youth’s figure that was sitting on the air.

Mu Chen wasn’t bothered by those surrounding whispers. He focused his mind and, after a long while, all ten of his fingers started to form seals and he was rapidly forming Spiritual Seals.

The Spiritual Seals were increasing at a rapid speed and in just two minutes, a hundred Spiritual Seals were surrounding Mu Chen. Those Spiritual Seals whistled as they brought forth frightening Spiritual Energy ripples.

The current Mu Chen had already achieved Rank 4 Spiritual Array Master in the cultivation of Spiritual Arrays. At his best, the amount of Spiritual Seals that he could create had already reached a shocking amount of one hundred.

Up on the stone platform, everyone was looking at the hundred Spiritual Seals that were surrounding Mu Chen. Their eyes trembled. Reaching a hundred Spiritual Spiritual Seals was a threshold. Passing through that threshold, one will be able to achieve Rank 4 Spiritual Array Master. And the current Mu Chen had clearly reached that step.

Rank 4 Spiritual Array Masters are comparable to Heavenly

Transformation Stage experts. They then understood why Mu Chen was able to reach the sixth level of the Lightning Territory with only his Heavenly Fusion Stage cultivation.

Shhhhhuuu! Shuuuu!

As they were grasping in surprise, the hundred Spiritual Seals that were surrounding Mu Chen whistled out. Thereafter, they merged with the heavens and earth. Instantly, the Spiritual Energy between the heavens and earth gave off violent ripples. Spiritual Energy light rays gleamed as they interweaved, forming into a huge and complicated Spiritual Array diagram.

The Spiritual Energy light rays were sketching while releasing extremely violent Spiritual Energy ripples. Up in the sky, the light rays gradually gathered and everyone could see a complicated lotus-like Spiritual Array slowly being formed.

Onom! Onom!

It was as if a huge Spiritual Array was being made from black light Spiritual Energy that was emitting a resonating and trembling sound. Lights fluctuated along the powerful energy ripples.

This Spiritual Array was, naturally, the Butchering Demonic Lotus Spiritual Array. In the past, when Mu Chen arranged this Spiritual Array, he required a massive amount of energy. But along with his cultivation improving, he clearly no longer required the need to exhaust as much energy as he did in the past.

Mu Chen’s eyes slowly opened and within his black pupils, a light flickered. Shortly after, his hand signs changed as a faint voice resounded throughout this place with the roaring lightning.

“Butchering Demonic Lotus Spiritual Array.”

Boom!

The huge Spiritual Array slowly twisted to the point that even the black light lotus was also slanting to one side. The black petals

gradually blossomed as boundless lights gathered at the heart of the lotus.

Shhhhhuuuu!

An extremely violent light beam shot out from the lotus heart and, shortly after, it pierced through the sky. Under all those amazed gazes, it heavily clashed against the lightning screen.

The lightning screen violently rippled as energy ripples endlessly fluctuated. Wherever the black light swept against, there were traces of the lightning screen becoming twisted.

Mu Chen's eyes were calm as he rotated one of his fingers. The huge black lotus started to spin, along with the black light. It was like a drill that was drilling into the lightning screen.

Creak Creak

The lightning arc violently flickered as a little black mark appeared on the solid lightning screen. Thereafter, the mark slowly cracked open. Although the hole was small, it was sufficient for a person to pass through it.

"He actually cracked it!" someone cried out with a shocked and admiring voice.

Up in the sky, Mu Chen's figure suddenly stood up. There wasn't the slightest hesitation in him as he turned into a stream of light and charged towards the crack at lightning speed.

As Mu Chen charged into the lightning screen. The giant Spiritual Array slow started to disperse, bit by bit. The screen rapidly restored itself back to normal, leaving plenty of astonished and admiring gazes from outside.

Mu Chen charged through the crack and the darkness before him only lasted for a moment before it lit up. Shortly after, he opened his eyes and was a little shocked as he looked at the shocking scene before him.

It was a dark world with the lightning clouds up in the sky looking as though they were about to fall onto the ground. This caused the sky to appear extremely low and the pressure was extremely hard to bear.

Rumble!

Mu Chen raised his head and saw that the seventh level of the lightning territory was actually drizzling with rain. He extended his hand out, allowing the rain to fall onto his body. Immediately, his body started to shake uncontrollably.

He clenched his hand, caught those fine raindrops and discovered that the raindrops were formed by lightning. When they fell onto one's body, it would bring tiny amounts of stabbing pain a with numbing sensation.

The lightning energy of the seventh level was actually powerful to this extent.

A smear of astonishment flashed across Mu Chen's eyes. No wonder the requirement to enter the seventh level was so high. Otherwise, it would be hard to endure while training here.

"The lightning energy in the seventh level is rather vigorous, it should be sufficient to break the seal."

Mu Chen slightly pondered, before his body flew out. Dozens of minutes later, his figure began to slow down. In front of him, there was a majestic mountain. There weren't any plants on the surface of mountain, it was empty with little life force.

At the peak of the mountain, there was a metallic-looking lightning platform.

Mu Chen's figure landed on the lighting platform and sat down. Up above him, the lighting clouds looked like black ink, due to the attraction of the lighting energy floating quietly up in the sky. In the clouds, there weren't any astonishing lightning bolts flickering about. However, there was some lightning that managed to get out

as the black clouds moved, emitting a frightening amount of ripples.

The seventh level of the lightning energy was much more powerful compared to the sixth level.

When Mu Chen looked at the lighting clouds, where the frightening lightning energies were gathering, he wasn't worried; instead, he was happy. The more powerful the lightning energy, the more effective it would be against the seal on the White Dragon Spiritual Pearl.

Mu Chen looked at the cold lightning platform and slightly held his breath. Shortly after, he deeply inhaled and infused the Spiritual Energy within him into the lightning luring platform.

Onom Onom

As he poured his Spiritual Energy into the platform, the originally black lightning luring platform started to emit some light.

When the lightning platform was activated by Mu Chen, the ink-like lightning clouds started to wiggle. The lighting clouds extended out, little by little, like an ancient lightning beast that was about to emerge.

Mu Chen's face was grave as he clearly sensed that there was a frightening amount of energy ripples being gathered between this heaven and earth.

Rumble!

A deep thunderous roar resounded up in the sky. Mu Chen raised his head and stared at the lightning clouds. Just when he was about to welcome the lightning's impact, he suddenly saw some rain falling towards him from the black clouds.

Those rain droplets appeared to be brilliant silver and within those droplets, there were violent lightning energies being contained. Every single drop was way more horrifying than the

lightning at the fourth level.

It was a lightning rain.

Crack Crack

The rain was falling down under Mu Chen's startled gaze and fell onto the surface of his body.

Bang! Bang!

Mu Chen's figure felt as though he had suffered the impact of some lightning. Every single raindrop exploded the moment they fell onto his body. The frightening energies within them caused red marks to appear on the surface of his body. That intense pain instantly traveled throughout his body.

Mu Chen couldn't help taking a deep breath. He never imagined that the rain that looked so gentle would be so frightening.

The lightning rain continued to explode and travel along the surface of Mu Chen's body and into his pores. Faint crackling sounds resounded. That was the lightning energy traveling through his flesh and meridians.

An intense pain, along with the faint numbness, was spreading throughout Mu Chen's body. Aside from the intense pain, there was an abnormal content sensation.

Mu Chen smiled as he looked at the falling rain. His fist clenched as a white light flickered. The White Dragon Spiritual Pearl appeared in his grasp, emitting a deep resounding dragon's roar.

Mu Chen stared at the White Dragon Spiritual Pearl in his hand and, shortly after, he slowly raised his hand. The White Dragon Spiritual Pearl floated above his head as a faint white light rippled out, forming into a light barrier and blocked all of the raindrops.

When the lightning rain fell on the light barrier formed by the White Dragon Spiritual Pearl, it instantly caused ripples.

Both of Mu Chen's hands stuck to the cold lighting luring

platform as he poured his Spiritual Energy into it, pushing the effect of the lightning luring platform to it's greatest limit.

Boom!

The lightning luring platform burst forth with dazzling light that instantly shrouded Mu Chen’s body within it. A powerful attraction burst out.

Rumble!

As the lightning luring platform was pushed to the limits by Mu Chen, it instantly caused deep lightning roars to resound between this heaven and earth. Some ink black thunderclouds that were far away also started to be attracted towards this location.

The entire heavens and earth had instantly darkened down.

Only the White Dragon Spiritual Pearl that was on top of Mu Chen’s head was still emitting some light and stood towering without any movements.

Mu Chen raised his head and mumbled, while looking at those ink-like thunderclouds.

“Next up, give me a merciless one!”

Boom!

As Mu Chen muttered, those ink-like thunderclouds up in the sky instantly shrank and in the next instant, it was a torrential downpour!

Chapter 276 – Breaking the Seal

Crack Crack

As the brilliant downpour fell, a majority of the rain was absorbed as it whistled towards Mu Chen's direction. The remaining raindrops fell onto the ground.

On the surrounding bald mountains, some of them would occasionally be hit by the stormy raindrops and would instantly crumble. Thereafter, they would be reduced to ashes and leave dense and deep holes on the mountains.

No wonder there wasn't any life force around here. Facing this kind of harsh environment, there wasn't any powerful plants that could survive here.

Onom Onom

Mu Chen wasn't distracted by the scene that was around him. His eyes were fixed on the light screen that was above him. At the heart of the light screen was the White Dragon Spiritual Pearl that had not moved a single jolt. It was constantly emitting a white light as it obstructed the storming lightning rain.

Under the wash of the lightning rain, the white screen was also rippling with fluctuations.

More and more lightning rain whistled down. Just from the looks of it, it was extremely shocking. However, the White Dragon Spiritual Pearl wasn't an ordinary object, even with the rain wreaking havoc, it still stood towering and did not move.

Looking at it, Mu Chen was shocked and overjoyed. He was shocked at the power of the White Dragon Spiritual Pearl that could even withstand such lightning rain falling on it. He was overjoyed as the more powerful the White Dragon Spiritual Pearl was, there would be more benefits that he would gain when the seal broke.

Rumble!

Up on the horizon, the ink-like lightning clouds violently wiggled about, as though they sensed how powerful the White Dragon Spiritual Pearl was. As they wiggled, the stormy rain became even more violent. That scene caused Mu Chen to be alarmed. Under this storm, even a Heavenly Transformation Stage Initial Phase expert would be heavily wounded by it.

Roar!

The White Dragon Spiritual Pearl was heavily clashing against the falling lightning rain. A deep dragon roar burst forth as the white light rippled, as though it was enraged by the rain. The white light engulfed Mu Chen and the lightning rain that was falling on it was dispersed.

Rumble!

Towards the provoking roar, the lightning clouds at the horizon also gave their reply. As lightning clouds wiggled about, the rain actually started to merge.

Shhhuuuu! Shhhhuuu!

Fine lightning rain merged together and formed into silver lightning that was as thick as a person's arm. They pierced through the heavens and heavily clashed against the White Dragon Spiritual Pearl, along with an irresistible violent energy.

As the two astonishing powers clashed, ripples fluctuated out that caused even the space to twist.

The White Dragon Spiritual Pearl was fiercely clashing against the layers of clouds.

Mu Chen sat on the silver lightning platform as he raised his head, witnessing the fight between the two forces. He constantly controlled the lightning platform, continuously increasing its power.

He wasn't worried that the White Dragon Spiritual Pearl couldn't take it, he was just worried that the lightning energy wasn't powerful enough and would be unable to break the seal on the White Dragon Spiritual Pearl. Otherwise, all of his effort would go to waste.

However, he still belittled the White Dragon Spiritual Pearl. As an item of a Sovereign, it had gone through years of time and yet it was still so powerful.

The lightning clouds that filled the whole sky continued for a full three days and three nights. However, the light emitting from the White Dragon Spiritual Pearl was still so dazzling. Frightening Spiritual Energy ripples fluctuated as they dispersed the liquid lightning.

Because Mu Chen was constantly activating the effects of the lightning platform, there would be thunderclouds constantly being attracted towards this region and they would merge together. During these three days and three night's time, the violent lightning rain had not stopped for a moment.

"The White Dragon Spiritual Pearl is way too powerful..."

Mu Chen couldn't help smacking his lips. Under the impact, even a Heavenly Transformation Stage Middle Phase expert would not dare to endure for so long. However, seeing the White Dragon Spiritual Pearl, it was still so lively and there weren't any signs of the seal being broken.

"I refuse to believe that you can keep going on!"

Mu Chen grounded his teeth and poured his Spiritual Energy into the lightning platform again. The current lightning platform burst forth with great light.

This continued for a full ten days!

In these ten days, the lightning rain never stopped.

Although the violent rain caused the White Dragon Spiritual

Pearl to dim a little, the seal still stood strong. This made Mu Chen a little speechless. No wonder even the Nine Netherbird said that it didn't have any confidence in breaking the seal on the White Dragon Spiritual Pearl, it was actually this powerful.

Mu Chen raised his head and gravely looked up at the sky. Because he continuously used the lightning platform, the entire region was basically filled with thunderclouds. The scene was so dark that even the space was about to be suppressed.

The thunderclouds in this area were already extremely frightening to the point that even Mu Chen was a little panic-stricken as he understood that if it was him, there was no way he could fully escape from this situation.

There weren't that many people that dared to attract thunderclouds in such a fierce manner in the seventh level of the Lightning Territory. Although the lightning energy in the Lightning Territory could refine Spiritual Energy, if one were to over refine their Spiritual Energy, they would exploded into dust...

Huuuu

Mu Chen exhaled a mouthful of air as he looked at the ink-like thunderclouds. Because of the lightning energy being way too violent, Mu Chen could see lightning flickers within the thunderclouds, as if they had formed into a lightning river. That river was slowly flowing within the thunderclouds, emitting ripples that would make anyone's scalp tingle.

"I can't carry on..."

MMu Chen muttered. From the current situation, if he were to carry on, who knows how long it would take him and the Hunting War was less than a month away. Clearly, he couldn't spend too much time on breaking the seal.

"Seems like I have to get even fiercer."

Mu Chen slightly hesitated. Shortly after, he clenched his teeth

and flicked his fingers. The White Dragon Spiritual Pearl brought along a torrential white light, it was like a light beam as it soared up into the lightning river that was flowing within the thunderclouds.

The lightning river was formed from the violent lightning energy that accumulated after more than ten days. Within it, the lightning energy was way too violent that even Mu Chen felt a little palpitation. However, this was the only way for him right now.

Shhhhhuuuu!

The white light soared up and was especially eye-catching in this dark horizon.

At the end of the horizon, who knows how many people have gathered here. They were all the people that were training in the seventh level of the Lightning Territory. They'd noticed the commotion at Mu Chen's side and, henceforth, they came to investigate.

They were exceptionally astonished that there would be someone that dared to lure such threatening thunderclouds. Even they didn't dare to casually step foot into that region.

This made them a little curious, they did not know which fellow had concealed himself for so long and then suddenly burst out by actually causing such a huge scene...

"Something flew up into the thunderclouds."

Under the darkened horizon, someone spoke. They saw something soaring up to the darkened sky and into the white light in the thunderclouds.

"There was already a lightning river formed in the thunderclouds, what is that guy thinking? Doesn't he know how fearsome the violent lightning river is?"

When those that could be considered to be outstanding in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy saw this scene, their faces

changed. Shortly after, all of them moved back simultaneously with shock filling their eyes.

Mu Chen, naturally, didn't know the attention that he had attracted from his actions. His eyes were fixed on the White Dragon Spiritual Pearl. The latter had already turned into a white light piercing through the thunderclouds and into the lightning river.

Rumble!

The instant they clashed, there was a thunderous roar in the horizon. It violently resounded throughout the sky and under the noise, even the horizon started to tremble.

Boom!

The omnipresent lightning light burst out from the thunderclouds and, under that lightning, the ink-black thunder clouds started to rapidly dissipate.

In the range of two hundred li, the black thunderclouds rapidly disappeared.

The lightning was all attracted by the liquid body of lightning, possessing terrifying power. Mu Chen watched as a mountain peak was reduced to dust by the liquid formed from the lightning.

Mu Chen felt his scalp tingling as he immediately turned off the lightning luring platform. However, he was on a mountain peak as well and there were liquid-forms of the lightning flashing down.

Mu Chen's face drastically changed. The lightning speed was too fast that he could not evade in time.

Boom!

When the liquid-formed lightning was about to hit Mu Chen, torrential black flames swept out of his body and formed into a pair of huge wings that were engulfed in black flames, protecting him.

Bang! Bang!

The liquid-form lightning landed on the flaming black wings and burst forth with violent ripples. Thereafter, they gradually dissipated.

“Thanks.”

Mu Chen was relieved as he spoke in his heart. He knew that it was the Nine Netherbird that helped him. Otherwise, he would be in a terrible state from the liquid-form lightning.

“The seal on the White Dragon Spiritual Pearl should be breaking soon.” the Nine Netherbird’s voice sounded in Mu Chen’s heart.

When Mu Chen heard what it said, he immediately raised his head and saw the White Dragon Spiritual Pearl bathed in the lightning river. Under the corrosion of the violent energy, the light on the White Dragon Spiritual Pearl dimmed down.

As the White Dragon Spiritual Pearl dimmed down, the dragon pattern that was engraved on the surface of the White Dragon Spiritual Pearl also started to disappear, bit by bit.

The speed of the dragon pattern disappearing was extremely fast. In a few dozen breath’s time, it thoroughly dissipated. In that instant, when the dragon pattern disappeared, Mu Chen could clearly sense pure Spiritual Energy ripples exploding from within.

If the Spiritual Energy of the White Dragon Spiritual Pearl was previously restricted, then, right now, it had been truly unleashed.

“The seal is gone!”

Joy filled Mu Chen’s eyes. After all his efforts, he had finally broke the seal on the White Dragon Spiritual Pearl.

Shhhhuu!

The flaming black wings that were protecting Mu Chen shot into the lightning river and grabbed onto the White Dragon Spiritual Pearl. Thereafter, they quickly returned. However, in just a few

short breaths, the black flames on the wings dissipated a little.

Mu Chen extended his hand out and grabbed onto the cool White Dragon Spiritual Pearl. He could sense that, right now, he had truly obtain the White Dragon Spiritual Pearl!

Chapter 277 – Foreign Fiends

On the lightning luring platform, Mu Chen looked at the warm White Dragon Spiritual Pearl in his hand with unconcealable joy in his eyes. But fortunately, he rapidly restored his clarity and did not investigate the White Dragon Spiritual Pearl. With a flip of his hand, he stored the White Dragon Spiritual Pearl.

Up in the sky, the lightning river was still wreaking havoc on this land. When Mu Chen saw it, he leaped down the mountain peak as he ran, sticking close to the ground.

The commotion that he caused in this area was too huge. Previously, he had already sensed some gazes staring at his direction. Therefore, he clearly could not continue to remain here any longer and had to find a new place to cultivate.

Mu Chen flew close to the ground, avoiding the pouring torrents. After a few minutes, he managed to leave the region where the thunderclouds were wreaking havoc. After he left, the frightening lightning ripples had also weakened, little by little.

The surrounding pressure that was slightly dissipating made Mu Chen feel relieved. Shortly after, he pushed his speed to the limits and rapidly left this region, searching for a new remote area, before he slowed himself down.

There was a short hill that wasn't that eye-catching in this mountain range. Furthermore, by borrowing the surrounding mountains, he could avoid anyone noticing this area.

Mu Chen's figure landed on top of the hill. He looked around before calming himself down. With a grasp of his hand, the White Dragon Spiritual Pearl had, once again, appeared in his hand.

Only now did he have time to take a good look at the White Dragon Spiritual Pearl, whose seal had been broken.

There wasn't that many changes on the exterior, except that the

white dragon patterns on it had disappeared. Within the pearl, a white mist looked as though it had penetrated the White Dragon Spiritual Pearl as it curled around the surface of the pearl. It appeared extremely magical.

Mu Chen grabbed onto the White Dragon Spiritual Pearl as he sensed the boundless energy within it. His expression also couldn't help turning grave. Thereafter, he deeply inhaled a mouthful of air and his hands came together with the White Dragon Spiritual Pearl floating on top of both of his palms.

A pitch-black Spiritual Energy poured out of Mu Chen's palms and shrouded the White Dragon Spiritual Pearl.

Just when Mu Chen's Spiritual Energy was about to come in contact with the White Dragon Spiritual Pearl, the pearl immediately burst forth with dazzling light and shroud his figure. When the white light shrouded him, Mu Chen's eyes blurred and soon after, he realised that the scenery before him had changed.

"That's..."

Mu Chen looked at the white world as he was engrossed in his own thoughts. This should be the world within the White Dragon Spiritual Pearl. Back then, when it was being sealed, he did attempt to try it, but had been directly rejected by the pearl. Now that the seal was broken, he could finally enter it.

He looked around and slightly hesitated. Thereafter, he flew towards the boundless white world. As he marched forth, the white mist started to dissipate.

When Mu Chen moved, the surrounding scenery changed again. The white mist rapidly disappeared and a landscape appeared, it was a vast world.

Mu Chen stood on the horizon as he looked down on the world. When he was slightly at a loss, a scarlet-blood colour appeared on the far horizon. Thereafter, the scarlet-blood colour surged over

along with an endless chill. On the spot that the scarlet-blood coloured tidal wave past, endless lifeforms were being devoured. Even the various energies between the heavens and earth were extinguished by the torrential scarlet-red colour.

At the front of the scarlet-blood colour tidal wave, there seemed to be countless figures soaring up into the sky as they tried their best to obstruct it. However, their powers were tiny before the scarlet-blood coloured tidal wave.

Countless hopeless screams resounded within the entire world as they fell into the terrifying Judgement Day.

This was a devastating disaster.

The scarlet-blood colour slowly spread to the unfamiliar world as the lifeforms were being devoured. The energies between the heavens and earth weren't an exception, either, as they became polluted.

A world filled with lifeforms were all entirely annihilated at this moment.

Mu Chen was drenched in a cold sweat as he watched the scene before him. His heart was filled with fear. What was that scarlet-blood coloured tidal wave doing in this world? It's actually so terrifying.

Mu Chen watched the scene as a blood-light gathered. There was an illusory figure filled with scarlet scales that walked out. It was like a demonic god that looked as though it was the most sinister thing in this world had directed its pupils towards Mu Chen's direction.

As the gaze was directed at his direction, Mu Chen's heart jolted. The scenery before him changed. It was like a world that was about to be destroyed. There were countless figures within the towering mountain tearing space cracks and left, fleeing for their lives.

Mu Chen looked at those figures and, among them, there was a

white-haired figure that he had seen before.

“That’s the White Dragon Sovereign?!”

Mu Chen’s heart violently jolted as he muttered out.

The scene before him watered down as though countless months and years had shuttled past. When Mu Chen recovered, the scenery before him had restored back to the white misty world.

Mu Chen’s forehead was filled with sweat as his heart was still shocked. The scene from before gave him a huge shock. Just what were those scarlet-blood coloured lifeforms?

Could it be that among all those who escaped, the White Dragon Sovereign was among them?

“Correct, I had escaped from there.”

Suddenly, a faint voice resounded out. Mu Chen was startled as he immediately raised his head. In the white misty world, the white mist started to gather as a deep dragon roar resounded out. As the white mist gathered, it turned into a huge white dragon that soared towards the horizons.

The white dragon spiraled and Mu Chen sat down before it. At the head of the white dragon, a light flickered and a figure had appeared. That figure had snow-white hair but his skin was youthful. His pair of white pupils were exceptionally bizarre.

He sat on the white dragon and his pupils stared at Mu Chen.

“Haha, it seems that you’ve broken the seal within the White Dragon Spiritual Pearl.” That white-pupiled figure then faintly smiled. His gentle voice resounded in this white misty world.

“White Dragon Sovereign?”

When Mu Chen saw that figure, his heart jolted. In the space of the Spirit Treasury, he had seen this figure before. However, the figure that he saw was extremely blurry, and right now, the latter was extremely clear.

Precisely because of the clarity, Mu Chen could vaguely sense the terrifying Sovereign's pressure. Even if the latter had fallen, his Sovereign pressure still existed.

"Mu Chen pays respect to elder. I was lucky to obtain the White Dragon Spiritual Pearl, it was rude and impetuous of me to break the seal. I seek your forgiveness for the alarm." Mu Chen cupped his hands as he said cautiously.

Although the White Dragon Sovereign had fallen, an existence of his level could cause huge danger to him with the slightest method they had left behind. Therefore, it was better for him to be more humble.

The White Dragon Sovereign's pupils stared at Mu Chen and, shortly after, he laughed as he waved his hand, "It was your fate to obtain this White Dragon Spiritual Pearl that I had left behind."

Mu Chen nodded and hesitated awhile, before couldn't help asking, "What was it that I saw earlier?"

The scene that he saw earlier, a world with billions of lifeforms being annihilated was way too frightening.

"Just scenes that I've experienced." the White Dragon Sovereign faintly smiled and continued, "The Great Thousand World was boundless and was the location where countless Lower Planes intercepted. It was extremely savage and cruel, it wasn't something that you can understand."

Mu Chen was speechless. Although he had not experienced the frightening situation before, he could sense how horrifying it was.

"What was that thing within the blood-coloured tidal wave?" Mu Chen asked. That lifeform made him feel fear.

"That was one of the Foreign Fiends. We call it as the Fiend Blood Tribe. What you've just seen was a world that they had destroyed and it was my hometown. Haha, I was someone who had escaped from the Lower Planes." the White Dragon Sovereign smiled,

however, his smile was numbing and mournful.

“What are the Foreign Fiends?” Mu Chen muttered.

The White Dragon Sovereign slightly lowered his head, “I don’t have much understanding towards them. They are born in the Great Thousand World and are towards the inner sides. If without any mishap, perhaps you won’t come to know about these things in your entire life.”

“But for the Lower Planes, they are extremely terrifying. Once they find a lower plane and corrode it, the outcome is the annihilation of all life forms, just as what you’ve seen earlier on.”

“Although it sounded unreal to you, have you heard of this existence called the Martial Ancestor before?” the White Dragon Sovereign looked at Mu Chen.

“The Martial Ancestor, Ling Dong?” Mu Chen was startled.

The White Dragon Sovereign nodded, “The Martial Ancestor was also from the Lower Planes. Furthermore, his Lower Planes had once suffered the attacks of the Fiends. But the Martial Ancestor was, after all, much stronger than you and I. Not only did he expel the fiends, he also managed to behead a branch of the Fiend Tribe’s Emperor.”

“Although it was just a branch, the power that they possessed was something that the Lower Planes could not withstand. To be able to achieve that as someone from the Lower Planes, the Martial Ancestor was, indeed, worthy of other’s admiration. He was much stronger than us.”

Mu Chen was stunned. Compared to the Lower Planes, the Great Thousand World had more advantages. The level of experts here was far more powerful than those of the Lower Planes. For this Martial Ancestor to make achievements up to this step with the resources of the Lower Planes, he was indeed, not simple. No wonder he could establish such a powerful existence like the

Martial Realm in the Great Thousand World.

“Haha, I’ve not spoke for a long time and I have, indeed, spoke too much in such a short while.”

The White Dragon Sovereign smiled as he gradually recovered. He was, after all, a remnant of intent right now. At the spot, he waved his hand as he looked at Mu Chen, “it was fate that we met. Since you’re able to obtain this White Dragon Spiritual Pearl and also breaking the seal, then let me lend you a helping hand.”

As he finish speaking, his sleeves waved and an endless amount of white mist surged over. The white mist contained pure and boundless Spiritual Energy.

The White Dragon Sovereign smiled as he pointed towards the air. Torrential waves surged in this world with the wind and clouds rolled, and boundless pure Spiritual Energy was pouring towards Mu Chen in tidal waves.

“It’d be up to your ability on how much remnant energy you can absorb that was left by me.”

Chapter 278 – Quasi-Heavenly Transformation Stage

Boom!

A Majestic Spiritual Energy suddenly surged out of the White Dragon Spiritual Pearl as the endless Spiritual Energy poured into Mu Chen's body. Under the overflowing sensation, Mu Chen felt a swelling sensation.

The Spiritual Energy within the White Dragon Spiritual Pearl was way too much for him.

"I can't absorb all of it!"

Mu Chen's heart flashed with that thought as he immediately flew out, landing onto a lightning luring platform that was closest to him and rapidly activated the platform. Thereafter, thunder clouds started to gather on the horizon. However, compared to his previous encounter, it was much more gentle.

But, of course, this comparison was only to his previous encounter. The lightning energy in the seventh level was extremely robust. Even a Heavenly Transformation Stage Initial Phase expert would find it hard to bear. If it wasn't for Mu Chen having some means up his sleeve, it was basically impossible for him to enter into this level.

Pitch-black thunder clouds gathered above Mu Chen as lightning rain fell, hitting Mu Chen and causing red marks to appear on his body. At the same time, the lightning energy also flowed into the pores all over his body as they endlessly poured onto his body.

When the lightning energy poured onto Mu Chen's body, it instantly caused a conflict with the boundless energy from the White Dragon Spiritual Pearl. As the two forces clashed, they reacted with a shocking response.

The lightning energy in the lightning territory possessed an

effect of refining Spiritual Energy. Henceforth, when it clashed with the vast Spiritual Energy from the White Dragon Spiritual Pearl, the Spiritual Energy started to slowly shrink. As the Spiritual Energy shrank, the colour turned increasingly deep and refined.

With the refining aid from the lightning energy, Mu Chen slowly exhaled a mouthful of air. Shortly after, he circulated the Great Pagoda Art to refine the Spiritual Energy and constantly absorbed them. Lastly, they poured into his aura sea, and were absorbed by the small spirit that was seated within.

This speed of cultivation was way faster compared to his ordinary speed. However, that wasn't the crucial point, the crucial point was that the Spiritual Energy from the White Dragon Spiritual Pearl was extremely pure without any consciousness. Henceforth, it did not resist Mu Chen's refinement, which caused this method of cultivation to be smooth.

In his aura sea, the small spirit rippled with light around him as it devoured the Spiritual Energy that was endlessly pouring into his aura sea. As he devoured it, he started to slowly grow and the Spiritual Energy ripples that were emitted from him also grew stronger.

The light that was emitting from the White Dragon Spiritual Pearl also grew stronger. Thereafter, it shroud Mu Chen's body into it. The black thunderclouds that were above Mu Chen have been constantly moving around as mild lightning rain fell. All that lightning energy was being endlessly poured onto Mu Chen's body to refine the Spiritual Energy from the White Dragon Spiritual Pearl.

Mu Chen tightly closed his eyes. His expression was focused as he kept circulating the Great Pagoda Art to refine it. Thereafter, he did not carry out any other methods and could accept the power from the White Dragon Spiritual Pearl.

However, he also left some caution. Although the speed of his strength growing was fast, there was a limit to it. If he were to jump too fast at once, it would cause his Spiritual Energy to be unstable, which would result in failure, which wouldn't be a good news to is future days.

But, right now, it was all still within Mu Chen's control.

His cultivation was already on the right track.

Under this type of cultivation, the days started to pass and in a blink of an eye, five days had already past. The space in the seventh level was considerably huge and vast. The amount of people that could step into this level was little in number. Adding the fact that Mu Chen chose a remote area, there wasn't anyone disrupting his cultivation during these five days.

And in these five days, the Spiritual Energy ripples that were emitting from Mu Chen's body grew to quite powerful.

Splash! Splash!

The thunder rain fell and in that area, there was a bald mountain peak. A slim figure was seated on the lightning luring platform, allowing the lightning rain to fall on his body.

His clothing had already been reduced to dust by the lightning rain in these five days. A faint silvery luster was being emitted from his skin, it was due to the lightning energy constantly refining his body.

In between both his palms, the White Dragon Spiritual Pearl slowly revolved as an extremely pure Spiritual Energy endlessly poured into his body without ending.

However, Mu Chen did not accept the limitless energy. His eyes abruptly opened. The instant his eyes were opened, lightning flashed across his black pupils. The lightning formed into thunder as it shot forth from his eyes.

Considerably powerful Spiritual Energy ripples emitted from Mu

Chen’s body as they sent stones that were around the lightning luring platform flying.

Under the powerful Spiritual Energy ripples, the neverending lightning rain was blocked from of Mu Chen’s body, maintaining a distance of roughly five feet, before penetrating through it and fell.

Mu Chen exhaled a long lump of white mist that was infused with some lightning. His gaze gradually restored it's calmness. Shortly after, his intent moved and he saw the changes in this aura sea.

His current spirit had already expanded by a fold as the Spiritual Energy’s luster constantly rippled around it. Within his spirit, there was exceptionally powerful Spiritual Energy ripples.

Compared to the past, the ripples were several times more powerful, far surpassing Heavenly Fusion Stage Late Phase. However, there was still a distance to Heavenly Transformation Stage.

Quasi-Heavenly Transformation Stage!

The corner of Mu Chen’s lips rose into a satisfied smile. This time round, his strength had undoubtedly flew from Heavenly Fusion Stage Middle Phase to Quasi-Heavenly Transformation Stage.

And in the process, he had skipped Heavenly Fusion Stage Late Phase.

“Quasi-Heavenly Transformation Stage.”

Mu Chen clenched both of his fists as his intent moved, pitch-black Spiritual Energy that was blazing with black flames was surging out in waves as it swept out. Looking from afar, it looked like huge black smoke that soared up into the horizon. Even the lightning rain was unable to shake it.

His current state was way too powerful, compared to before.

Mu Chen lowered his head to the White Dragon Spiritual Pearl in

his hand. The latter had already turned a lot more dull as the white mist that was fluctuating within it was also no longer brilliant.

However, the Spiritual Energy within still wasn't fully exhausted yet. Likewise, that Spiritual Energy would cause a huge impact in his path of cultivation. As Mu Chen wasn't someone that lacked foresight that would be tempted for temporary benefits and forfeits his future paths.

He grasped the White Dragon Spiritual Pearl and, with a move of his intent, he had, once again, entered into the misty world, where the White Dragon Sovereign, who was seated on a mist-formed White Dragon was. The latter's figure had also dulled down by a lot.

"How rare."

At the sight of Mu Chen, the White Dragon Sovereign lightly smiled as he said something that most people wouldn't understand.

Mu Chen was also blank. Those words that the White Dragon Sovereign spoke of was definitely not directing to his cultivation leaping from Heavenly Fusion Stage Middle Phase to Quasi-Heavenly Transformation Stage. Even a blockhead with this opportunity could have his strength risen to Heavenly Transformation Stage easily. His current advancement was already considered rather wasteful.

"Although the Spiritual Energy that was left behind by me was without any intent, it was still something that I've cultivated, after all. When poured into a person's body, it could be easily absorbed, but compared to the Spiritual Energy that one personally cultivated, there was still a small difference."

The White Dragon Sovereign lightly smiled, "Although this small difference was unnoticable right now, perhaps it would cause obstruction to one's future growth."

“It is indeed rare for someone to resist the temptation of strength.” the smile on the White Dragon Sovereign’s face turned a little more gentle. Mu Chen’s actions had, indeed, given him a high impression.

Mu Chen was a little embarrassed that he was praised as he ruffled his head, “You’re over praising, Senior. In this world, only those that gained strength by themselves are the most dependable. I’m already satisfied with the opportunity. If I were to hope for more, I’m afraid that I would not be able to bear it.”

All these years, Mu Chen’s cultivation was steadily stable and his foundation was exceptionally firm. Although the power left behind by the White Dragon Sovereign was tempting, it wasn’t something that was worth him damaging his foundation. Although a Sovereign expert was powerful, Mu Chen believed that there would be a day where he could reach that state as well. Or even surpass it!

The White Dragon Sovereign lightly nodded his head with a smear of appreciation flashing through his eyes. Shortly after, he patted the white dragon that he was mounting, “This intent of mine won’t hold out for long. The remaining power in the White Dragon Spiritual Pearl can be given to you for future usage. Furthermore, if you’ve encountered a strong enemy, you can ignite the White Dragon Spiritual Pearl. I believe that even Heavenly Completion Stage experts would have to run.”

“Many thanks, Senior.” Mu Chen thanked sincerely.

The White Dragon Sovereign lightly smiled, “I just find you out of the ordinary. My intent was supported by the Spiritual Energy within the White Dragon Spiritual Pearl and, therefore, I could exist. If you’d absorbed all of the Spiritual Energy earlier on, you wouldn’t be able to hear me speaking now and you wouldn’t be fated for the stuff that I’ve left behind.”

Mu Chen was startled. The stuff that he left behind?

The White Dragon Sovereign smiled as his hand lightly patted on the white dragon that he was mounting. The white dragon rapidly shrank and turned into a scroll that was made from dragon scales. On the scroll, there was an ancient carved letter.

Mu Chen directed his gaze over and the dragon-scaled ancient scroll was imprinted into his eyes.

“Dragon Soaring Art.”

Chapter 279 – Dragon Soaring Art

“Dragon Soaring Art…”

Mu Chen looked at the ancient characters on the dragon-scaled scroll and immediately licked his lips. Although he didn’t know what kind of Deity Tier Spiritual Art the Dragon Soaring Art was, how could something that was taken out by a Sovereign be ordinary?

“This Dragon Soaring Art was an incomplete page that I’d obtained back then by mere luck. Thereafter, I, somewhat, completed it. However, even though this Dragon Soaring Art was incomplete, it was extremely out of the ordinary.”

The White Dragon Sovereign lightly smiled as he gently caressed the dragon-scaled scroll and passed it over to Mu Chen. “As it was an incomplete Spiritual Art, I did not give it a ranking. But, back then, when I was surrounded by three Sovereign powerhouse, I relied on this Dragon Soaring Art to retreat unscathed.”

Mu Chen’s heart slightly jolted as unconcealable shock flashed through his eyes. What kind of scene was it for three Sovereign-level experts to fight together? He didn’t have a clear concept of it, but that was definitely a tight spot. However, seeing as the White Dragon Sovereign could retreat unscathed, he could tell how powerful the Dragon Soaring Art was.

“Precisely speaking, this Dragon Soaring Art should be a Movement Deity Tier Spiritual Art. Although it might not grant you powerful offensive capabilities, it is sufficient to protect your life.”

Mu Chen lightly nodded as his eyes were filled with joy. The current cards that he had up his sleeves were too little. Although the might of the Four God Constellation Scripture was unpredictable, he still had not fully comprehend it and was lacking in Movement Spiritual Arts. And at this point, it could be seen

from his battle with the grey-robed elder back then. The latter's Movement Spiritual Art was way more powerful compared to his, which forced him to a rather sorry state.

But, right now, this powerful Movement Deity Tier Spiritual Art – Dragon Soaring Art came just in time to overcome Mu Chen's weak point.

When the White Dragon Sovereign saw Mu Chen receive the scroll, he stood up and continued, "This Dragon Soaring Art is out of the ordinary and hard to comprehend. My intent will soon dissipate, but before I dissipate, let me lend you a hand."

"Look at my steps, I'll display the profound intent of the Dragon Soaring Art for you!"

The White Dragon Sovereign unleashed a low bark and his figure appeared on the white horizon. He took a step out, his steps were bizarre, as if he was walking on the stars, which was unfathomable.

The roar of a dragon resounded and his steps looked as though he was walking on the formless sound waves.

Mu Chen fixed his eyes at the bizarre movements of the White Dragon Sovereign. At the beginning, he could barely follow up, but the White Dragon Sovereign's steps quickly turned fuzzy. Not knowing when, the White Dragon Sovereign's figure had already disappeared. The fuzzy figure looked as though it had turned into a huge dragon as it soared. As it swayed, the space looked as though it had been pierced. That speed looked as though it could travel a thousand miles in an instant.

Roar!

A lingering dragon roar resounded in this space. As the white light flickered, the White Dragon Sovereign's figure appeared once again. His figure, right now, had dulled down by a lot as he lowered his head, looking towards Mu Chen. The latter's black

pupils were concentrated with light flashing across as the appearance of a dragon's soaring image flashed across his eyes.

Mu Chen's eyes flickered with the dragon soaring image for a full half hour before it dulled down. His black pupils concentrated again as he turned quick-witted.

"Many thanks, Senior."

Mu Chen said as he cupped his hands, looking at the figure before him as that figure turned hazy, as if the White Dragon Sovereign was about to disappear. This Deity Tier Spiritual Art was extremely challenging to learn. If he didn't have the demonstration by the White Dragon Sovereign earlier, no matter how powerful his talent was, it would still cost him quite some time. But, earlier, the White Dragon Sovereign gave him a lead, causing the difficulty of learning it to be lowered.

"It was hard to find something that fit my liking. Henceforth, giving it to you could resolve a wish of mine."

The White Dragon Sovereign lightly smiled. He was originally just a remnant intent that was left behind that was borrowing the remaining Spiritual Energy within the White Dragon Spiritual Pearl. He wasn't an actual existence.

"This junior will never forget this senior's huge grace. If there's anything that you required this junor to do, please let me know." Mu Chen said gravely. He had been someone that was distinct on gratitude and grudges. Today, he received the help of the White Dragon Sovereign, so, naturally, he had to remember this gratitude.

Hearing Mu Chen's words, the White Dragon Sovereign was slightly startled. Thereafter, his gaze turned blank and muttered, "If there's any wish of mine, it would be to return to my homeland..."

His blank gaze suddenly gathered a little together. After all, he

stared at Mu Chen with unusual seriousness, or even solemn. He remained silent for a long while and slowly spoke out, “You’re really willing to help me?”

“As long as it's something I can accomplish, I will definitely not reject it!” He said without much hesitation.

“Hahaha, good!” the White Dragon Sovereign laughed as his clear and bright eyes stared at Mu Chen, “I never thought that even after I’ve fallen, I could meet a youth like you. Your name is Mu Chen, right?”

“Yes.”

“Good, Mu Chen... I do have a wish and it is also an opportunity for you. But whether you could grasp it would depend on your accomplishments.” the White Dragon Sovereign laughed as he made a gesture with his hand. White dragon light runes formed within his palm and shot into Mu Chen’s body as fast as lightning.

Although Mu Chen was slightly startled, he did not panic and only looked at the White Dragon Sovereign in doubt.

“My wish is that one fine day, I hope that you’re able to head towards the Lower Plane where I came from and expel all those foreign Blood Fiend Tribesmen that have occupied my homeland!”

The White Dragon Sovereign closely stared at Mu Chen, “If you’re able to accomplish that, then I would definitely grant you a huge opportunity. Believe me, this opportunity will let you become a true supreme expert!”

Mu Chen was dumbstruck, the White Dragon Sovereign was asking him to expel those Blood Fiend Tribesmen? But they are the terrifying Fiend Tribesmen that could easily slaughter millions and millions of lifeforms. Even if he managed to become a Sovereign, it should still be impossible for him to accomplish that, right?

Unless he became an expert like the Flame Emperor and the Martial Ancestor, who became a huge authorities of their own

territory, how could he attack a Lower Plane?

“What? No confidence?” the White Dragon Sovereign said as he stared at Mu Chen.

Mu Chen’s expression was grave as he went silent for a brief moment, before nodding his head, “I’m grateful for Senior’s grace and I ought to repay you. Although it is impossible for the current me, I guarantee that one fine day, when I possess that kind of power, I will definitely head for Senior’s Lower Plane and banish those Fiend Tribesmen!”

“Good!”

The White Dragon Sovereign’s calm eyes ripples with great emotion. He didn’t know if his actions today would let a seed grow into a towering tree. But no matter what, it was still a trace of hope.

“The white dragon light runes that I’ve left in your tody will let you know the location of the Lower Plane when your strength reaches a certain level. After you’ve accomplish your promise, it will also let you know what the huge opportunity is.”

The White Dragon Sovereign’s gaze gradually restored their calm as he looked at Mu Chen and lightly spoke, “However, if you’re unable to accomplish it, you don’t have to force yourself. I’m well aware of how frightening this mission is.”

“I’ll remember it.”

Mu Chen heavily nodded his head. If there was a day he possessed the strength to accomplish it, then he would definitely pay a visit to the White Dragon Sovereign’s Lower Plane hometown. And, at that hime, he would banish all those savage and destructive foreign Fiend Tribesmen. Allowing the Lower Plane to radiate with life again.

The White Dragon Sovereign laughed as he shut his eyes and muttered, “I really hoped that I could witness that day…”

His figure gradually dulled down and thoroughly disappeared.

Mu Chen gave a bow towards the location where the White Dragon Sovereign's figure dissipated. Shortly after, with a thought flashing by, he exited from the white world.

Up on the mountain peak, Mu Chen's tightly shut eyes opened as he looked at the White Dragon Spiritual Pearl that was in his hand, which had dulled a lot more in terms of its luster as he lightly spoke with solemn, "White Dragon Senior, rest assured. If I possesses that power one day, I will definitely attack the Lower Plane and banish those filthy things."

The White Dragon Spiritual Pearl seemed to be able to hear what he just said as it slightly unleashed a glow.

Mu Chen gently caressed the White Dragon Spiritual Pearl before storing it. He stood up and lightly stretched his body. The bones in his entire body rippled with a sparkling glow and the crackling of his bones sounded like firecrackers being lit.

Along with the sound, Mu Chen could sense the power within his body growing little by little.

"What powerful energy…"

Mu Chen tightly clenched his fist as he sensed the surge of power within his body. He couldn't help smiling. The current him was way more powerful compared to the him that was half a month ago.

Without using any special means, the current him could suppress a Heavenly Transformation Stage Initial Phase expert or even Middle Phase, which he could also contend against. If he were to use his various methods, he could even cause a huge threat towards Heavenly Transformation Stage Middle Phase experts, who could cause him some troubles before the enhancement of his strength.

"I wonder, if I were to fight with Li Xuantong right now, what

would the outcome be?”

Mu Chen muttered to himself as fighting intent slightly gathered in his black pupils. Back then, when he fought with Li Xuantong, he had spent various means to take the three moves. But if they were to fight again, Mu Chen was confident that Li Xuantong wouldn’t have it easy anymore.

His gains in this trip to the Lightning Territory had far surpassed his expectations.

“Hey, the speed of forming Divine Lightning Bead is way too slow in the seventh level of the Lightning Territory. Let’s head to the next three levels, I want to refine a sufficient amount of Divine Lightning Beads.” The Nine Netherbird’s voice suddenly resounded within Mu Chen’s heart.

“How much have you refined in the past few days?” Mu Chen asked. When he was cultivating, the Nine Netherbird did not idle around.

“Only two thousand...” the Nine Netherbird said with dissatisfaction.

Two thousand was equivalent to 400,000 Spiritual Value Points. This speed was already extremely fast. However, there was still quite a distance to 2,500,000 Spiritual Value Points.

“Then let’s head towards the last three levels!”

Mu Chen looked towards the depth of the seventh level. As his strength rose, the seventh level of the Lightning territory could no longer obstruct him. Therefore, he wished to attempt to head for the last three levels of the Lightning Territory and see how hard it was to breakthrough.

Mu Chen smiled as his grand spirit rose in his heart. Shortly after, he took a step forward, his steps were profound with a dragon’s roar. His figure looked as though it was moving with a soaring dragon, in a flash, he had already appeared a few thousand

feet [1. 10 Chinese Feet = 3.3 Meters.] away. Compared to back then, his speed had increased more than a fold.

Although Mu Chen had yet to fully master the Dragon Soaring Art, the initial access towards the art had already far surpassed his past speed.

The dragon roar resounded as Mu Chen’s figure rapidly disappeared into the horizon.

Chapter 280 – Eighth Level

In the vast Seventh level of the Lightning Territory, a deep dragon's roar resounded as the light image streaked across the horizon with astonishing speed. The light image was like a soaring dragon, as it moved, even the horizon was pierced. In a flash, it had reached the edge of the horizon with astonishing speed.

Along the way, there were lines-of-sight that had noticed that light image. However, before they could recover, that light image had already appeared at the edge of the horizon.

The speed of the light image caused them to be dumbfounded.

That light image was, naturally, Mu Chen. At the same time, his heart was filled with joy as the speed of the Dragon Soaring Art had far surpassed his expectations. Compared to his past speed, this was several times faster!

In the future, with this escaping movement art, he could escape even if he couldn't overpower his opponent.

With the Dragon Soaring Art, his safety was, naturally, guaranteed.

Shhhhuu!

In just over ten minutes, that speed had allowed him to travel through the Seventh level and he reached the depths of the Seventh level. Over there, there was a screen blocking the access to the Eighth level.

The light image gradually dissipated and Mu Chen appeared. He directed his gaze before him with a grave look. In his sight, it wasn't a lightning light screen, but an enormous lightning river with torrential lightning water pouring down in torrents. It was like a water screen that blocked the path towards the Eighth level.

"This is the screen that blocks the Eighth level?" Mu Chen looked at the endlessly falling lightning water as he muttered.

He swept his line-of-sight around and could sense the Spiritual Energy ripples from his surroundings. The ripples of Spiritual Energy were powerful, yet they were clearly Spiritual Energies from the students that were bitterly cultivating.

However, when Mu Chen sensed them, those people had also noticed him. However, they did not show themselves, but were watching from the dark. All of the students that could reach this location were pinnacle existences in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. None of them would be easy to deal with.

Mu Chen wasn't too bothered by them as he directed his sight back towards the lightning river screen. His brows slightly knitted together. The lightning energy that was contained in the lightning screen was way too fearsome. Even a Heavenly Transformation Stage Initial Phase expert wouldn't have a good time, if they were washed down by it.

From the looks of it, it wouldn't be easy for him to forcefully make his way through.

Mu Chen stared at the falling lightning river as he sunk himself into his thoughts. After a long time, his eyes suddenly narrowed together as he realised that, although the falling river water was densely packed, there were still gaps in between. If he could pass through those small gaps, there's a high chance that he'd be able to pass through the lightning river screen.

This required an extreme amount of speed in order to accomplish it. If it was the previous Mu Chen, he could probably only look at it and feel helpless. However, the current him possessed the Dragon Soaring Art, allowing him to give it a try.

Mu Chen didn't show much hesitation as he moved, making abnormal steps towards the screen with a light image following him. The light image was like a soaring dragon.

Shhhhhuuuu!

His figure charged into the falling lightning river screen under many astonished gazes from the dark.

Mu Chen concentrated as he stepped forth, circulating the Dragon Soaring Art and flew out.

Shhhhiiii!

Mu Chen's figure rushed into the lightning river. However, his body turned uncontrollably stiff. Although his speed wasn't slow, it won't be easy for him to pass through the small gap. What awaited him was the lightning river falling on his body as the violent and heavy energy forcefully made him fall back. He felt a slight sweetness in his throat.

"What a formidable lightning river screen."

Mu Chen suppressed the fresh blood as a grave light flashed across his eyes. If he attempted to pass through the lightning river screen before he made his breakthrough, just this alone would have given him more than enough to suffer.

Those hidden gazes that were watching him inwardly shook their heads. Seemed like there's another one that attempted to pass through the lightning river screen. However, from the looks of it, it seemed his efforts were all futile.

There was only two people that had managed to get into the Eighth level of the Lightning Territory in the whole Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong. Aside from those two, the rest could only manage to get to the Seventh level. Although they were constantly trying, no one managed to succeed.

They were astonished by Mu Chen's speed, but even so, he still couldn't pass through the lightning river screen.

Mu Chen was unaware of their thoughts. His eyes closely stared at the endlessly falling lightning river screen. Shortly after, he deeply inhaled and his gaze gradually turned calm.

The Spiritual Energy ripples around him also turned calm. His state of mine turned exceptionally firm. All other disturbances no longer affected him. Only the endlessly falling lightning river screen was still moving.

The light screen appeared in his black pupils again, as if it was an image of a soaring dragon. The bizarre movements that the White Dragon Sovereign had exerted appeared within Mu Chen's eyes again and again.

Mu Chen stood before the lightning river screen for a full half hour.

In this half hour, his body did not move. And seeing his behaviour, the gazes that were hidden in the dark also felt baffled. That fellow has not going to give up yet?

And in their doubts, both of Mu Chen's eyes gradually closed. Shortly after, his steps rose and the light image around him turned into a soaring dragon image as a low roar resounded out.

Roar!

The instant that dragon's roar resounded, Mu Chen felt as though he was stepping on the soundwaves. His figure had turned into an afterimage and he burst out.

Shhhuuuu!

The figure abruptly flashed through the lightning river screen. However, this time, Mu Chen wasn't sent flying back as the figure that was turning illusory bit by bit was actually an afterimage.

"He went in!"

Within a hundred mile radius, some people that were on the lightning luring stages abruptly stood up with astonished gazes.

Shhhuuu! Shhhuu!

All of the attention was gathered on the lightning water screen as the afterimages constantly dissipated. However, there wasn't the

sight of anyone being repelled from it. Vaguely, it was as though they saw the light image, along with dragon roar, pass through the lightning river.

“He actually managed to pass through it! Just who is he?”

Someone deeply uttered in shock. After so long, there was finally a third person that managed to enter the Eighth level of the Lightning Territory?

And when Mu Chen passed through the lightning river, he had also attracted a commotion outside of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy’s Lightning Territory.

On the huge platform, the Lightning Territory Ranking suddenly flickered with a dazzling light. Countless students were attracted by it and their astonished gazes were directed on it. It had been a long time since such an abnormal scene had appeared on the Lightning Territory Ranking.

Normally speaking, only when there were major changes in the Lightning Territory, would such an abnormal scene appear.

Everyone directed their gazes over and they realised a light had moved on it, a silvery light had soared up with astonishing speed, instantly surpassing Su Xuan, He Yao and the rest before stopping at the third position.

“Mu Chen, Lightning Territory Eighth Level!”

Huaaaaaa.

Astonishment was like a tidal wave as it swept out, instantly causing a huge commotion. Countless people were dumbfounded.

“It was actually Mu Chen?1’

“That newcomer, Mu Chen? How is he so powerful? Not even He Yao and the rest could get to the Eighth level of the Lightning Territory, how did he managed to do it?!”

“I have no idea, but there wouldn’t be any lies in the Lightning

Territory Ranking. That Mu Chen must have managed to get to the Eighth level!”

“This is too fearsome, how did he manage to accomplish that?”

Outside the Lightning Territory, it was a huge commotion as everyone exchanged looks. They could see the disbelief from each other’s eyes. Although, right now, Mu Chen could be considered a famed figure in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, no matter what, it didn’t represent anything. His fight with Li Xuantong was just the Pact of Three Moves. And previously, in the Demon’s Gate Headquarters, he had managed to lay out the Spiritual Arrays beforehand. Furthermore, He Yao had clearly held his hands back and didn’t want to display his true strength just because of Mu Chen. Therefore, although there were some incidents that could increase Mu Chen’s fame, it didn’t allow him to truly surpass He Yao and the rest.

But, right now, the commotion on the Lightning Territory Ranking had allowed them to finally have a direct awareness. Perhaps this ranking wasn’t as direct as the Heavenly ranking, but it wasn’t a light ranking. From here, everyone could see the true strength that those students had concealed.

And Mu Chen was able to get into the Eighth level of the Lightning Territory. Doesn’t that mean that he had already surpassed He Yao and the rest, and was catching up to Li Xuantong?

Isn’t this freshman too formidable?

The changes on the Lightning Territory Ranking soon spread out and attracted many disbelievers.

Because the headquarters of the Demon’s Gate was still under construction, the buildings had became much more simple. He Yao was sitting on the first seat as he listened to his subordinate reporting to him without any expression.

“Mu Chen entered the Eighth level of the Lightning Territory? How is that possible?!” Chen Hou issued a cry of surprise from the side with a face of disbelief.

He Yao’s expression didn’t show much fluctuation, but his pupils condensed a little. He held onto a teacup for a long time, before putting it down and said with indifference, “Although it isn’t easy to enter the Eighth level of the Lightning Territory, if he used some methods, it is still possible to sneak in. There isn’t much to be surprised about.”

“That’s right.” Chen Hou nodded, “It’s just that Boss is unwilling; otherwise, it wouldn’t be that difficult to enter the Eighth level.”

He Yao lightly smiled as his gaze gradually turned cold.

“Rest assured. Just let him be complacent right now. During the Hunting War, no matter how high he soars, I will still suppress him!”

On a mountain peak in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, Li Xuantong looked at the paper with the news of the Lightning Territory in his hands as his eyes gradually narrowed. Shortly after, he flickered his fingers, turning that paper into ashes.

It seemed that Mu Chen had became much more powerful. However, if he were to appear in the Lightning Territory, there wouldn’t be anymore Pact of Three Moves. At that time, he hoped that Mu Chen wouldn’t be a disappointment.

Chapter 281 – Bald Old Man

Lightning Territory Eighth Level

Behind the lightning river screen, a light image, along with the roar of a dragon as it flashed out, appeared on the horizon.

Huuu

The light dissipated as Mu Chen couldn't help heavily breathe out a lump of air. His eyes were filled with a grave light. The lightning river screen was, indeed, powerful and the impact was way too horrifying.

However, fortunately, he had the Dragon Soaring Art. Adding the fact that when he was in the Northern Spiritual Academy initially, he received some teachings from Teacher Mo and underwent similar training. Although this lightning river screen was several folds more fearsome, Mu Chen was able to charge through the lightning river screen with his speed after having some experience.

"I wonder how Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong made their way here, through speed or force?" Mu Chen mumbled to himself. Although Mu Chen's method was a little cheap, speed was also an embodiment of one's strength.

Mu Chen shook his head, thereafter, he raised his head and looked at the Eighth Level of the Lightning Territory, an area meant for outstanding students in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. But prior to Mu Chen's expectations, there wasn't any darkness in the horizon, nor was there any dark thundercloud groups. On the contrary, the sky was clear.

The entire space was quiet and peaceful.

Mu Chen was a little startled as he looked at the scene before him. Clearly, he never expected the Eighth Level to be so quiet.

"Why isn't there any thunderclouds?" Mu Chen frowned. He also

didn’t feel any tyrannical lightning energy in this space. Just what was going on?

“Fly towards the left for a hundred miles.” The Nine Netherbird’s solemn voice suddenly resounded from his heart. The Nine Netherbird’s senses were clearly way more powerful than Mu Chen’s. And towards the left, it sensed some ripples.

Mu Chen nodded as his figure moved, flying towards the direction that was pointed out by the Nine Netherbird. A few minutes later, his figure slowly came to a stop as he looked at the scene before him, and he became dumbfounded.

It was a vast plain and on the plain, flowed a huge river. This river wasn’t any ordinary river, but a river made from silvery lightning water. Furthermore, the flow of this lightning river did not come in contact with the ground, but was flowing to a certain distance above the ground, floating. It wiggled slowly, with a slow pace as it flowed towards the distance.

It's appearance was like a huge silver dragon that was moving about.

Hissssss

Mu Chen couldn’t help inhaling a deep breath of cold air. He never imagine in his wildest imaginations that the Eighth Level would be so fearsome that the lightning energy had actually condensed and form a lightning river...

In the Seventh Level, Mu Chen attracted more than ten thunderclouds before a small lightning river was formed. But from the looks of this lightning river, it was beyond comparison to the one he formed. And clearly, this wasn’t the only lightning river in the Eighth Level.

“It’s indeed worthy of being the Eighth Level of the Lightning Territory.”

Mu Chen sighed. No wonder the requirements were so harsh to

enter the Eighth Level. If one didn't possess the sufficient strength, it would be hard for them to get any results from cultivating here.

"Let's begin refining the Divine Lightning Beads." Mu Chen spoke in his heart. Clearly, the task of refining the Divine Lightning Beads was up to the Nine Netherbird. Otherwise, with his strength, god knows how long it would take for him to refine the Divine Lightning Beads that were worth over 2,000,000 Spiritual Value Points.

"Okay, leave it to me!" the Nine Netherbird was overjoyed. When Mu Chen was done talking, black flames flew out of his body and formed into a small sparrow made of black flames.

"Huuu!"

The Nine Netherbird's mouth widened as black flames swept out in surges, forming into a huge tornado that was ablaze with black flames. As the wind was violently whipped up, the flowing lightning river started to stir.

Rumble!

As the calm lightning river turned violent, the berzerking lightning energy was like an electric current as it flowed into the black tornado. The deep roar of thunder sounded out.

As the black flames circulated, it rapidly gathered the lightning energy with that astonishing method as beads of the Divine Lighting Beads containing pure lightning energy were made.

Mu Chen looked at that spectacular scene before him and couldn't help smacking his lips. He immediately sat down with his legs crossed. From the looks of it, the Nine Netherbird would require some time to refine and there wasn't that many students that could make their way into the Eighth Level. Henceforth, he wasn't worried that this scene would be caught by anyone.

What he could do next was nothing but wait for the Nine Netherbird to finish.

However, there some things weren’t as simple as Mu Chen had thought.

While the Nine Netherbird was refining the Divine Lightning Beads at a large quantity, there was some movements in the depths of the Lightning Territory.

In the depths, there was a dusky space. In the space, there was a huge black-coloured lightning river floating in the air as countless black-coloured water flowed down. It was like a huge dragon that was flying along with the violent lightning.

“This fluctuation...it's the Nine Netherflame? Why is someone from the Nine Netherbird’s Clan here...?”

In the darkness, it was as though the twittering of birds was sorrowfully sounding out.

...

Rumble!

Mu Chen stared at the huge commotion of the lightning river. He couldn’t help stretching his body. The Nine Netherbird had already been refining the Divine Lightning Bead for roughly half an hour. But, clearly, the amount of beads that the Nine Netherbird had refined was still insufficient.

“It seems like it will require a few days of time to get enough Divine Lightning Beads to be worth over 2,000,000 Spiritual Value Points, even if I have the Nine Netherbird doing the task...” Mu Chen helplessly shook his head. Thereafter, he decided to close his eyes and cultivate.

Just when Mu Chen was about to close his eyes and start cultivating, he suddenly sensed something wrong. Shortly after, he curiously turned his head over. Not too far away, there seemed to be a figure on a huge rock.

A human figure?!

Mu Chen was startled as he immediately stood up and directed his eyes over to that direction. Only then did he clearly see that the figure that was sitting on the rock was a bald old man, donning a tattered black robe. The old man appeared to be as thin as a matchstick with muddy eyes. From his appearance, it seemed as though he would soon step into his coffin. Right at this moment, the bald old man was holding a crutch in his arms as he blankly stared at Mu Chen.

Mu Chen felt his scalp tingling from this weird scene. That old man seemed to have been sitting on that spot for a long time. However, Mu Chen didn't sense him at all. Just what strength was required to accomplish such a feat?

The Nine Netherbird also sensed something wrong as it immediately withdrew the black flamed tornado, Within the tornado, a flow of a silvery current flew over. This was all of the Divine Lightning Beads that the Nine Netherbird had spent half a day's time to bitterly refine.

Shhhhhhuu!

However, just as the Nine Netherbird was about to take those Divine Lightning Beads, the bald old man suddenly made a movement with his hand and all of the beads were instantly separated from the Nine Netherbird's control, and were spiraling around the latter.

Mu Chen and the Nine Netherbird's eyes changed. The Nine Netherbird inwardly clenched it's teeth, but did not take any action as it's intuition told it that the weird bald old man before them was extremely frightening.

"Be cautious, this old man is very formidable!" the Nine Netherbird's voice was extremely grave as it's voice resounded within Mu Chen's heart.

Mu Chen bitterly smiled, isn't that obvious? He easily startled them, how could he be simple?

“This old man…” Mu Chen summoned his courage and said with his hands cupped together.

“The Lightning Territory is for students to refine their bodies. You made use to the Nine Netherbird’s power to refine the Divine Lightning Beads, this is considered a foul.” the bald old man said as he raised his muddy eyes.

Mu Chen’s face flushed red as he could not explain himself. This method was indeed, similar to cheating.

The small black sparrow that the Nine Netherbird formed stood on Mu Chen’s shoulders. Its eyes flickered with light and on it's small body, black flames rose. In that instant, it had made the decision to grab Nie Li and flee the instant it felt something wasn’t right.

“You’s a small Nine Nether that had just reached adulthood. Don’t try to employ any means before me, unless you’re one of those old monsters in your Nine Netherbird’s Clan…” the bald old man stared at the Nine Netherbird as he smiled.

The Nine Netherbird’s gaze changed.

“However, you’ve indeed aroused my curiosity. With the pride of you Nine Netherbirds, you would actually form a Bloodline Bond with a human, not to mention such a weak human. If this fact was made known to those old monsters in your Clan, I’m afraid that you’d suffer.” the bald old man said as he took a glance at Mu Chen and the Nine Netherbird. His speech was slow and his voice gave others a feeling of helplessness. However, the words he spoke out made Mu Chen and the Nine Netherbird’s scalps tingle.

The old man actually managed to see through the relationship between them with just a glance, just what frightening eyesight was that?

Mu Chen bitterly smiled. “Senior, it was out fault in this matter. We will not refine anymore Divine Lightning Beads and will make

our leave now, will that do?”

From the tone of this bald old man, he should be a huge figure of authority in this Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Therefore, as students of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, Mu Chen wasn’t worried that their lives would be in danger.

As Mu Chen spoke, he slowly retreated. If the bald old man didn’t say anything, then he would leave this place immediately.

“From the looks of the small Nine Netherbird, it's evolution has failed, right? And right now, it needs the Northern Sea Dragon’s Blood Essence and borrow it's power to rush into the Divine Beast Record, right? You guys are now refining the Divine Lightning Beads without any restraint is to save up enough Spiritual Value Points to purchase it, correct?” just as Mu Chen was about to slowly move back, the bald old man slowly spoke.

Mu Chen bitterly smiled, it seemed that there wasn’t anything that could be hidden from this old man.

“Do you want the sufficient amount of Divine Lightning Beads?” the bald old man smiled as he looked at Mu Chen with interest.

Mu Chen honestly nodded his head.

“It's hard to encounter such an interesting younger generation fella...”

The bald old man placed the crutches on his knees and stared at Mu Chen, “If you manage to handle an attack from my clone, I will return these Divine Lightning Beads to you and will let you guys refine the sufficient amount of Divine Lightning Beads you both need. Furthermore... I will give this young fella some reward, what do you say?”

“Haha, after all of these years, there were only two people that could withstand an attack from this old man’s clone among the young fellas in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.”

“Two people?”

Mu Chen was blank as his gaze concentrated, “Was it Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong?”

The bald old man slightly nodded and smiled, “Those two young fellas do have some talent. However, you’ve astonished me, being able to get to the Eighth Level with just Quasi-Heavenly Transformation Stage cultivation.”

“What now?”

Mu Chen slightly went silent. After a brief moment, both of his hands abruptly clenched. His black pupils surged with sharpness. Since Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong could accomplish it, then he refused to believe that he could be any worse than them.

“Okay, it’s a deal!”

Chapter 282 – One Move

“We have a deal?” the bald old man with tattered black robe directed his muddy eyes towards Mu Chen.

“Yes!”

Mu Chen heavily nodded his head and, shortly after, he smiled, “Even if it’s dangerous, I doubt that Senior would kill me in a move, right?”

“You won’t die, at most, you would just lie on your bed for few months.” the bald old man hoarsely smiled as he extended his skinny hands out and rubbed his bald head.

Mu Chen’s smile stiffed. Shortly after, he helplessly inhaled a mouthful of air. No matter what, since he had accepted the terms, then even if he crossed mountains of daggers or seas of flames, he had to give it a try.

“Can you do it?” the Nine Netherbird secretly asked with concern in it's eyes.

“I’ll give it a try.” Mu Chen also didn’t have a huge amount of confidence. This bald old man that was before him was definitely the most fearsome person he had ever seen. It’s to the point that he was even stronger than the White Dragon Sovereign.

“Later on, I will secretly help you.” the Nine Netherbird said in Mu Chen’s heart. After all, Mu Chen was helping the Nine Netherbird refine the Divine Lightning Bead and, henceforth, encountered this trouble.

When Mu Chen heard what the Nine Netherbird said, he did not reply. The bald old man hoarsely smiled as he swept his skinny hands and a streak of light flew out, shrouding the Nine Netherbird. No matter how much it tried to struggle, the Nine Netherbird couldn’t break free.

“Small Nine Netherbird, watch from the side.” the bald old man

smiled while narrowing his eyes.

The Nine Netherbird struggled for a period of time, but seeing that it wasn’t very effective, the Nine Netherbird could only stare at the bald old man viciously and said, “If anything happens to him, I definitely won’t let you off. Even if I can’t best you right now, that doesn’t mean that I can't in the future.”

The bald old man smiled, “Nine Netherbird, you still have a long way to go. Even when you manage to successfully evolve and enter into the Divine Beast Record, you’re still nothing.”

“Are you prepared?”

When the old man finished speaking, he stared at Mu Chen.

Mu Chen deeply inhaled a mouthful of air as his figure moved and retreated. Thereafter, he stood on the horizon and said with a solemn voice, “Senior, please grant me your teachings!”

A majestic Spiritual Energy rippled out of his body as the pitch-black flames looked similar to black smoke, soared up into the horizon and could be seen clearly within a hundred miles.

“His Spiritual Energy has merged with the Nine Nether Flames?” the bald old man stared at the surrounding blazing Spiritual Energy as a trace of astonishment flashed though his eyes.

He waved his sleeve and his skinny hands extended out and lightly clenched.

Boom!

An indescribable pressure swept out from his body. Under this demeanor, the entire space looked as though it had trembled as a deep cry resounded.

Rumble!

A huge flowing lightning river was suddenly soaring over this plain and was absorbed by the bald old man. Thereafter, it looked similar to a silver dragon as it spiraled above his head.

Mu Chen's face slightly changed at the sight of this. His heart trembled, the fearsome lightning energy in the lightning river was sufficient to crush mountains. However, it was easily lifted by this bald old man. This strength was, indeed, indescribable.

"Boom!"

The bald old man's huge hand waved, the lightning river instantly soared into the horizon and, as it issued a rumbling sound, it rippled in this space. The lightning surged like an electric dragon, and with an unparalleled demeanor, it headed towards Mu Chen with an irresistible manner.

Mu Chen raised his head and traces of astonishment was shown within his eyes as he looked at the lightning river that was charging at him. He could clearly sense that the space around him was sealed at this moment.

There was no possibility that he could avoid this fearsome offense.

This bald old man was clearly not intending to go easy on Mu Chen.

Mu Chen clenched his teeth as both of his palms came together. The veins on his arm twitched and, shortly after, a vicious look appeared within his eyes. Since he couldn't escape, then he could only go all out!

Boom!

The violent Spiritual Energy instantly poured out of Mu Chen's body without any restraints. He suddenly sat down in the air and both of his hands were forming signs at lightning speed.

Onom!

There was the sound of an ancient bell ringing on this horizon. As the black lights came together, a huge Nine-layered Pagoda appeared and shrouded Mu Chen within.

Among all of Mu Chen's methods, the defense of the Nine-layered Pagoda was clearly the most fearsome. If he wanted to withstand the horrifying attack of the bald old man, the only thing he could do was to rely on the Nine-layered Pagoda.

"This is..."

The bald old man raised his head and stared at the huge Nine-layered Pagoda up in the sky. His brows slightly knitted together as his muddy eyes flashed as thoughts crossed his mind.

Boom!

The lightning river did not have the slightest pause when the Nine-layered Pagoda appeared. As the lightning river surged, in the next instant, it heavily clashed against the Nine-layered Pagoda with undeniable pressure.

Bang!

Faced with such a fearsome impact, the Nine-layered Pagoda instantly trembled violently. As the lightning river streaked past, fine tiny cracks appeared on the surface of the Nine-layered Pagoda.

The attack of the bald old man was, indeed, way too frightening.

As the Nine-layered Pagoda shrouded Mu Chen, his face instantly flashed with a of pale colour. He never thought that his strongest defense was actually so frail under an attack of the bald old man.

He raised his head as the cracks on the surface of the Nine-layered Pagoda slowly spread out. As the lightning river continued to emit a silvery light that was dripping down, it caused a deep thunderous roar that resound within the Nine-layered Pagoda.

The Nine-layered Pagoda was about to collapse.

The instant the Nine-layered Pagoda collapsed, Mu Chen would be completely revealed. With his physique, it was clearly impossible for him to resist such a frightening impact.

Would it be game over for him just like this?

Mu Chen bit his lips, a sweetness was spreading out from the corner of his mouth. Within his black pupils, a deep unresigned intent flashed across his black pupils. If he couldn't withstand this attack, doesn't that mean that he could not be compared to Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong?

If he couldn't even be compared to them, then on what basis does he have to tell Luo Li that he could become an unrivalled expert to guard her?!

Rumble!

The Nine-layered Pagoda was crumbling, layer after layer. The black-coloured Nine-layered Pagoda was constantly showing cracks as the lightning past through the Pagoda, and was shocking the body of the youth within the Pagoda. At this moment, the latter appeared frail.

Another layer crumbled as the youth abruptly raised his head. Within his black pupils, a look full of unswerving determination that couldn't be shaken could be seen.

"Ah!"

He clenched both of his palms as eyes became bloodshot. A sound that was filled with a deep fighting roar resounded from his throat.

His deep roar resounded within this tattered Nine-layered Pagoda. His unswerving determination made an impact with this Pagoda.

Onom! Onom!

As his roar resounded, the Pagoda suddenly trembled, as though it was resonating. Mu Chen's firm and determined roar seemed to have roused something.

An ancient and old light pattern started to appear on the walls of the Pagoda. Those patterns were like ancient lotus' as they filled

the area with a vast light.

The Great Pagoda Art within Mu Chen's body seemed to have been circulating uncontrollably. In the depths of his body, the mysterious black light also burst forth with a dazzling luster.

The thing that seemed to have been sealed within the depths of his body had also been activated at this instant.

"Shhhhuuu!"

An ancient sound resounded within the Nine-layered Pagoda and Mu Chen's figure was shrouded by the black light. The originally collapsing Nine-layered Pagoda instantly burst forth with an ancient light.

As the light appeared, the collapsed part of the Nine-layered Pagoda started to restore itself, bit by bit.

The bald old man narrowed his eyes, looking at the majestic lightning river that was flowing against the unmovable Nine-layered Pagoda. Within the black-coloured Pagoda, there seemed to be something similar to an ancient black-coloured lotus. There were nine petals on the lotus flower and it was as though there was a heaven seizing power in every petal, emitting an endless profound intent.

It was as though an ancient and desolate sound was echoing between the heavens and earth.

"This..." the bald old man's face trembled a little as he muttered, "This is actually the Primordial Divine Pagoda? But if he's someone with the Primordial Divine Pagoda, how could he be here?"

A light flashed in the eyes of the bald old man, as though he had seen through the Pagoda that Mu Chen sitting in. Fresh blood was covering his entire body and wiggled to form into a blood lotus light pattern on the surface of his body. That blood lotus also had nine petals.

"Interesting. Just who exactly is he? To have parents who

possess such a Primordial Bloodline…”

The bald old man’s eyes flashed as the lightning river flowed away from the horizon and floated above the earth once again. And as the lighting river retreated, the huge Nine-layered Pagoda that was up in the sky turned into a black light and was dissipating, bit by bit.

As the Nine-layered Pagoda dissipated, a figure that was covered in blood instantly fell down from the sky.

When the bald old man saw it, his finger flicked and a silver light shot into Mu Chen’s body. Thereafter, he swept his sleeves and a gale tossed Mu Chen into the lightning river.

“You!”

When the Nine Netherbird saw the scene, it's face drastically changed. The lightning river contained frightening lightning energy. Even when Mu Chen wasn’t conscious, he wouldn’t dare to lightly enter the lightning river, not to mention that he’s unconscious right now.

“Rest assured. I don’t want him dead. I’ve previously mentioned a reward; so, naturally, I will keep my end of the deal.” the bald old man lightly smiled. Shortly after, he looked towards the Nine Netherbird and two of his skinny fingers clenched. A feather that looked like it was made from metal appeared. As his fingers flickered, the feather shot into the body of the Nine Netherbird and the latter could not examine what it was.

“What are you doing?!” the Nine Netherbird was extremely angry. The bald old man was too hateful.

“I’m a bit friendly with an old monster from your Nine Netherbird Clan. Therefore, I’ve sent you a gift. Okay, you can continue to refine the Divine Lightning Beads, but don’t disrupt that kid.”

The bald old man did not make any explanations and showed a

faint smile. Thereafter, he lazily stood up and slowly looked towards the far earth.

His pace appeared slow, but after a few steps, he had already appeared on the horizon and, thereafter, thoroughly disappeared.

The Nine Netherbird looked at the direction which he disappeared, but could only clench it's teeth inwardly. It worriedly looked at Mu Chen, who was wrapped inside of the lightning river. Thereafter, the Nine Netherbird spurt out its black flames, filled the sky and started refining the Divine Lightning Beads.

Chapter 283 – 13,000 beads

Mu Chen's intent drifted in this darkness. He was so dizzy, it felt like it was never-ending.

Within the darkness, there seemed to be a black light surging and took form beneath Mu Chen. It seemed to be a fuzzy image of a girl and her palm gently caressed Mu Chen's intent.

Under her gentle touch, there was an indescribable softness that fluctuated in Mu Chen's heart. That sensation was similar to a mother's embrace.

The warmth made him unable to struggle free.

Under the warmth, there was a stream flowing within Mu Chen's body, as though it had soothed the injuries within him.

A trace of soberness surged up in his fuzzy state. Mu Chen tried his utmost to widen his eyes and look at that fuzzy and warm figure. However, he still couldn't get a clear glimpse of it.

However, the bizarre sensation of a blood-bond made him understand that he had some kind of relationship with that warm figure. In his childhood dreams, it was that figure that guarded him.

"Mother!"

Mu Chen tried his best to struggle and shortly after, he widened both of his eyes. His palm clawed towards that figure, but grabbed nothing but air.

"Ahhh!"

He opened both of his eyes and what he saw was a bright silvery light. Mu Chen still couldn't even react to the situation but bore the urge to scream. The violent lightning energy was like steel barbs as it flowed over him. Thereafter, it flocked into his body.

The lightning energy was way too violent and, therefore, as it

rushed in, it had directly caused intense pain to Mu Chen. His muscles around his body started to twitch.

Just when Mu Chen was at loss because of this, there was a faint silvery light being emitted from within his body. Under the shine of the silver light, Mu Chen's body was like a starving person seeing food, and started to violently devour the lightning energy.

That intense pain instantly surged in a violent manner.

Mu Chen clenched his teeth as a trace of blood flowed out from the corner of his mouth. There was something that had suddenly appeared in his heart. It seemed to be a Thunder God Physique Deity Tier Spiritual Art.

"Was it left behind by that bald old man?"

The thought flashed through Mu Chen's heart and shortly after, he started to train under the influence of the Deity Tier Spiritual Art. When he circulated that art, he saw the insides of his body turning silver. As lightning flickered, his entire body, including his muscles, internal organs, meridians and bones, was endlessly devouring the lightning energy within his body.

And under the frantic devouring process, although Mu Chen still felt intense pain within his body, the fulfilling feeling of energy had surged up. The pain was comfortable and the feeling was bizarre.

Mu Chen didn't know how powerful the Thunder God Physique that was left behind by the bald old man was, but he could clearly sense his physique becoming more and more powerful.

It seemed to be a Physique Cultivating Deity Tier Spiritual Art.

This made Mu Chen a little surprised. Among Spiritual Arts, Physique Cultivating were the rarest. And, right now, the reward that was given by the bald old man wasn't just any Physique Cultivating Spiritual Art, but a Deity Tier one at that!

A Spiritual Art that could absorb lightning energy to refine one's

body.

“Although that old man’s methods are ruthless, he wasn’t petty.” Mu Chen muttered to himself. Shortly after, he didn’t dare to be distracted and cultivated this Physique Cultivating Deity Art with all his heart.

This cultivation continued for an entire three days of time. Within these three days of time, Mu Chen’s body was soaked in the depths of the lightning river, endlessly refining himself, again and again, with the lightning energy.

Furthermore, while Mu Chen was being refined by the lightning energy, the Thunder God Physique was constantly gathering the lightning energy around him and formed into a lightning ball.

Mu Chen did not absorb this lightning ball, but allowed it to circulate within his meridians, refining his meridians bit by bit, causing his meridians to be tougher.

This bizarre cultivation technique made Mu Chen feel a bit surprised. Shortly after, he could sense how extraordinary this Thunder God Physique was. However, when he was practicing the art, he could feel a flaw. Clearly, this Thunder God Physique must be an incomplete Spiritual Art.

That bald old man did not gift him the entire cultivation technique of the Thunder God Physique.

Although this made Mu Chen feel a little regret, he wasn’t too disappointed. It was already out of his expectations to acquire such a good harvest.

Three days later.

At the edge of the lightning river, the black flames that had covered the horizon were withdrawing. The Nine Netherbird issued a clear cry and drew them back into its body. On top of its head, the silvery river flowed as it floated. Within the powerful current, there was a large amount of Divine Lightning Beads

flickering with lightning energy.

From just looking at it, there was at least more than ten thousand!

After refining all of these Divine Lightning beads, the Nine Netherbird looked towards the river with concern. However, it did not spot anything unusual.

It was a little anxious and, shortly after, it flapped it's wings, and rushed into the river to search for Mu Chen.

Bang!

However, just when it was about to charge in, a surge of lightning soared up into the heavens, sweeping out with a tyrannical Spiritual Energy. The Lightning river exploded and a figure appeared on the horizon.

For a brief moment, lightning was flickering on that figure before it started to gradually disappear. In the end, Mu Chen's figure appeared.

The current Mu Chen's skin had a faint silver colour. On his body, there was an explosive energy that was contained that could not be underestimated.

Mu Chen clenched his fist before throwing two fists out. Instantly, the air exploded. This caused joy to fill his eyes. Compared to several days before, he had indeed grown much stronger.

"Not bad."

Mu Chen praised. After the lightning dissipated from his body and he was restored to normal, he smiled with his eyes narrowed, while landing towards the direction that the Nine Netherbird was at.

"Are you alright?" when the Nine Netherbird saw Mu Chen come out, it also felt relieved.

Mu Chen shook his head, then was looking around, searching for the bald old man.

“He’s long gone.” when the Nine Netherbird saw Mu Chen’s gaze, it spoke out.

“I wonder who that senior was, to have such ability. Even in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, he should be among the top levels, right?” Mu Chen muttered.

“Who knows?” The Nine Netherbird, however, wasn’t bothered about that matter.

“Forget it.” Having no answers, Mu Chen tossed that thought to the back of his head. He looked at the tens of thousands of Divine Lightning Beads that were hovering in the sky and a smear of shock flashed across his eyes, “With so many Divine Lightning Beads, it should be enough.”

His hand swept and all of the Divine Lightning Beads were stored by him.

“Let’s go, we should get going as well.” Mu Chen stretched his body. The harvest that he had obtained on this trip to the Lightning Territory had far surpassed his expectations. Not only did his cultivation grow to Quasi-Heavenly Transformation Stage, he even obtained Spiritual Arts like the Dragon Soaring Art and the Thunder God Physique, which gave great perks to his combat abilities.

Right now, no matter how thorny the opponents that he will encounter in the Hunting War, he was confident in confronting them.

“Li Xuantong, we if meet again, perhaps the Pact of Three Moves will no longer be of any use.”

Mu Chen smiled. Several months ago, Li Xuantong was an opponent that was tough for him to win against. But now, Mu Chen no longer feared him.

“Let’s go and get your Northern Sea Dragon’s Blood Essence. Your wish can finally be fulfilled.” Mu Chen waved his hand as he smiled.

“Thanks.” the Nine Netherbird looked at Mu Chen and said with a low voice. Unconcealable joy was showing in his eyes. The Nine Netherbird had finally waited for this day.

“This relationship of ours...”

Mu Chen smiled with his eyes narrowed as he looked at the Nine Netherbird, sizing it up as he rubbed his chin, “If your evolution succeeds and you transform into a Divine Beast, you should possess the ability to take human form, right?”

At that time, he should be able to finally differentiate it's gender, right? And Mu Chen had always maintained his curiosity on this point.

The Nine Netherbird rolled it's eyes at him and no longer paid any attention to him. The Nine Netherbird turned into a black light and burrowed into Mu Chen’s body.

Mu Chen smiled as his figure moved, turning into a light image as he flew towards the exit of the Lightning Territory at lightning speed.

After half an hour, Mu Chen returned to the First Level and exited the Lightning Territory. After coming out of the Lightning Territory, he stood on the air and looked at the lively Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. His tensed-up body also gradually relaxed.

When Mu Chen exited the Lightning Territory, he did not head for the Freshman Area, but to the Spiritual Value Hall. He could sense the excitement within the Nine Netherbird. Since that’s the case, then Mu Chen had decided to fulfill his promise.

The Spiritual Value Hall had the highest popularity in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. The frightening amount of

people was like ants, constantly coming out and going in of the hall.

When Mu Chen entered the Spiritual Value Hall, he headed towards the center of the main hall, where the trading of Divine Lightning Beads was held.

Behind the huge crystal counter, there was a beautiful lady whose age should be roughly the same as the students of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. However, helping out here can also obtain Spiritual Value Points as payment.

There was a decent amount of people purchasing Divine Lightning Beads. After queuing up for more than ten minutes, it was finally his turn. The beautiful girl looked at Mu Chen as she sweetly smiled, “Hi there, are you buying Divine Lightning Beads?”

“Nope, I’m here to sell them.” Mu Chen shook his head.

When the lady heard his declaration, she couldn’t help feeling curious. However, there were many students that condensed Divine Lightning Beads to exchange for Spiritual Value Points. Shortly after, she faintly smiled as she enquired, “The trading price of Divine Lightning Beads is 200 Spiritual Value Points for one, how many are you selling?”

She took up a brush and was prepared to record it down.

“13,000.” Mu Chen smiled brilliantly.

Pa!

The brush in the lady’s hand fell as her beautiful face was filled with astonishment. All of the students that were queuing up for their turn to purchase Divine Lightning Beads were also dumbfounded as they looked at Mu Chen.

13,000 Divine Lightning Beads? Was this kid’s head clamped by a door? Were Divine Lightning Beads so easy to condense? 13,000 was an amount that not even Shen Cangsheng could condense!

When Mu Chen saw the doubts in the eyes of the lady, he did not bother to explain any further, but made a simple action of flicking his fingers. A brilliant silvery light started to flow out and instantly filled the surrounding counters.

“Senior Sister, 13,000 Divine Lightning Beads for a total of 2,600,000 Spiritual Value Points. Thanks.”

Chapter 284 – Blood Essence is obtained!

Within the Spiritual Value Hall, the bustling hall seemed to have quietened down in an instant. The dumbfounded gazes stared at the silvery current. Tens of thousands of Divine Lightning Beads. They've never seen anyone take such a huge amount out in one go before...

Within the Lightning Territory, condensing Divine Lightning Beads wasn't an easy task. Many people could only harvest around 10 beads a day. Furthermore, they still had to forsake the time that they could use to cultivate. Ten of thousands, if this was a task given to them to accomplish, even if they didn't rest, it would take an endless amount of time.

Furthermore 13,000 Divine Lightning Beads was equivalent to 2,600,000 Spiritual Value Points. It was an enormous sum that could be used to purchase a High Rank Spiritual Artifact or even a Quasi Deity Tier Spiritual Art from the Spiritual Value Hall.

The eyes that were staring at the large sum of Divine Lightning Beads had envy flickering in their eyes. But, fortunately, this was shown in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. If he was somewhere else in the Northern Heavens Continent, Mu Chen's way of revealing his wealth would definitely attract a lot of trouble to himself. Clearly, he was well aware of this issue, which was why he revealed it here.

The beautiful lady that was behind the counter recovered herself as she glanced at Mu Chen with amazement in her eyes. She clearly didn't know how he was able to obtain such a lump sum of Divine Lightning Beads. Fortunately, she was intelligent and did not ask that many questions. She took out a Mustard Seed Bracelet and as a light flickered, she stored all of the Divine Lightning Beads within it.

"Indeed, 13,000 beads." she slightly checked and nodded her

head. Shortly after, she added as she smiled, “This student, I don’t have the authority to process such a huge transaction. I’ll go and get the teacher in-charge.”

Mu Chen nodded his head. The lady turned around and left. After a short while, she returned with a middle-aged man, whom Mu Chen assumed was the teacher in-charge here.

The teacher in-charge also gave Mu Chen a glance of astonishment. Even for himself, this was the first time that he had seen a student capable of taking out over ten thousand Divine Lightning Beads.

“Pass me your Spiritual Value Card.” the teacher in-charge lightly smiled. Although he was amazed, the teacher in-charge did not lose his composure, unlike the other students.

Mu Chen faintly smiled in reply as he handed his Spiritual Value Card over.

The teacher in-charge received it and also retrieved a Spiritual Value Card from his sleeve. A streak of light flashed into Mu Chen’s card and he returned it back to Mu Chen.

Mu Chen cast a glance at the Spiritual Value Card and saw 7,100,000 Spiritual Value Points. This made him feel relieved. His hard work, after so long, finally paid off.

“Thanks.”

He suppressed his impatience as he thanked the teacher in-charge, but he did not accept the Spiritual Value Card. He smiled gently, “I’m afraid that I have to trouble teacher, again. I wish to purchase an item.”

“What is it?” the teacher asked with a smile.

“The Northern Sea Dragon’s Blood Essence.” Mu Chen smiled in return.

The teacher in-charge’s hand that was holding onto the Spiritual

Value Card trembled as he casted his glance at Mu Chen in astonishment. The Northern Sea Dragon's Blood Essence that cost 7,000,000 Spiritual Value Points? This was the most expensive item among their Spiritual Value Point items and, after all of these years, he had yet to see any student capable of purchasing this item.

"Follow me."

The teacher in-charge waved his hand and moved towards the back. When Mu Chen saw the teacher walking, he immediately followed up. Behind him, many students did not clearly hear what Mu Chen wanted to purchase. But, after looking at the teacher in-charge's expression, they could guess that it wasn't an ordinary item that Mu Chen was buying. This caused curiosity to raise within their hearts.

Mu Chen, however, paid no attention to their curiosity as he followed the teacher into a small chamber. The latter walked into the inner chamber and, after a long time, he swept his sleeve and, as a light flickered, a crystal ball that was roughly the size of a human's head appeared in his hand.

Inside the crystal ball, there was a lump of golden liquid that was wiggling about with life, emitting a bizarre fluctuation.

Even with the isolation of the crystal ball, Mu Chen could detect the fearsome energy contained in that lump of golden blood. This was the genuine strength of the Divine Beasts.

Divine Beasts are existences comparable to Sovereigns.

"This is the Blood Essence of the Northern Sea Dragon, an item belonging to Lord Northern Sea." the teacher in-charge was also amazed as he looked at the golden blood and spoke with revere.

Mu Chen nodded his head. This Lord Northern Sea that the teacher spoke of should be the Northern Sea Dragon itself.

"This Blood Essence is priced at 7,000,000 Spiritual Value Points

and I've already deducted it from your Spiritual Value Card." the teacher in-charge returned the card over to Mu Chen and the original 7,100,000 only had 100,000 left, which made Mu Chen helpless. He had turned poor in an instant before he even warmed those 7,000,000 Spiritual Value Points with his hand.

"Now, this Blood Essence of the Northern Sea Dragon belongs to you." the teacher in-charge smiled. Although he was curious about why Mu Chen wanted to purchase the Blood Essence, he clearly knew that he couldn't inquire about such personal matters.

"Thanks, teacher."

Mu Chen took the Spiritual Value Point Card and stored the Blood Essence of the Northern Sea Dragon into the Mustard Seed Bracelet. He made a bow to the teacher and took his leave.

The teacher in-charge looked at Mu Chen's leaving silhouette and went into silence, turned around and left. This matter with the Northern Sea Dragon's Blood Essence wasn't small; therefore, he had to report this matter to the higher-ups of the academy.

After coming out of the Spiritual Value Hall, Mu Chen looked at the flow of people and enquired in his head, while looking up at the sky, "You'll be able to evolve now that we've obtained the Blood Essence of the Northern Sea Dragon."

"How can it be that easy? I still have to undergo the tribulation."

"That black heavenly lightning tribulation?" Mu Chen's eyelids could not help twitching. Back then, when he first saw the Nine Netherbird, the latter was undergoing this tribulation. However, the latter had failed and, henceforth, Mu Chen knew how frightening this tribulation was.

"Shredding the spiritual and turning divine, this has always been the most important step of our Spiritual Beast's cultivation route. Therefore, it won't be so easy. I have already failed this step twice and, this time, by borrowing the power of this Northern Sea

Dragon’s Blood Essence, I have a great amount of confidence this time round.” the Nine Netherbird said solemnly.

Mu Chen quietly nodded his head. Now that he had established a Bloodline Bond with the Nine Netherbird, they’re simple of one body. If they thrive, they’d thrive together and if they failed, they’d failed together. If anything went wrong with the Nine Netherbird, he would also suffer a grave blow. Therefore, he naturally wished for the Nine Netherbird to succeed in the tribulation.

“Adjust yourself to your best during these next two days. You can also draw my Spiritual Energy. Thereafter, we’ll look for a place and start the tribulation.” said Mu Chen.

In the aura sea, the Nine Netherbird nodded it's head as a look of gentleness flashed through it's eyes. It could sense the concern that was coming from Mu Chen’s heart.

Mu Chen spoke nothing else as he headed back to the freshman area. By the time he returned, he had undoubtedly attracted the excitement of the Goddess Luo Association’s members. In this period of time, the news of Mu Chen entering into the Eighth Level of the Lightning Territory had spread throughout the entire Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy since long ago. This made many students startled. This freshman seemed to be able to accomplish an unexpected feat in several intervals at a time.

Mu Chen spoke and laughed with everyone for a brief moment, before returning to his small building. However, he did not see Luo Li. The latter had probably left to cultivate, which made him smile bitterly. That girl was still working so hard with her cultivation. However, when he thought of the responsibility that Luo Li had to bear, Mu Chen’s mind was also heavy. He could sense that Luo Li might not be able to remain by his side for much longer. She was the next Empress of the Luo God Clan, and she had too much to prepare...

But, right now, his strength was still too weak, so he could not provide her with any help.

Standing on the small building, Mu Chen looked at the vast starry sky and lightly breathed out a mouthful of air. He still had a long way to go, but, fortunately, he should still have some time left.

During the next couple of days, Mu Chen did not go out but remained in the building to cultivate, and made preparations for the Nine Netherbird's tribulation. Although the Nine Netherbird could only depend on itself for the tribulation, Mu Chen also wished to provide the Nine Netherbird with strength as well.

And during these two days, the Nine Netherbird did not make any movements as it was quietly condensing its strength, preparing to challenge the tribulation that it had failed twice now.

Due to their preparations, the two days rapidly flew by.

After two days, Mu Chen flew out of the freshman's area and flew out of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. At the outside range, there was an endless range of mountains. This place was far from the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy and having the tribulation here should keep anyone from interfering.

Mu Chen flew out for nearly half an hour, until he was far away from the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, before his speed slowed down. Thereafter, he landed on a mountain. Although there were Spiritual Beasts around this mountain range, there were many powerful Spiritual Energy fluctuations. Henceforth, this was a pretty good place for the tribulation.

Mu Chen landed on a mountain peak. Before he could speak, black flames surged on his shoulder and a small sparrow flickered out. It looked at the sky, full of determination and pride in it's eyes.

Mu Chen's hand clenched and the crystal ball containing the

Blood Essence of the Northern Sea Dragon appeared. The golden blood was slowly wiggling inside, emitting a powerful energy.

“Shall we start?” Mu Chen looked at the Nine Netherbird.

The Nine Netherbird nodded and, shortly after, it breathed black flames from it's mouth, shrouding the crystal ball and swallowed it into its body.

Shhhhhuuu!

Its figure flashed out as it soared into the horizon. Thereafter, the black flames swept out, as a clear and resonant cry resounded between the heavens and earth. As the black flames spread throughout the horizon, the Nine Netherbird’s small body also started to expand. In just several breath’s of time, a pair of blazing black-flamed wings had spread out to the point that they could almost cover the mountain.

Mu Chen raised his head, this was the second time that he had witnessed the Nine Netherbird reveal it's real body. Under the influence of the Northern Sea Dragon’s Blood Essence, all of the injuries that the Nine Netherbird had suffered were completely healed, and, in addition, it even made the Nine Netherbird more powerful.

Liiiiiii!

The Nine Netherbird issued a cry towards the horizon as frightening Spiritual Energy ripples swept out. That powerful pressure filled everything between the heavens and earth.

Rumble!

When the Nine Netherbird unleashed it's energy without any restraints, frightening ripples started to gather into the nine heavens. There were lumps after lumps of black thunder clouds being formed that contained enough power to annihilate anything.

Mu Chen’s gaze turned grave.

The tribulation had finally started.

Chapter 285 – Divine Black Thunder Tribulation Appears Again!

Boom!

As the heaven and earth trembled, the formerly clear sky instantly turned dark. Even the Spiritual Energy between the heavens and earth sensed the horrifying taste in it and started to escape from this region.

Wuuuu! Wuuu!

Within the mountain range, an endless amount of Spiritual Energy trembled, issuing a mournful shriek. The Divine Black Thunder Tribulation was extremely fearsome for a Spiritual Beast.

The tribulation could allow them to evolve after the long cultivation, but it also made them feel extreme fear...

Mu Chen stood on the mountain peak as his mountain stared gravely at the heavens. The black thunder clouds constantly gathered and took form with a black light flickering within them. The extremely violent lightning energy couldn't be properly described. Even the Eighth Level of the Lightning Territory wasn't as frightening as it.

This was the genuine annihilation energy that originated from the heavens and earth.

Under the terrifying thunder clouds, the Nine Netherbird flapped it's wings as it's enormous body was ablaze with black flames. Under the heat of the black flames, even the temperature in the nearby surroundings had risen.

Every time the Nine Netherbird flapped it's wings, it swept out a blazing gale that engulfed the heavens and earth.

"Li!!"

The Nine Netherbird issued a clear and bright cry. It's pupils

were blazing with black flames as it looked at the constantly forming black thunder clouds with an unyielding intent. It had already been defeated twice. If it didn't possess the bloodline of the undying bird, it would have been reduced to ashes by the tribulation.

However, even if it had failed twice, it still refused to admit defeat. It was the prideful Nine Netherbird, possessing the bloodline of the Undying Bird. The Nine Netherbird wanted to become the most powerful Divine Beast between these heavens and earth!

Therefore, it had to succeed in its evolution at all costs!

The Nine Netherbird issued a clear cry, and flapped its huge wings as it issued a challenge to the tribulation, once again, and, this time, it will not be defeated!

Rumble!

The constantly forming tribulation seemed to have sensed the challenge from the Nine Netherbird and, in an instant, the black thunder clouds wiggled along with a formidable might that swept out.

More and more frightening lightning energies were being gathered in the thundercloud.

Rumble!

The thundercloud was abruptly torn apart and the world had gone silent. A huge black lightning bolt struck down with its annihilating power as it aimed at the Nine Netherbird.

Liiii!

The Nine Netherbird issued a cry, flapped its huge wings as the black flames that filled the skies surged out, and turned into a black flaming tornado that clashed with the black thunder.

Liiiiiiii!

A huge cry resounded as the lightning and black flames clashed together and abruptly swept out. The surrounding mountain peaks seemed to have been instantly leveled.

Mu Chen landed on the ground as he watched the clash with worry filling his eyes. Back in the Northern Spiritual Realm, he had already witnessed the clash between the Nine Netherbird and the black lightning once before. And now, whether if it's the Nine Netherbird or the tribulation, both were clearly more powerful compared to back then.

“This Divine Black Thunder Tribulation seems to get stronger along with the strength of the life form that’s undergoing the tribulation.” Mu Chen fell into his thoughts. No wonder it was the necessary step that a Spiritual Beast had to go through in its path of cultivation. Under the Divine Black Thunder Tribulation, who knows how many powerful Spiritual Beasts had been annihilated?

In the first confront, the Nine Netherbird did not fall into a disadvantage. However, Mu Chen was clear that this was just the beginning...

Just when this thought flashed through Mu Chen’s heart, the Divine Black Thunder Tribulation was completely formed up on the horizon. Frightful heavenly might was spreading as it started to show its ferocity.

Boom! Booom!

When the heavens and earth had darkened down, the tribulation wiggled as a huge black lightning bolt shot down. All of the lightning was aiming at the Nine Netherbird with extreme accuracy.

The Nine Netherbird’s eyes flashed with unyielding flames as it watched the endlessly falling lightning. It flapped its wings as the energy within its body was being completely mobilised.

Huuuuuuu! Huuuu!

The black flames that looked like a flaming sea swept out, turning into a tornado as it ripped the horizon apart and was aimed towards the lightning bolts, an in attempt to obstruct them.

Two frightening powers clashed in the horizon. Energy ripples that were roughly ten thousand feet in height fluctuated out that even the space was instantly twisted. Any leakage of that energy was sufficient to instantly level this mountain range.

Mu Chen stood on the ground as he stared at the mad confrontation up in the sky. Both of his fists were tightly clenched and his body was tensed up. He could sense the defense of the Nine Netherbird was starting to weaken as the black lightning shot down even faster.

Mu Chen's pupils suddenly shrank and saw a huge lightning bolt shoot down from the horizon. It managed to pierce through the black flaming tornado and struck the Nine Netherbird.

Liiiii!

A deep groan sounded out. The body of the huge Nine Netherbird was pulled down by a thousand feet with black smoke fuming from the spot that the lightning bolt had struck. Even with the black flames, it was still insufficient to recover the wound at a fast speed.

The Nine Netherbird issued out a painful cry as its eyes looked as though they had turned scarlet red.

Boom! Boooom!

And before the Nine Netherbird was enraged, the Divine Black Thunder Tribulation had entered into a frenzied state. The thunder clouds shrank and a black lightning bolt struck down. In that instant, even the heavens and earth were trembling at the frenzied tribulation.

The Nine Netherbird's wings retracted together as it guarded its body. Black flames surged and it had actually formed layers of black crystals. On the crystal layers, there were black flames

surging, looking extremely solid.

Bang! Baaang!

The lightning pierced through the heavens and earth and struck the black crystal that surrounded the Nine Netherbird. As every lightning bolt fell, it would shatter layers of crystal. The body of the Nine Netherbird trembled, as though it had suffered a huge pain.

The lightning wreaked havoc for a few minutes. When the crystal layers that surrounded the Nine Netherbird had been shattered, its slender and huge body was in a bad state to the point that there was fresh blood dripping from the Nine Netherbird's wings.

Mu Chen saw the sorry state of the Nine Netherbird and both of his fists were clenched even tighter. The Divine Black Thunder Tribulation was strong to the extend that every single lightning bolt was capable of reducing Heavenly Fusion Stage experts into ashes.

But looking at the current situation, if this continued, it was definitely impossible for the Nine Netherbird to endure it.

Under Mu Chen's nervous gaze, up in the sky, the Nine Netherbird paid no attention to its gravely injured body. It raised it's head, issuing a prideful cry. Even if it was fated to die today, it won't yield to the Divine Black Thunder Tribulation.

"Boom!"

The lightning was simply merciless as the annihilating lightning bolts continued to strike down without any mercy.

Xiiiiuuuuu!

However, just when the lightning was about to land onto the body of the Nine Netherbird, something suddenly shot out, leaving a fine streak of light. The streak of light hovered above the Nine Netherbird, and formed a huge pair of wings that were spread out.

The feather had a dark azure colour with an endless light flowing from it. It stretched its wings that seemed to have covered the heavens and earth.

The lightning mercilessly struck the feather, causing the light that flowed in it to dissipate by a lot. However, it still managed to endure and wasn’t destroyed.

“What is that?” Mu Chen was slightly startled. The feather wasn’t something that belonged to the Nine Netherbird. But it contained huge power that was capable of enduring several blows from the lightning bolts.

When the Nine Netherbird saw the situation, it was was shocked. However, it immediately started to recover from its wounds. It was well aware that although the feather was formidable, it could only withstand the lightning bolts for a small while. In the end, the Nine Netherbird still had to rely on itself to pass through this tribulation.

The Divine Black Thunder Tribulation suddenly became furious as it sensed that this item wasn’t something that belonged to the Nine Netherbird. And it was extremely hateful towards external interference.

Boom! Booom!

Because of that, the Divine Black Thunder Tribulation started to wiggle and huge lightning bolts constantly hacked down. Faced with the enraged hacking of the Divine Black Thunder Tribulation, the feather started to dulled down and, in the end, it was reduced to dust by the divine lightning.

“Liiii!”

When the feather was reduced to dust, the Nine Netherbird issued a cry towards the sky. Its boiling blood was dripping from its body, but it's eyes still remained clear.

When it issued its cry, Mu Chen could see the wound son the

Nine Netherbird's body flashed across with a faint purple luster. It seemed to be a strand of weak purple flames.

Those purple flames were hidden within the black flames and were naturally hard to be detected. However, Mu Chen still saw that as the purple flames appeared, the wounds on the body of the Nine Netherbird were rapidly being healed to the point that even the remnant lightning energy that was on its wounds could not obstruct it.

"Those are the... Undying Flames?!" Mu Chen stared at the fine purple flames as his pupils shrank. With his current understanding towards the Nine Netherbird, it natural that he knew that only the Undying Flames that were born within the body of the Primordial Undying Bird could disregard the injury of the Thunder Tribulation and recover its body. However, the Undying Flames were the speciality of the Undying Bird. Although the Nine Netherbird possessed a little of the Undying Bird's bloodline, it was, after all, too thin to be sufficient to awaken the Undying Flames...

But, right now, the Undying Flames had actually appeared from the body of the Nine Netherbird. This meant that the Undying Bird's blood that was contained within its body far surpassed an ordinary Nine Netherbird!

Mu Chen's gaze flickered. It seemed like the Nine Netherbird wasn't an ordinary kind in its clan.

Having its wounds being rapidly healed, the Nine Netherbird's unyielding flames that were blazing within its eyes became even richer. It raised it's head, looked at the thundercloud that were shrinking and the destructive energy that was in the Divine Black Thunder Tribulation becoming even more fearsome.

The Nine Netherbird knew that the Divine Black Thunder Tribulation was gathering its strongest energy, preparing to wipe it out from the face of this world!

Even when it faced the power that could destroy itself, the Nine Netherbird still raised it's prideful head. It's huge pair of wings lightly flapped and, among the black flames, faint traces of purple flames appeared.

“Liiiiii!”

The cry was directed towards the Divine Black Thunder Tribulation, issuing its final challenge!

Chapter 286 – Tribulation Succeeded

Up in the heavens, the black thunder clouds were rapidly gathering. The thunder clouds did not issue any thunderous sounds, but the pressure that it issued had caused the heavens and earth to freeze.

Anyone could sense how terrifying the perishing storm would be after the silence.

The Nine Netherbird flapped its wings as its black flames surged. In the depths of the black flames, fine purple flames fluctuated. Although they were small and hard to detect, they emitted a surge of mysterious power.

On the grounds below, Mu Chen's gaze turned extremely grave. Under that pressure, he could sense the Spiritual Energy within his body had stopped circulating. He was well aware that the next attack from the Divine Black Thunder Tribulation would be the last and if the Nine Netherbird could withstand it, then it would succeed its tribulation and shred its spiritual body, and evolve into a Divine Beast. By truly shredding itself from the category of a Spiritual Beast, and becoming the powerful Divine Beast that was comparable to Sovereigns, it would possess endless prospects as well.

However, if it couldn't withstand it, it would have failed. Although the Nine Netherbird possessed the bloodline of the Undying Bird, it couldn't escape death every single time. The slightest mistake would cause it to be destroyed.

Once the Nine Netherbird was destroyed, Mu Chen, who had a Bloodline bond with it would also suffer terrifying injuries, or even death.

In this outcome, it would be extremely tragic for both Mu Chen and the Nine Netherbird.

But at this timing, Mu Chen was also helpless. The Thunder Tribulation was too terrifying to the point that even a Sovereign wouldn't dare to challenge it. Not to mention that he was just a puny Quasi-Heavenly Transformation Stage. Probably even if he had exerted all his means, it wouldn't be able to shake it.

"Nine Netherbird, go for it." Mu Chen's fists were clenched as he muttered.

The suppressed atmosphere engulfed the heavens and earth. The black thunder clouds that had originally shrouded the heavens and earth of ten thousand feet had shrunk down to a hundred feet. But the colour was even more dense and, looking from afar, it was like a black hole that was slowly revolving.

Onom.

The black thunder clouds that were roughly a hundred feet in size suddenly wiggled. At the center, the thunder clouds were revolving and were caving in, bit by bit. At the center of the dent, the black-coloured lightning bolts were gathering together. The black-coloured lightning bolts seemed to be like sinister black dragons that were slowly wiggling about.

"Boom!"

At the center of the dent, a black-coloured lightning bolt abruptly shot out. It was like a black-coloured divine light that had pierced through the horizon. The destructive power spread and the area that was swept by the black-coloured light seemed to decompose Spiritual Energy...

The entire heavens and earth were in silence as the black divine light roared as it shot down, like a deity that had been enraged.

Liiii!

The black flames were blazing within the eyes of the Nine Netherbird. It suddenly issued a cry and the flames that were compressed together shot up into the sky, and turned into a black-

coloured feather that was roughly a thousand feet in size.

On the feather, it looked as though profound runes were being carved on it. The black flames had ascended and were extremely abnormal.

Facing that terrifying attack of the Divine Black Thunder Tribulation, the Nine Netherbird also exerted all of its power and lashed out with the most frightening move it had.

Shhhhhhuu!

As the black feather shot out, it pierced through the space and heavily clashed with the black-coloured divine light that had shot down from the heavens.

At that instant, the two force clashed, even the light between the heavens and earth seemed to have been sucked in. Only a black-coloured light was spreading out in the sky and shrouded the area in a hundred mile radius.

Bang! Bang!

The mountains were being swept through and instantly turned into ashes, one after another. Looking from above, everything within a hundred miles was leveled to ground as each mountain range was being wiped out.

Such destructive power had made those that were watching it feel a chill in their hearts.

Mu Chen did not have any startling thoughts as he fixed his eyes on the far horizon. A black light had gathered and was slowly pressing down. As it's pressure pressed down, fine cracks started to appear.

The power of the Divine Black Thunder Tribulation was too powerful!

Mu Chen’s heart jumped as his eyes shrank. As more and more cracks appeared on the black feather, it finally could not endure

anymore and under the black-coloured divine light and a sharp sound, it shattered.

As the black feather crumbled, the black light was unblockable and was whistling down under Mu Chen’s gaze. It attacked the enormous body of the Nine Netherbird.

Liiiii!

The cry that suddenly resounded was extremely sharp. The huge body of the Nine Netherbird rapidly fell and heavily landed on a mountain range far away.

Bang!

It felt like an earthquake had happened as a surging wave swept out. At the location that the Nine Netherbird had fallen, the surrounding range of ten thousand feet had instantly crumbled. Deep cracks were frantically spreading on the ground.

The vast mountain range was also instantly destroyed!

Mu Chen flew into the sky, and escaped that terrifying impact. He quickly rushed over and, at the center of the crater, the smoke was spreading and started to dissipate, bit by bit. The scene within was shown to Mu Chen.

In the huge crater, the Nine Netherbird was lying down in a terrible state. The black-coloured feathers on it's body were destroyed and no longer had the gracefulness that it once had. Countless savage wounds were revealed on it's body as fresh blood flowed out, instantly dying the ground in red.

Mu Chen’s gaze was fixed on the Nine Netherbird that was not moving in the blood pool. The Nine Netherbird’s face was pale and Mu Chen immediately landed at the location of the Nine Netherbird. He stuck his palm out, injecting his Spiritual Energy into the body of the Nine Netherbird.

Under the injection of Spiritual Energy, the Nine Netherbird that was lying in the blood pool finally trembled. It managed to open

it's eyes a little as a weak intent spread out, “I’ve managed to succeed?”

When Mu Chen saw that the Nine Netherbird was still alive, only then did he feel relieved. He raised his head and his face abruptly changed. Up in the sky, the dissipating black thunder clouds were still flickering with a black light.

There was still some remnant destructive ripples in it.

Boom!

The black thunder clouds rumbled and a black lightning bolt shot down. However, that divine lightning bolt was clearly just a remnant energy and, compared to before, it was much weaker.

At this point of time, the Nine Netherbird was already at the edge and could die at anytime. If that lightning bolt struck it right now, it would probably be dead!

The Nine Netherbird seemed to have sensed this situation and immediately struggled up. However, it didn’t have any energy left nor blood to fill its body, and started to emit despair in its eyes.

After working hard for so many years, was it all still in vain?

Repeatedly fighting and, in the end, still failed?

Mu Chen looked at the despair in the Nine Netherbird’s eyes. He couldn’t help clenching his fist and, shortly after, with his teeth clenched, his figure moved. He appeared above the Nine Netherbird and with a bark, his handsigns changed. A Majestic Spiritual Energy gathered behind him and turned into a huge White Tiger. The White Tiger stood on the starry sky and ran, along with inexhaustible killing intent as it charged towards the last black lightning bolt.

Bang!

Even with such a powerful attack, the instant it came in contact with the black lightning, it was only an instant before the black

lightning tore the White Tiger apart.

Boom!

The speed of the black lightning was fast as it had destroyed the White Tiger in just an instant and appeared above Mu Chen. Without the slightest leniency, it had struck Mu Chen's body.

The black lightning had sensed the similar ripples from the Nine Netherbird and, naturally, it wouldn't let Mu Chen off.

Bang!

Mu Chen had been struck by the lightning bolt and a mouthful of blood spurted out. His body was covered by the violent lightning. Thereafter, he fell, landing not too far away from the Nine Netherbird and the ground beneath it had directly crumbled.

Liii!

When the Nine Netherbird saw the situation, it instantly issued a painful and low cry. Trembling as it stretched both of its wings that was filled with wounds, it tried to save Mu Chen, who was covered in black lightning.

However, the Nine Netherbird's wounds were too heavy. The instant it moved, intense pain spread out and had nearly submerged its last bit of consciousness.

As the last lightning bolt landed, the black thunder clouds up in the sky had thoroughly dissipated. The instant the thunder clouds dissipated, the Nine Netherbird's body instantly burst forth with dazzling light.

That light was extremely bizarre as it shrouded the Nine Netherbird. Under the shining light, the terrible wounds on the Nine Netherbird were healed, little by little.

"Has the tribulation finally succeeded?"

The Nine Netherbird muttered to itself as its eyes were filled with emotions. It could sense that a huge change started to occur within

its body.

This was a genuine evolution.

From body to bloodline!

The evolution caused it to be extremely happy. However, it could see the figure that was shrouded with lightning not far away. Mu Chen's strength was too weak and was impossible for him to bear the black lightning, even if it was just a remnant energy from the Divine Black Thunder Tribulation!

However, when it was anxious, it saw that the figure that wasn't far away had trembled. The black lightning on his body started to dissipate. He crawled up with great difficulty and with a bend, fresh blood uncontrollably spurt out from his mouth. He was on the verge of collapsing and clearly, he had suffered great injuries.

"Damn it, I nearly died!"

Mu Chen's face was as pale as paper as he kneeled on the ground. He wiped the trace of blood at the corner of his mouth. Lowering his head, he looked at his palm as a smear of light flashed though his eyes and muttered, "It's all thanks to this Thunder God Physique; otherwise, I would've died."

"Nine Netherbird!"

As he muttered. He also sensed the dazzling light before him. He immediately raised his head and saw the huge body of the Nine Netherbird being covered by the divine light and started to shrink.

The body turned smaller and smaller. In the end, it shrink into the light. Mu Chen narrowed his eyes from the brightness and he could not see the scene clearly.

The light lasted for a long time, before it weakened down. As the light weakened, Mu Chen's eyes also widened.

Within the light, there was a jade-like naked body. Her figure was graceful and her pair of jade legs were slender and slim. Smooth

and stretched taut, she was extremely sexy. On top of her jade legs, she was supporting a waist and on top of that, there was a snow-white neck that was similar to a swan's.

Her rosy lips lightly lifted, showing her charming faint purple eyes. With wildness that could make a man's heart aroused.

Mu Chen was dumbfounded as he muttered, "...Sure enough it was a female."

Chapter 287 – Slumber

On the messy ground, the beautiful lady's nude body flickered with a jade-like luster. The temptation from her could make any man unable to shift their gaze from her.

However, the beautiful lady that was before him wasn't sweet tempered. When she heard Mu Chen's muttering, her brows knitted together. Her figure moved, a fragrance swept over and Mu Chen's body was knocked into the rock behind him. Thereafter, a fragile yet tight body stuck to him. At the same time, her slender jade-like hands grabbed Mu Chen's throat.

"Do you believe that I won't kill you?" Her voice was clear, like a spring stream streaking down the mountain, mixed with a cold temperature, causing the spring to be a little cold as well.

Mu Chen leaned against the rock, facing her threats. He couldn't help flinging his mouth as he said in helplessness, "Kill me, then."

It seemed like even though she had taken a human form, the Nine Netherbird's character still didn't know any tenderness.

Pffffft.

The beautiful lady before him smiled. Her jade-like hands gently touched Mu Chen's face as she smiled tenderly, "Considering your previous action by withstanding that last lightning strike, I'll not bother about you taking advantage of me."

Mu Chen felt funny and extremely embarrassed. He couldn't help shrinking his body to prevent himself from coming into contact with that body. Her body was certainly sexy and filled with wildness. She was like a female leopard that could easily evoke the temptation of men.

"Can you wear some clothes? Although you're a Nine Netherbird, you're in human form right now. So it's still best if you take note of it." said Mu Chen. This advantage wasn't something that he

wanted to take.

“Human forms are so troublesome.” the Nine Netherbird shook her head. Lustrous light surged over her body and some green-black clothing formed, covering all the spots that were revealed. Even with those clothes, her graceful physique looked extremely tempting, with her slender, yet fine waist and ample chest.

Only then, did Mu Chen feel relieved. That nearly wanted his life.

“Your Tribulation should have succeeded, right?” Mu Chen looked towards the Nine Netherbird and hesitated a little before adding on, “I still don’t know your name. Am I supposed to keep calling you Nine Netherbird?”

“Call me Nine Nether, then.” As she had successfully passed through the Divine Black Thunder Tribulation, she was extremely happy. She smiled as she patted Mu Chen’s shoulders, “in the future, let this older sister take care of you.”

“However, it was still impossible right now…” Nine Nether suddenly frowned her brows and added, “I still have not completed the last step.”

“What?” Mu Chen asked in doubt.

“Although I have successfully gone through the tribulation, my physical body still has yet to evolve into the physique of a Divine Beast. Therefore, for a period of time, I’ll be in a slumber to evolve my physical body. Wait till I appear again, then I would have successfully evolved into a Nine Netherworld Bird!” Nine Nether’s eyes, filled with ambition, surged forth with anticipation.

“Nine Netherworld Bird…” Mu Chen nodded. That should be the evolved state of the Nine Netherbird. Although there was a word difference, Spiritual Beasts and Divine Beasts were extreme opposites.

“In the period of time that I’m asleep, don’t lose that life of

yours. We are contracted through the Bloodline Bond, so I don't want to suffer a backlash from the Bloodline Bond unknowingly, after I'd just succeeded the Tribulation." Nine Nether's eyes glanced at Mu Chen as she said.

Mu Chen felt a little regretful. He thought that he could have a powerful bodyguard, who could have thought that she would need to be in a deep slumber. If that's the case, didn't he lose a trump card instead?

"In this period of time, if you can't afford to offend, then hide. Wait until I wake up, I'll kill everyone that's bullied you. Understood?" Nine Nether smiled tenderly.

"I'm not that weak." Mu Chen said helplessly.

"Okay then, I'll start. You should leave after waiting awhile. The commotion caused by my tribulation was too huge. I'm afraid that it'd be noticed by those old fellas of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy and they might come over to take a look."

Nine Nether reminded him before the black flames surged over her body, while her long and narrow eyes streaked with traces of the mysterious purple flames.

The raging black flames rose, turning into a light screen as it shrouded Nine Nether. The black flames started to solidify, bit by bit, before turning into a huge black egg that was roughly the size of a human's height.

Feathery winged runes appeared on the huge black egg, they were ancient and cryptic as the flickering purple light could be vaguely seen.

When Mu Chen saw that Nine Nether had turned into a huge egg, having falling into a deep slumber to start her last evolution, he made a waving action and stored the egg in his Mustard Seed Bracelet. It seemed like, for a period of time in the near future, he could only depend on himself.

However, he was filled with anticipation. When Nine Nether wakes up, with her strength, she should be able to contend against Sovereigns, right? At that time, this bodyguard of his would be very powerful.

“Time to leave.”

Mu Chen took another glance at the chaotic land, before making a move, soaring up into the sky and made several flickering moves before disappearing into the horizon.

Roughly half an hour later after Mu Chen had left, a breeze brushed against a destroyed mountain peak. A bald old man that was holding some crutches appeared. His muddy gaze looked at the direction that Mu Chen left in as a trace of astonishment flashed across his old face.

“That small Nine Netherbird actually had such a dense bloodline of the Undying Bird…”

“Seems like a genius has appeared in the Nine Netherbird’s clan. Who knows, that small Nine Netherbird might be able to evolve into the Primordial Undying Bird…”

“But she actually made a Bloodline Bond contract with a small human, which could be her fatality… If those old monsters of the Nine Netherbird clan were to know of this matter, they’d probably be enraged.”

“Haha…”

The bald old man softly laughed. As his laughter resounded, his body started to turn illusionary before he completely disappeared.

The land was restored to its silence. However, this silence was only maintained for half an hour before the space lightly rippled again. Shortly after. Several figures appeared out of thin air.

These few figure’s hairs were white and they had solemn expressions. Although there weren’t any powerful ripple fluctuations around them, a frightening amount of pressure was

emitting from them.

Among them, Elder Zhu Tian was also present. At this moment, his face was grave as he looked at the heavy destruction on the land with fearsome black lightning energy still lingering around.

“It’s the Divine Black Lightning…” an Elder of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy said with a solemn look in his eyes as he continued, “There was actually a Spiritual Beast that underwent the Divine Black Thunder Tribulation here.”

Hearing the four words ‘Divine Black Thunder Tribulation’, Elder Zhu Tian’s face, as well as everyone else’s, could not help changing expressions. They naturally understood the might of that Lightning Tribulation. The moment they succeeded the tribulation, the Spiritual Beast would be able to evolve into a genuine Divine Beast that was comparable to a Sovereign.

Even in the Northern Heavens Continent, this kind of existence was considered the apex. But they never thought that it would appear within the surroundings of their Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Furthermore, they had not sensed any powerful Spiritual Beasts hidden in the surrounding mountain ranges of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy after all these years.

“However, looking at the traces of blood scattered on the ground, that Spiritual Beast might have failed its tribulation and was reduced to nothing under the Divine Black Thunder Tribulation.” Elder Zhu Tian looked at the destroyed ground. Although he did not witness the scene with his own eyes, he could sense the fearsome confrontation that happened here.

“What a pity.”

The other elders also felt pity as they sighed. The cultivation of the Spiritual Beasts took much longer compared to the human’s. Who knew how many months and years were needed for a Spiritual Beast to cultivate till the Divine Black Thunder

Tribulation. But now, under the ruthlessness of the Divine Black Thunder Tribulation, it had turned into ashes and no longer existed.

"However, even if that unknown Spiritual Beast might have been killed by the Lightning Tribulation, we still have to report this to the Dean."

Elder Zhu Tian's brows knitted, "Recently, the movements of the Demonic Dragon Palace in the Northern Heavens Continent has increased. Those fellows have already viewed our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy as their mortal enemies. The moment an opportunity arises, they will probably create a huge threat to our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Therefore, we have to be cautious."

The other Elders solemnly nodded in agreement. The name of the Demonic Dragon Palace had quite a bit of pressure to them. This force had nearly unified the entire Northern Heavens Continent to the point that even the surrounding continents was affected by their power.

Back then, if it wasn't for the sudden change in the Demonic Dragon Palace, in addition to their Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy having Lord Northern Sea, the outcome of the battle would have been hard to tell who'd have been victorious.

"Let's go."

Elder Zhu Tian no longer spoke and with a wave of his sleeve, several figures flashed out and in several breaths, they had disappeared.

The heavens and earth had its peace, once again, restored. Only the destroyed ground proved the terrifying clash.

...

Mu Chen returned to the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy without any obstructions, and returned to the Freshman's Area.

His face was still a little pale. Although the divine black lightning was not able to claim his life, due to the Thunder God Physique that he had cultivated, it still caused quite a big injury to him. Therefore, he had to quickly recover from his injury.

As there was only three days left before the Hunting War, he had to be in top form.

Mu Chen's body landed on the small building. Shortly after, his expression changed as he saw a black-dressed beauty that was smiling at him.

When Mu Chen saw her, a gentle smile appeared on his handsome face. He couldn't help going to her and embracing that girl into his bosom. Having that warmth and fragrance in his embrace, he couldn't help feeling at ease.

Luo Li also lightly smiled. She complied as she leaned her face into his chest. Her pointed nose lightly sniffed and shortly after, her gem-like eyes narrowed. Mu Chen seemed to have a faint fragrance on him and, based on her intuition, she knew that it was the scent of another woman.

Mu Chen, who was still enjoying the warmth and fragrance also sensed Luo Li's state. His heart jumped and felt panic.

"Who is she?"

Luo Li's exquisite and porcelain-like face had the look of a dangerous smile. Her voice was gentle, but it gave Mu Chen a headache. Her sensing of smell of a woman was, indeed, frightening.

Chapter 288 – Boiling

Mu Chen helplessly looked at the arc that Luo Li made with her mouth. It felt dangerous, but, at the same time, he couldn't help wanting to laugh as he could sense a rare jealousy from her tone.

"You're still not explaining!" Luo Li understood Mu Chen too well. The moment she saw the smile in Mu Chen's eyes, her face immediately turned red as she pretended to the angry and stared at him.

Mu Chen held onto the beauty's slender waist and tightly embraced it. After some silence, he did not intent on hiding the existence of the Nine Netherbird from Luo Li. Hence, he simply briefed on the matters regarding the Nine Netherbird.

"Nine Netherbird?" when Luo Li heard his explanation, she was faintly startled. Especially when he heard that earlier on, the Nine Netherbird managed to succeed in the Divine Black Thunder Tribulation, the astonishment on her face grew even richer.

She was, after all, from the Luo God Clan. Henceforth, she had some knowledge towards powerful Spiritual Beast Clans. Among the Spiritual Beast Clans, the Nine Netherbird was rather powerful. However, she never expected one to be hidden in Mu Chen's body.

"You actually dared to take the Divine Black Lightning?!" However, her eyes widened shortly with palpitation filling her eyes.

Not even Sovereign experts would dare to come in contact with the Divine Black Lightning Tribulation and with Mu Chen's strength, if there was any mistake, it would mean turning into ashes.

"I have contracted the Bloodline Bond with the Nine Netherbird. If she dies, I will also suffer the backlash." Mu Chen helplessly

smiled and added, “But looking from any direction, it was impossible for me to watch her get destroyed by the Lightning Tribulation.”

“A Bloodline Bond!?”

Luo Li couldn’t help opening her small mouth and take a ruthless bite at Mu Chen’s chest, “You’re killing me from the anger.”

She naturally had some understanding towards the Bloodline Bond. Thus, Mu Chen and the life of the Nine Netherbird was linked together and no matter which side suffered a threat to their life, the other party would suffer a backlash from the Bloodline Bond.

Mu Chen scratched his head and didn’t know how to explain it. Back then, there wasn’t any other choice but to establish the Bloodline Bond. However, the girl that was in his embrace was just jealous, so he didn’t make any explanations but embraced her tightly.

“But, it’s good. She had succeeded the Divine Black Thunder Tribulation and when she awakens, she will be an existence comparable to Sovereigns. And, in the future, you will be safer and I’ll be more at ease.” Luo Li wasn’t someone that would pester endlessly. After releasing some of her jealousy, she recovered.

Mu Chen looked at the young girl, remembering that she will leave him to return to the Luo God Clan to bear a huge responsibility and was trying her best to endure everything, becoming the new Empress of the Luo God Clan. Mu Chen felt a faint heartache as he lowered his head to the young girl’s forehead, “But, I’m not at ease about you.”

“Even you’ve lost to me in the past, what is there not be at ease about?” Luo Li faintly smiled.

Mu Chen didn’t have the heart to joke with her. His black pupils stared at her seriously. Luo Li’s pretty eyes slightly move away and

said in a soft voice, “What?”

“Luo Li.”

Mu Chen’s tone was grave and serious as he slowly spoke, “Remember, no matter what happens, you have to wait for me. Perhaps it will be hard for you in the Luo God Clan, but believe me, for you, I will become stronger, no matter how hard it will be, until the day I can fulfil my promise to you.”

Luo Li’s eyes turned red from looking at Mu Chen’s grave gaze. She knew how difficult Mu Chen had to work hard in order to fulfil his promise. The path of experts was enough to cover someone in wounds and lose their formal clean smile.

Perhaps all that hard work and tempering could refine this youth’s face to be more mature. But, at the same time, it made her feel some heartache.

“Okay, I promise you.” Luo Li’s voice was gentle, as though it was about to melt. Her clear eyes flickered with affection.

Mu Chen’s eyes turned slightly heated from looking at the touching appearance of the girl that was in his embrace. The arm that he used to embrace the girl became even more forceful, as though he wanted to merge her into his body.

He lowered his head.

“Don’t.” The girl emitted a sound that was as faint as a fly as she seemed to have sensed something. However, it was disregarded by the youth and with a tyrannical method, he planted a kiss on those rosy red lips.

The girl slightly struggled, but quickly relaxed her body. She was like a puddle of water as she melted in Mu Chen’s embrace.

In the next three days, the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy turned more and more heated with an astonishing speed. The entire atmosphere in the academy felt as though it had been ignited.

The origin of that fire was, naturally, the Hunting War.

This was the biggest annual event in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Every single year, there would be countless black horses that would soar into the heavens and expose their achievements in that year.

Every time the Hunting War ended, there would be a huge change in the rankings of the Heavenly Ranking.

Therefore, the Hunting War would certainly be an intense battle. It was the battle between the black horses and the current outstanding students. It would have to depend on each other's trump cards, if they're able to replace their opponent.

Henceforth, the atmosphere in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy was extremely heated. Especially the Convergence Spiritual Array, as well as the Lightning Territory. From time to time, a figure with soaring fighting intent could be seen walking out of it.

Without any exceptions, all those people had powerful Spiritual Energy ripples fluctuating from them. They had ended their long training and returned back to the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. They wanted to display their explosive strengths in the Hunting War and seize their once lost or their coming glory.

The entire Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy was also especially heated up and countless people were inquiring all around, attempting to probe the trump cards, as well as the concealed strength of those black horses.

Under this heat, countless students had anticipation in their heart as they awaited the soon-to-start Hunting War.

When the third day arrived, the entire Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy was shrouded in passion. Up in the sky, wind breaking sounds were constantly resounding as the countless figures became exceptionally spectacular.

In the Freshman's Area, Mu Chen and Luo Li were already at the field next to the lake, where Ye Qingling, Zhou Ling and many other members of the Goddess Luo Association surrounded them in excitement. Among the current freshmen, probably only Mu Chen, Luo Li, as well as a other few people, were qualified to partake in the Hunting War.

"Brother Mu, good luck! As long as your performance in the Hunting War is outstanding, you could become an influential person in the entire Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy!" these were the excited voices of the Goddess Luo Association's members.

Although Mu Chen did possess some fame in the academy, he still wasn't qualified to be considered an influential person. Only people like Shen Cangsheng, Li Xuantong, Su Xuan, He Yao and the other people that were in the top 10 ranking of the Heavenly Ranking could have such a title.

Mu Chen smiled, he didn't have much interest in the title of an influential figure. However, he was rather interested in the Spiritual Empowerment.

"Come, we should get going." Luo Li smiled.

"Okay."

Mu Chen smiled as his figure flashed out, with Luo Li closely following him from behind. After them, Ye Qingling, Zhou Ling and the rest quickly followed after. Although they're not participating in the Hunting War, it was inevitable for them to attend such a lively annual event in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.

When Mu Chen and the rest moved, He Yao, along with a huge number of the Demon's Gate's members, walked out of their newly constructed Headquarters. His gaze was cold as he directed them towards the Freshman Area.

Mu Chen, I hope that you're not that unlucky to encounter me in

the Hunting War. Otherwise, I will let you understand that, compared to a genuine influential figure of the academy, you, as a freshman, are still too far away.

On an island that was at the center of the lake, Su Xuan and Su Ling'er also came out. They could not help smiling as they looked at the wind breaking sound that constantly resounded in the sky. It was, once again, the most lively moment of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.

"Let's go."

Su Xuan gently smiled as she walked forth. When she walked out, the Spiritual Energy around her rippled out like water. However, after taking a few steps, the Spiritual Energy ripples were restrained by her.

"Elder Sister, you have to go for it and see if you can defeat Li Xuantong to seize his Rank 2 in the Heavenly Ranking!" Su Ling'er chuckled.

"How would that be easy? It would be great if I could preserve my ranking as third." Su Xuan helplessly shook her head as she held onto Su Ling'er. The sister duo flew up into the sky and rushed towards the central area of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.

On a mountain peak, a slender figure slowly walked out. The mountain peak had quite a number of people quietly waiting and when they saw that slender figure come out, their eyes instantly blazed.

"Boss!"

Li Xuantong lightly smiled at them as he waved his hand, "It's almost time."

"Yes!" all of them instantly replied as they closely followed him.

When Li Xuantong reached the edge of the mountain peak, he looked at the direction that was outside of the Northern Heavens

Spiritual Academy. His calm eyes flashed across with traces of expectation and fighting intent.

Shen Cangsheng, you will probably return for the Hunting War. This year, I will surpass you, so don't make me disappointed.

"Let's go!"

Li Xuantong lightly barked as his figure turned into a streak of light, shooting out. Behind him, there were many people that closely followed him.

The entire Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy exploded as countless figures streaked across the horizon, gathering towards the central area of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. After cultivating and endured for so long, they could finally burst out on this day.

Those students with powerful strengths had their eyes filled with fighting intent.

Hunting War, begin!

Chapter 289 – Dean Tai Cang

The central area of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy had a majestic and vast field. This was the extremely famed Northern Sea Field of the academy. It was said that, long ago, this was the cultivating ground of the Northern Sea Dragon. Until later, when the academy was established, a huge field was opened here. But, generally speaking, only huge events would be held here.

And the gathering location of the Hunting War was here.

This field was sufficient to hold tens of thousands of people. Today, this place was filled with an endless sea of people and that astonishing boiling noise soared into the horizons. It could be clearly heard from anywhere in the range of a hundred miles.

When Mu Chen and the rest arrived here, they couldn't help smacking their lips upon seeing such a huge amount of people. It was, indeed, worthy of being the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.

Mu Chen and his group stopped at the sky, their gaze looked at the Northern Sea Field. The front of the field was empty, which was different from the rear of the field. But, no matter how empty it was, no students dared to set foot here.

At the empty region, there was a copper sculpture. It was a huge creature with a fish-like scaled body, along with a dragon's claws and tail. The image of it was sinister and powerful. Even if it was just a sculpture, it still possessed a fearsome might as it spread out. It was precisely this might that made the other students not daring enough to approach it.

"That's the guardian beast of our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, the Northern Sea Dragon?" Mu Chen looked at that sculpture as he sensed that might. Immediately, he couldn't help smacking his lips inwardly. This Northern Sea Dragon was, indeed, a fearsome existence.

“This Northern Sea Dragon possesses sky high status in our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Even Elder Tian Xi would have to be polite and respectful to him, when seeing that almighty existence.” Luo Li said softly.

Mu Chen nodded. Even among the Divine Beasts, the Northern Sea Dragon should be ranked at the top and, adding on to the fact that it had cultivated for so long, it's strength was definitely dreadful. Within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, there weren’t that many people that could be stronger than it.

Mu Chen’s line-of-sight shifted from the Northern Sea Dragon’s sculpture and directed it towards the sky. From that direction, there was a cold gaze staring at him, it was He Yao.

Towards He Yao’s cold gaze, Mu Chen lightly smiled in reply. If a month ago, he had some fear towards He Yao, then all the fear had been suppressed right now.

If they were to confront, the victory wouldn’t be controlled by He Yao.

When He Yao saw Mu Chen’s fearless expression, his gaze turned even colder. Shortly after, he coldly retracted his gaze. However, Mu Chen knew that with that fella’s breadth of mind, he would definitely not let it go so easily in this Hunting War.

When Mu Chen retracted his gaze from He Yao, a series of wind breaking noises resounded from the back with a familiar Spiritual Energy fluctuation being emitted.

“It’s Li Xuantong.”

Mu Chen was extremely familiar with this Spiritual Energy fluctuation. He didn’t need to turn his head to know who it was. He slightly turned his head and, indeed, he could see Li Xuantong coming with a group of people.

Li Xuantong’s figure stopped beside Mu Chen and Luo Li. His gaze was a little complicated as he glanced at Luo Li. Thereafter, he

turned towards Mu Chen with a trace of astonishment flashing across his eyes, “You’re a little stronger now.”

“If there isn’t any improvement, how would I dare to come?” Mu Chen smiled. He wasn’t being arrogant, but he wasn’t humble either. He knew that if he were to be humble with Li Xuantong, he would be looked down upon instead.

“It seems like you’re here to participate in the Hunting War…” Li Xuantong lightly smiled as he added, “If we were to meet in the Hunting War, I will no longer let you have anymore Pact of Three Moves.”

“That was my intention, as well.” Mu Chen stared at Li Xuantong as he nodded.

When the students behind Li Xuantong saw Mu Chen confronting Li Xuantong, they felt unhappy. In their view, although Mu Chen was able to take the Pact of Three Moves from Li Xuantong, it didn’t make them feel that Mu Chen could stand on the same level as Li Xuantong.

But it was just unhappiness and they still did not say anything in the end. Their eyes were staring at Mu Chen with ill intent, as though they’re issuing their warning.

“I’ll also participate the Hunting War with him. If we meet, then, when it happens, I can ask for some advice.” Luo Li’s voice was gentle as she said from the side.

Li Xuantong’s face slightly turned stiff and, shortly after, he helplessly shook his head. He looked at Mu Chen and spoke, “I heard that you tore apart the Headquarters of the Demon’s Gate?”

Mu Chen nodded. This matter was widely spread in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, so it wasn’t surprising that Li Xuantong knew about it.

“A little too rampant.” said Li Xuantong.

Mu Chen’s brows twitched. Just when he was about to speak, Li

Xuantong smiled and continued, “However, you’re still a man. If you did not do anything, I’d most probably look for your trouble as you’re not even able to protect her here, so, how are you going to protect her in the future?”

Mu Chen extended his hand out and lightly held onto the girl’s slender and tender hands as he smiled, “Senior Li Xuantong, although right now, I’m not powerful. But if anyone wants to lay a hand on her, it would have to be done by stepping over my corpse.”

Luo Li’s eyes were gentle as she looked at the side of the youth’s handsome face. The smile on that firm face could not be doubted.

Li Xuantong lightly nodded, “He Yao, that fellow, if I were to encounter him in the Hunting War, I will definitely get rid of him.”

Mu Chen smiled, “It’s not my business to comment on who you want to deal with. But if I were to encounter him, then perhaps you won’t have the chance to do so.”

“Your tone isn’t small.” Li Xuantong smiled as he added, “Then, it’d have to depend on your performance on the Hunting War. Don’t end up to the point that you’re not able to reach the ending point.”

Mu Chen smiled and no longer spoke as he held onto Luo Li’s hand, standing high up in the sky.

As more time passed, more and more students gathered here. Mu Chen also saw Su Xuan, Xu Huang and various other powerful figures that ranked at the top of the Heavenly Ranking.

Aside from those influential figures that originally existed in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, Mu Chen could vaguely sense that, among the sea of people, there were quite a few hidden and ambitious glittering gazes. When they looked at those influential figures up in the sky, their eyes were filled with

challenging intents.

All those gazes didn't have any fear in them, even when they're facing with the top 10 of the Heavenly Ranking.

Mu Chen vaguely sensed those gazes and, immediately, he smacked his lips. It was indeed, worthy of being the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Those people that were reflected on the Heavenly Ranking were, after all, few in numbers and many others had been hiding themselves. Waiting for their wings to be fully grown to soar into the horizon in one shot.

Clearly, this Hunting War was a good opportunity to do that.

Dong!

As more and more students gathered, a bell suddenly rang out between the heavens and earth. That long lasting bell's ring drowned all of the bustling noises as it resounded throughout the heavens and earth.

Everyone stopped talking as they looked towards the depth of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy with revere in their eyes. In that direction, there was a huge azure bird flying towards this location. The huge bird brought forth a hurricane and was suspended in the empty region of this field.

Mu Chen's gaze was also directed towards the huge bird. Speaking precisely, it was the back of the huge bird, as there were several old figures on it. Every single figure appeared to be an ordinary old man. However, not a single person dared to belittle those frail old men, because hidden within those bodies, there was tremendous annihilating power.

And, before all those old figures, there was a tall middle-aged man that wore an azure robe. His face was like a jade, with a pair of eyes that looked like boundless stars. Looking at them would make others feel like they were being absorbed by them and were unable to free themselves.

It was as though the heavens and earth were being reflected in their eyes.

He smiled as he looked at the youths below with respect on their faces. His eyes reflected his experience, like a wise man that had experienced countless years and months.

“He is…” Mu Chen’s eyes were grave as he looked at that middle-aged man in the azure robe.

“He’s the Dean of our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, Dean Tai Cang.” Li Xuantong said softly. Even someone as prideful as him had unconcealable respect in his tone.

Mu Chen lightly nodded. He never expected that even the Dean of the academy would appear. Such a huge figure wasn’t someone they could see during the usual days.

“Boys and girls, after a year, I’m glad to see that all of your strengths have grown.” On the azure bird, Dean Tai Cang lightly smiled as he looked at the countless youths. His clear and bright voice resounded within everyone’s ears. His voice also made the Spiritual Energy in every student’s bodies more docile, like the voice of a god that made them feel refreshed. So much so that even their spirit rose. The Spiritual Energy within their bodies became even more lively.

“What frightening power.” Mu Chen felt the changes in his body and was instantly startled. Just what kind of strength was that? Just a speech alone was already sufficient to raise their spirits.

That voice made it feel as though it had recuperated their bodies and made them feel indescribable power.

“That’s the Tai Cang Deity Note.” Luo Li’s face was also filled with a grave expression as she added, “Rumor has it that it was born from a part of the Deity Classics. Back then, just relying on this note, Dean Tai Cang managed to kill a Sovereign.”

“Killing a Sovereign through his voice?” Mu Chen felt his head

going numb. He also understood that this Dean Tai Cang had used his genuine strength, but wasn't this a little too frightening?

"For this Hunting War, I suppose that everyone here isn't a stranger to it. I will not waste any words on the rules. However, I have to make a reminder that this year's Hunting War would be the hardest, as there are three Guardians at the end..."

Dean Tai Cang lightly smiled. He waved his sleeve, causing the space before him to fluctuate. As though it was a huge mirror. Within the mirror, there was a mighty mountain. At the peak of that mountain, there were three leveled hills. Up on those hills, clouds and mist lingered around that seemed to be concealing some powerful existences.

Many students exchanged glances with each other. They naturally knew that only by defeating the Guardians, only then can they advance the last Spiritual Empowerment. Otherwise, the Spiritual Light that everyone had obtained would be invalid.

In the past, there was only one Guardian. No one had imagined that it would be so hard this time round. From one to three Guardians. They wondered, which three of the Punishment Hall would it be?

Countless gazes gathered onto the light mirror. The mist over there dissipated little by little and, in the end, vaguely revealed three people that were quietly seated. However, their demeanor was like ferocious dragons that would shake the heavens and earth.

Looking at their demeanors, even Li Xuantong's face changed. The other students with sharp perception had their facial expressions changed.

"Those three are the Three Great Generals of the Punishment Hall. They're the top 3 of the Heavenly Ranking from the previous batch."

Dean Tai Cang's long lasting voice that resounded out caused an endless amount of students to inhale a mouthful of cold air. This time, it was actually the Three Great Generals of the Punishment Hall that were personally sent out? This difficulty was simply too high!

Chapter 290 – Begin

“They’re the Three Great Generals of the Punishment Hall?”

Mu Chen’s gaze was grave as he looked at the direction of the cloudy mist that was vaguely being shown. Those three majestic figures were extremely powerful.

“It is indeed them, they are the final Guardians.” Li Xuantong muttered. Even he felt some pressure when facing those three, who were once the top 3 of the Heavenly Ranking.

“Furthermore, it is three people that are the Guardians. This round’s final Guardians are simply too hard.” Li Xuantong slightly frowned his brows. Although he was confident in his own strength, he wasn’t arrogant to the point that he would claim that he could confront those three all by himself. After all, those three weren’t ordinary figures. Back then, when he entered the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, those three were figures that he could only looked at from below.

According to the rules of the Hunting War, no matter how much Spiritual Light they obtained in this Hunting War, if they could not pass through the final round, everyone’s hard work would all be in vain. And all the Spiritual Light that they worked so hard to obtain would all be useless.

And, naturally, they would lose the benefits from the Spiritual Empowerment.

This was the crucial point to every student’s benefits that participated in the Hunting War.

Evidently, many students had thought of this and, instantly, the atmosphere in the field was a little stiff. Many people had their brows furrowed as they swept their gazes, searching for the figures that could ease their hearts.

“Why isn’t Shen Cangsheng here in this year’s Hunting War?”

“If he’s not here, I’m afraid that it would not be easy to get through the final test.”

“Yeah. Just relying on Li Xuantong, I’m afraid that it won’t be sufficient to deal with those three Generals.”

Those whispers started to spread out in this field and quite a few people were searching for that peak existence on the Heavenly Ranking. Only with him, would they have a guarantee to be able to obtain the Spiritual Empowerment without a hitch.

Compared to them, Mu Chen did not look around. In this view, he would rather depend on himself, rather than others. It was a downside to depend on others. Although Shen Cangsheng was indeed powerful. If he managed to return in time for the hunting War, it would be a matter that could stir people’s heart. However, Mu Chen wasn’t used to placing his hopes in others.

Li Xuantong’s face maintained indifference. His expression was calm and tranquil, without any change, as he allowed the whispers to spread out on the field.

On the azure bird, Dean Tai Cang smiled as he looked at the stirred field, “Do you guys have any objections regarding this Hunting War? If there aren’t any, then, let’s open up the Spiritual Light Realm.”

The Spiritual Light Realm was the Hunting War. It was a small realm that was established by the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy and, every single year, the Spiritual Light Realm would be opened for the Hunting War.

Countless students exchanged glances and could only nod their heads helplessly. From the looks of it, it seemed that Shen Cangsheng would not turn up. If that’s the case, then they wouldn’t have any odds of success in the final test.

Those three Great Generals possessed high fame that was not only limited to the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Even in

the Northern Heavens Continent, they possessed some fame, as well. Although, it wasn't for certain that they would be able to pass through the final test if Shen Cangsheng was here, at least their odds of success would be higher when he joined hands with Li Xuantong.

Dean Tai Cang lightly smiled as he looked at the situation. He waved his sleeve and the space before him started to twist. As the light wiggled, a huge spatial door slowly took form as boundless Spiritual Energy ripples rippled out.

"It's almost time, so let's begin this year's Hunting War!" Dean Tai Cang saw the opened spatial door and laughed so clear and bright that it resounded within everyone's ears.

The countless students all nodded their heads as smears of blazing intent flashed across their eyes shortly after. No matter what, admitting defeat before reaching the final test wasn't the style of Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy's students. Even if this year's Hunting War didn't have powerful figures like Shen Cangsheng, they would still attempt to challenge the final test!

However, just when the countless students were about to soar up and enter the Spiritual Light Realm, there was a hurried break of wind that suddenly sounded from far away.

Astonishing Spiritual Energy ripples soared up into the heavens.

"Haha, how can I be left out of this Hunting War?" When the astonishing Spiritual Energy ripples appeared, his laughter was like thunder as it resounded above the field.

"Senior Apprentice Shen Cangsheng?!"

"He's finally back!"

The entire field instantly exploded as countless students had excitement on their faces as they couldn't help cheering. At the final moment, the tyrant of the Heavenly Ranking had returned!

Under the loud cheers, a streak of light flew over from far away

and appeared in the sky. As the light dispersed, that black-clothed youth stood on the air with a disdainful demeanor that was like a goshawk in the air, the focus of everyone's attention.

Countless gazes were looking at that figure with revere. Among this batch's students, Shen Cangsheng was undoubtedly the tyrant among everyone.

His ranking on the Heavenly Ranking was something that no one could surpass.

"Finally appeared?" Li Xuantong stared at that black-clothed figure up in the sky as he lightly smiled, along with a dense fighting intent surging out of his eyes.

If Shen Cangsheng was not in this year's Hunting War, then it would have been a little too boring.

"He's Senior Apprentice Shen Cangsheng?" Zhou Ling, Ye Qingling and the rest were looking at that figure with curiosity and revere. After coming to the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, they had clearly heard too much in regards to the fame of the Heavenly Ranking's Tyrant.

Mu Chen lightly nodded his head as he looked at that figure. Looking again at the boiling atmosphere, Shen Cangsheng was, indeed, the only flag-like figure that could have the power to rally supporters of such great numbers.

At this point, even a god-favoured person like Li Xuantong was inferior to him.

"Dean, am I too late?" Shen Cangsheng stood in the air as he smiled, looking towards Dean Tai Cang, who was on the azure bird.

Dean Tai Cang smiled as he looked at Shen Cangsheng. He was, naturally, familiar with the most outstanding student in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, "Aren't you engaged with the Bounty Mission to hunt Mo Longzi? Could it be that your

mission has been completed, now that you're back?"

When Dean Tai Cang said those words, it caused the hearts of many students to tremble. Mo Longzi? The ranked 2 of the Bounty Board?

When Shen Cangsheng heard Dean Tai Cang's words, he helplessly smiled, "I fought several rounds with him, but he still managed to escape. Wait until I finish this year's Hunting War and accept the Spiritual Empowerment, I should be able to kill him."

Although his words were calm, they made the faces of many outstanding students in the academy to change. Unconsciously, Shen Cangsheng had already reached that level? How were they going to catch up to him? Heavenly Ranking's Tyrant, this name was, indeed, not in vain.

Li Xuantong narrowed his eyes. The fighting intent within his eyes did not fall weak, but turned denser.

"Li Xuantong, it's been a long time since we've met, can you not look at me like that?" Sensing Li Xuantong's gaze, Shen Cangsheng turned around and smiled.

"I just want to see how much you've improved in this period of time. Beware being surpassed by me." Li Xuantong faintly smiled.

"Haha, I also wish to see if you have any improvement in your Profound Sky Divine Technique." Shen Cangsheng nodded with a smile. Among the Heavenly Ranking, Shen Cangsheng was the only person that could be placed in his eyes. As for others, like He Yao, he didn't even consider them much.

Shen Cangsheng smiled as he lightly swept his glance towards He Yao, Xu Huang and the rest that were in the top 10 of the Heavenly Ranking. When his gaze fell onto Mu Chen, he was slightly startled and, shortly after, he gave a deeply meaningful look towards him.

Regarding Mu Chen, Shen Cangsheng clearly had quite a bit of an impression about him. Back then, Mu Chen had relied on his

cultivation as a Heavenly Fusion Stage to kill Bai Xuan. Furthermore, even before Mo Longzi, Mu Chen was calm and composed. Such a state of mind wasn't something that an ordinary youth could possess.

When Mu Chen saw Shen Cangsheng's gaze, he also lightly smiled and did not say anything else.

"Since the person that all of you have been waiting for is here, then, let's begin!"

Dean Tai Cang smiled as he looked at the students that was clearly at ease. Evidently, Shen Cangsheng's arrival had given confidence to many of the students.

When he finished his speech, the spatial door instantly burst forth with a brilliant light.

"Haha, let's go everyone. Li Xuantong, let us meet again in the Spiritual Light Stage!" Shen Cangsheng laughed as he stepped forth and turned into a stream of light as he charged into the huge spatial door. Only his laughter remained, resounding in the sky of this field.

"Boom!"

When Shen Cangsheng moved, he had, undoubtedly, instantly caused an explosion on the entire field. Countless figures flew up and were like locusts as they streaked across the horizon, into the huge spatial door.

Li Xuantong also immediately moved as he brought a group of people with him into the huge door that was emitting the brilliant light.

"Let's go, as well." Mu Chen looked at Luo Li, which the latter nodded her head in response.

"Brother Mu, go for it!" Behind him, the various students of the Goddess Luo Association waved their fists as they yelled.

Mu Chen waved his hand towards them, before holding onto Luo Li's jade-like hands and flew away, joining the stream of people into the Spiritual Light Realm.

Up on the azure bird, Dean Tai Cang was smiling as he watched the spectacular scene. Shortly after, he shifted his line-of-sight onto the light screen that was illuminating the final point of the Spiritual Light Realm, which was the so-called Spiritual Light Stage where the Three Great Generals were standing guard.

"Haha, this year's Hunting War is a little interesting. I wonder, would the former top 3 of the Heavenly Ranking be more formidable, or the current top 3 of the Heavenly Ranking?"

When the few elders that stood behind him heard his words, they lightly smiled. Although the demeanor of those students were brilliant and, by adding geniuses like Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong, they'd still a bit lacking if they wanted to challenge the spot of the Three Great Generals.

Who knows? If things didn't work out, everyone might return empty-handed during this year's Hunting War.

Chapter 291 – Spiritual Light Realm

A bizarre world that seemed like the primal chaos. The sky wasn't lit, but there were frightening Spiritual Energies that fluctuated in this primal chaotic world.

Because of the Spiritual Energy being too massive, spiritual clouds that were floating in the sky could be seen and would occasionally sway with moist spiritual clouds drifting about.

This was the Spiritual Light Realm, a bizarre small realm that was created by the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy and, at the same time, it was also the field of the Hunting War.

This place was filled with Spiritual Energy, but there was a lack of vitality here. The heavens and earth were quiet, without any sign of people.

However, the desolation in this reasoning was abruptly disrupted today.

There were beams of light that looked like locusts as they fell from the sky. Thereafter, they'd scattered to the outer areas of this realm. Although the Spiritual Light Realm wasn't big, the scale of it still far surpassed the range of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Hence, even if there was a large amount of students entering into this realm, everyone could still disperse throughout the area.

On a small hill, two beams of light flew over and turned into two figures. They were Mu Chen and Luo Li.

When they appeared, they were looking around in curiosity. Shortly after, they exclaimed out, "What nourish Spiritual Energy!"

According to their speculations, the amount of Spiritual Energy in this Spiritual Light Realm could be comparable to the Seventh Rank Convergence Spiritual Array. But, the most fearsome point of

it was that although the Seventh Rank Convergence Spiritual Array wasn't small, it paled in comparison to this realm.

"However, this place lacks vitality." Mu Chen quickly sensed the defect in this realm. Although the Spiritual Energy in this region was exceptionally robust, there weren't any fluctuations of vitality.

"This realm was created not long ago and there wasn't any way to give birth to vitality. Henceforth, it is not possible to stay here for a long time." Luo Li swept her eyes around as she commented.

Mu Chen lightly nodded his head. No wonder the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy did not open this place for students to cultivate. So, it was because this place wasn't suitable for life forms to stay.

"Let's us start by obtaining as much Spiritual Light as possible." said Mu Chen. The so-called 'Spiritual Light Empowerment' would have to depend on the obtained Spiritual Light for it to be graded. If a person had harvested a low amount of Spiritual Light, it would only waste the benefits of the Spiritual Light Empowerment.

In this Spiritual Light Realm, if someone wanted to obtain Spiritual Lights, the only way would be to kill the Spiritual Spawns.

The so-called Spiritual Spawns were actually humanoid forms of Spiritual Energy. Although those Spiritual Spawns don't possess any intellect, the strength that they possessed wasn't weak.

According to the news that Mu Chen had received, the Spiritual Spawns were divided into three grades in this Spiritual Light Realm. The lowest grade was an ordinary Spiritual Pawn, which possessed strength comparable to a Heavenly Fusion Stage. The next would be Spiritual Knights, which possessed the strength of a Heavenly Transformation Stage and some powerful Spiritual Knights were comparable to Heavenly Transformation Stage Late Phase. Spiritual Knights of this level were highly popular with

those students with powerful strength as the Spiritual Lights that they would obtain would be the highest.

As for the strongest Spiritual Spawns, they were known as Spiritual Kings. There weren't that many of them in the entire Spiritual Light Realm and were also the most powerful existences. If they're encountered one, they could only stay far away from it. Not only do the Spiritual Kings possess simple intellect, their strengths were comparable to a Heavenly Completion Stage, which was extremely hard to deal with.

In the history of the Hunting War, there were very few people that would dare to provoke the Spiritual Kings. Although the Spiritual Light in the body of the Spiritual Kings was the best ingredient for Spiritual Light Empowerment, their strength at the Heavenly Completion Stage made everyone hold their step and would be filled with fear.

"Let's go."

Mu Chen identified his location before flying out. He didn't have a clear goal. However, the only thing that he could do was head towards the depths of the Spiritual Light Realm.

Due to the fact that every student participating the Hunting War would be gathered at that region, where the final Guardians stood hold, their final enemy.

Two figures were streaking across the horizon and because of the Spiritual Energy in this region being too dense, the speed of Mu Chen and Luo Li also suffered some restrictions. Pressure that was suppressing them would occasionally cause them to require constant circulation of Spiritual Energy to withstand that pressure.

Mu Chen and Luo Li flew low to the ground and, after roughly ten minutes, Mu Chen's eyes were grave as his speed started to slow down. Before him, there was a dazzling light that he could only see the direction of by narrowing his eyes. That light seemed

to be a humanoid figure that was drifting around, along with the majestic Spiritual Energy that was being emitted from it.

When Mu Chen sensed it, he seemed to have perceived a different fluctuation that was coming from it. Shortly after, that humanoid figure flew out and burst towards the direction of Mu Chen and Luo Li like a demon.

“Quite the decent speed.”

Mu Chen lightly smiled. The tip of his toes tapped and his figure flew out, crisscrossing with that light figure. However, the moment they crossed, Mu Chen placed his palm on the chest of that light figure. A violent Spiritual Energy surged out and instantly shattered it from the jolt.

As the light figure crumbled, a faint red light shot out from it's body. However, before that light could escape, Mu Chen had already snatched it with his hand.

That lump of faint red light started to shrink into Mu Chen’s hands, little by little, before turning into a sphere of light that was roughly the size of a dragon’s eye, except the fact that it contained a rather pure Spiritual Energy.

There wasn’t any intent mixed in this Spiritual Aura and was exceptionally pure.

“This is the Spiritual Light?” Mu Chen fiddled with it in curiosity as he became astonished. He never expected that such a small volume would contain such pure Spiritual Energy. This realm was, indeed, bizarre.

“It’s just an ordinary Spiritual Pawn.” said Luo Li. The Spiritual Light was too weak and could only be compared to a drop in the ocean for their Spiritual Light Empowerment.

“Let’s search slowly.” Mu Chen was also a little helpless. After all, this was their first time participating in the Hunting War and, hence, they weren’t familiar with this area. Clearly, no one would

be so kind as to share the precious information with them.

Luo Li lightly smiled as she nodded. She wasn't worried at all. As long as she was with him, she wouldn't mind, even if she did not get any harvests.

But, even if she doesn't mind, Mu Chen had to. He knew how important this period of time was for Luo Li. Now that he can be with her, he would naturally do everything he could to make her stronger. This way, she won't have to suffer too much when she returned to the Luo God Clan.

"Let's go take a look." Mu Chen looked ahead as he flew out, holding onto Luo Li.

But in the next hour, Mu Chen and Luo Li duo didn't have much harvests as they would only, occasionally, encounter dozens of ordinary Spiritual Pawns and the Spiritual Light that they obtained could not be considered as robust. This made Mu Chen a little helpless. Was the Spiritual Spawns in the Spiritual Light Realm so little? Then, how could they engage the Spiritual Light Empowerment?

Mu Chen made a flick with his finger and a Spiritual Pawn that was charging at his direction was reduced to dust. Thereafter, he grabbed the faint red light that flew out of it and curled his lips in helplessness, "Tsk, another ordinary Spiritual Pawn."

He felt speechless. Their harvests for the next two to three hours wasn't too joyful, either.

Luo Li smiled as she followed him. She appeared rather relaxed as she left all the troublesome matters to Mu Chen.

"The Spiritual Energy ripples up ahead aren't from Spiritual Pawns. It should be students that are participating in the Hunting War like us." Luo Li said with a little astonishment as she suddenly glanced far ahead.

Mu Chen wasn't very interested in that as he had been racking

his brains on how to obtain more Spiritual Lights. This was the first time that he brought Luo Li along in cultivation. If they were to return empty-handed, then he would be too useless.

“There must be some rules in the Spiritual Light Realm and our first time here made us totally unfamiliar with the information. Therefore, solving the problem of information is the priority right now.” Luo Li smiled.

Mu Chen was startled and, shortly after, his face was replaced with a smile, “We have some Spiritual Lights in our hands. At worst, we could make an exchange for information with the Spiritual Lights. If they refuse to agree to the terms, then they can’t blame us for being unreasonable, right?”

Hearing his last words, Luo Li couldn’t help rolling her eyes at him as she appeared extremely charming.

Mu Chen, on the other hand, was excited as he flew out with Luo Li. In about ten minutes, they saw that there was a battle on a hill up ahead.

But, to their astonishment, it wasn’t a battle between students and spiritual spawns, but a battle between students.

There seemed to be over a dozen students circling three students. Those three students were clearly no match for them. Under that encirclement, they were heading further and further into a disadvantage and would lose at anytime.

“An Ran, we don’t want to make things hard for you. Tell us about all the Spiritual Spawns gathering points that you know and we’ll let you leave!” Outside the battle, a lean and slender youth was chuckling as he looked at those three that were gradually losing.

Among those three who were being ganged up on, there was the figure of An Ran, who Mu Chen had met before when he had just entered the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.

“Liu Chen, you can dream on!”

An Ran’s face flushed red as her eyes became filled with wrath. She tightly clenched her teeth as she added, “You disgusting bastard. Even if I was to be kicked out of the Hunting War, I won’t let you guys know the gathering points. I don’t believe that you would dare to kill me here!”

The youth who was named as Liu Chen coldly smiled in reply as his gaze swept over An Ran’s well-developed figure as he gave a weird smile, “Indeed, I don’t dare to kill you. However, all of us here are males, and if we were to have a slip and accidentally touch or grab you, don’t take it personally. I believe that you won’t be able to report me about this matter, right?”

When An Ran heard his threats, her face instantly turned pale as she trembled.

“Therefore, An Ran, don’t make things unpleasant. As long as you tell us about those locations, we can even bring you along and you can have a share of the Spiritual Lights. What do you think of my suggestion?” Liu Chen smiled with his eyes narrowed.

An Ran tightly clenched her teeth. Her two companions were also female. Faced with the delinquent threats from Liu Chen and his group, their faces flushed red from anger, but they could not do anything.

“Haha, I think that there’s nothing great about this suggestion.”

However, when she was about to speak, a laughter sounded out from far away. Shortly after, two light figures flew over and appeared before An Ran and her group.

“Mu Chen?!”

An Ran looked at the handsome youth before her as she exclaimed in surprise.

Chapter 292 – Gathering Point

"Mu Chen?"

When the group that was surrounding Su Ran and her group heard a name that wasn't unfamiliar to them, their gazes changed as deep fear rose within their eyes.

Although Mu Chen had just entered the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy for only a few months, his reputation within the academy could be comparable to, or even more superior than some of the outstanding Seniors.

The guy that was named Liu Chen's face slightly changed as he glanced at Mu Chen and Luo Li, "This matter isn't related to the both of you, why are you casually meddling in? If it's possible, once I obtain the information, I can share it with the both of you. At that time, we might even be able to join hands together."

Likewise, he feared Mu Chen. However, he wasn't willing to let An Ran off. In the Hunting War, because of the time restraint, information was the most important. If they could not find the gathering points of the Spiritual Spawns fast enough, then they wouldn't be able to gather sufficient Spiritual Lights. If that's the case, then the effects of the Spiritual Light Empowerment would not be effective.

He possessed a Quasi-Heavenly Transformation Stage cultivation as well. If everyone else was included, then it wouldn't be easy for Mu Chen and Luo Li to deal with them, if they were to confront each other.

When An Ran heard the conversation, she clenched her teeth and added, "Mu Chen, lend us a hand and we'll give you the information!"

At this moment, she was full of loathe for Liu Chen. She would rather give the information to Mu Chen then to let these fellows

benefit from it.

Mu Chen lightly smiled as he looked at Liu Chen, “Senior Apprentice Sister An Ran is my friend. Take your people and leave.”

Although his relationship with An Ran wasn’t too deep, he didn’t like Liu Chen too much. Furthermore, the latter’s strength had still not reach to the point that it would make Mu Chen fear him. Since that’s the case, then he would naturally act on his own preferences.

“You!”

When Liu Chen heard what Mu Chen had said, his eyes instantly flickered with ferocity. His face turned dull and, shortly after, he gave a signal with his eyes to his companions. The latter immediately pulled themselves away from the encirclement of An Ran and her two companions as they looked at Mu Chen with bad intentions.

“Leave him to me, you can deal with the rest.” Mu Chen lightly said to Luo Li.

“Okay.” Luo Li nodded. The highest cultivation among that group was only a Heavenly Fusion Stage Late Phase and posed no pressure to her.

“Just the two of you want to deal with so many of us...?” Liu Chen grounded his teeth as he sneered. However, before he finished his speech, Mu Chen already burst towards his direction.

“Stop him!” Liu Chen barked when he saw the situation, the Spiritual Energy within his body surged forth.

That group of a dozen also burst forth with Spiritual Energy. However, before they could act, they saw Mu Chen’s figure turn into a streak of light, and the sound of a solemn roar of a dragon sounded out.

Rustle!

The light figure passed through their obstruction with an indescribable speed. Thereafter, before Liu Chen could react, a slender palm had already softly landed on the latter's chest.

Liu Chen looked at Mu Chen who had mysteriously appeared before him. His pupils immediately shrank and his face was filled with horror. The latter's speed was simply too fearsome.

Bang!

A violent Spiritual Energy surged out from Mu Chen's palm and Liu Chen felt as though he was hit by a huge hammer and instantly flew away. After he created a long mark on the ground and clashed against a huge rock, the rock instantly crumbled and that unlucky fellow fainted.

He thought that he could confront Mu Chen with his strength at the Quasi-Heavenly Transformation Stage. But who would have expected that although the both of them had cultivated to the Quasi-Heavenly Transformation Stage, the distance between the two of them was as different as the heavens and earth.

"Bang! Bang!"

Just as Mu Chen easily dealt with Liu Chen, an urgent Spiritual Energy ripple came from his rear. When Mu Chen turned his head over, he saw a dozen unlucky fellows falling to the ground, one after another, as they wailed in pain. Among them, was a young girl wearing black clothes as she lightly patted her hands before blinking her big eyes towards Mu Chen.

"Formidable." Mu Chen gave her a big thumbs-up before looking at An Ran's group and smiled, "Senior Apprentice Sister An Ran, are you alright?"

An Ran shook her head as she looked at Mu Chen, as well as Luo Li, with a complicated gaze. A few months ago, Mu Chen's strength was just at the Spirit Realm, and who could have expect that in just a few short months, this newcomer had already far surpassed her?

Those two ladies beside An Ran were also beautiful, as they stealthily looked at Mu Chen. Clearly, they were curious towards this newcomer who had soaring fame in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.

“What is the so-called gathering point?” Mu Chen did not say anything unnecessary and said the main subject. Right now, what they needed the most was information regarding the Spiritual Light Realm.

“Within the Spiritual Light Realm, although the Spiritual Energy is vast in this region, it isn’t easy for Spiritual Pawns to gather in one place. At ordinary places, it wasn’t easy to search for places with huge amounts of Spiritual Pawns and Spiritual Knights.”

An Ran was also straightforward. She knew that half of the reason why Mu Chen gave her a helping hand was because of the information that she held. Therefore, she restrained her sigh as she spoke, “However, due to the terrain, some places have large amounts of Spiritual Spawns, which we call, the gathering point.”

“As long as we find those gathering points, we will be able to obtain a large amount of Spiritual Lights. Otherwise, even if we searched the entire Spiritual Light Realm, we wouldn’t be able to obtain enough Spiritual Lights.”

Mu Chen and Luo Li suddenly understood in a flash. No wonder they only encountered sparse amounts of Spiritual Spawns along their way here. So it turned out that there were some rules to the Spiritual Light Realm.

“Where did Senior Apprentice Sister An Ran obtain the information about the gathering points from?” Mu Chen enquired along with a little astonishment.

“This kind of information can be purchased from the Spiritual Value Hall. Except, the price is expensive. Furthermore, there would be some changes to the gathering points every single year. Therefore, no one dares to be certain that the information would

be useful. And the information that we purchased was collected by the three of us." An Ran bitterly smiled, "Who could have expected that this news was known to Liu Chen, which caused this matter to break out?"

It could be purchased from the Spiritual Value Hall? Mu Chen was stunned and shortly after, he inhaled a mouthful of air. They were, indeed, newcomers and, hence, weren't familiar with important information like this and could only charge into the Spiritual Light Realm without any plans.

"I'll tell the both of you the location of the gathering points." An Ran's face was a little dull. However, she did not forget her earlier promise towards Mu Chen and could only admit to have bad luck.

An Ran, as well as the two girls beside her, lightly sighed. Their strengths were still a little too weak. In the Hunting War, with more and more black horses emerging, it would be hard for them to obtain any achievements.

Looking at the three beautiful ladies that dispiritedly hung their heads, Mu Chen couldn't help smiling helplessly. Why did it feel like he's committing a crime.

"Senior Apprentice Sister An Ran, we're newcomers, after all. Therefore, we are not familiar with the Spiritual Light Realm. Why don't we trouble you to bring us along? We don't have any thoughts of monopolising everything and the Spiritual Lights that we get could be split equally between us."

An Ran and the two other girls were startled. Shortly after, they raised their heads and stared at Mu Chen with surprise filling their eyes, "Can we really?"

Generally speaking, no one believed that they could find enough Spiritual Lights. The more Spiritual Lights they obtained, the greater the benefits they could obtain from the Spiritual Light Empowerment. And, right now, Mu Chen was actually willing to split the Spiritual Lights equally with them. With his absolute

strength, he clearly didn't have the need to give them such treatment.

Mu Chen gently smiled at them. He also knew the importance of the Spiritual Lights. However, there was also something called proper exchange. Otherwise, his actions wouldn't have much difference form Liu Chen and his group.

"What protective feelings for the fairer sex." Luo Li lightly turned her head as she said softly with a smile yet, at the same time, not a smile.

Mu Chen could only awkwardly smile helplessly.

"Senior Apprentice Sister An Ran, lead the way. We have to get there as fast as possible." Mu Chen looked at the trio, who were still joyful, and smiled.

"Okay." An Ran immediately nodded her head. After distinguishing some directions, she flew out first with Mu Chen and the rest followed right after her.

"Mu Chen, the gathering points that we know about were purchased from the Spiritual Value Hall. Therefore, at the same time when we purchased them, there should also be other students that did the same as us." As they were quickly flying to the so-called 'gathering point', An Ran also seized the moment to inform Mu Chen of the possible troubles that they could encounter.

"What you mean is that there are other students that have their eyes on the gathering points as well?" Mu Chen's brows slightly frowned. It seemed like it won't be easy to obtain the Spiritual Lights in the Hunting War.

"There's a possibility." An Ran wasn't especially certain, but it was certainly better if there weren't any people and they could monopolise everything at the gathering point. However, if they were to encounter other people, it won't be too peaceful. If the other party possessed sufficient strength, they could banish them

from the raid.

“We’ll think about it again at that time.” Mu Chen said after some pondering. With his current strength, along with Luo Li, even if they were to encounter some troubles, he wasn’t afraid. If there was anyone that tried to threaten them through strength, then he wouldn’t mind giving them a taste of their own medicine.

When An Ran saw Mu Chen’s calm expression without any worries, she felt relieved. It seemed that the current Mu Chen was no longer that freshman Mu Chen from back then.

Their route was rather peaceful. Although they had encountered quite a bit of students along their way, they were all looking at them passing by with their guards up. Clearly, they did not have any intention to fight them.

After about half an hour,, Mu Chen could feel An Ran’s speed gradually slowing down.

“We will soon reach it.” An Ran’s voice caused Mu Chen’s spirit to shake. Glancing far away, he was, indeed, able to sense abnormal Spiritual Energy fluctuations from far away.

A few minutes later, Mu Chen and his group landed on a mountain peak. Their lines-of-sight were directed ahead of them. There was a crater surrounded by several mountain peaks fluctuating with brilliant lights as a light figure hovered above with astonishing Spiritual Energy ripples that were spreading from it. There was at least a thousand of them.

“What a great amount of Spiritual Spawns.”

Mu Chen looked at the astonishing amount of Spiritual Spawns and his face started to turn grave, little by little.

“There seemed to be a stronger existence at the center of the group.” Luo Li said with a soft voice as she directed her sight towards the center.

When Mu Chen heard her words, he also directed his gaze over.

Indeed, he saw a huge light figure at the center of the group as a tyrannical Spiritual Energy pressure was being emitted from it's body.

The ripples far surpassed the other Spiritual Spawns.

Mu Chen concentrated his gaze.

That’s a Spiritual Knight!

Chapter 293 – Join Hands

In the huge crater, the Spiritual Energy was extremely dazzling as it looked like a Spiritual Energy ocean with many light figures floating within. Although they did not have any consciousness, from the huge amount that had gathered, the Spiritual Energy had already reached a frightening degree.

The Spiritual Pawns here were terrifyingly huge in numbers. If they were replaced with humans of equal strength, there would be thousands of Heavenly Fusion Stage experts. If they were all added together, even those of the Heavenly Fusion Stage would be destroyed by them.

But, fortunately, those Spiritual Pawns did not possess any consciousness. Otherwise, Mu Chen and his group would have had to run for their lives.

“So many Spiritual Pawns!” An Ran and her group were dumbfounded as they looked at the scene before them. Shortly after, they couldn’t help looking at Mu Chen, “How are we going to act?”

Mu Chen’s brows were knitted together. Aside from the huge amount of Spiritual Pawns, there was also an existence in the depths that was comparable to Heavenly Transformation Stage, the Spiritual Knight. They were comparable to a small army.

“Our numbers are small and I’m afraid that we won’t be able to take over this place.” Luo Li’s brows slightly knitted together. Even though the Spiritual Pawns here didn’t possess any consciousness, even if they only knew how to use simple attacks, if they combined together, it would still be extremely frightening.

Not to mention that on their side, they only had five people, with her and Mu Chen being the strongest in the group. If they had to rely on the two of them to deal with this huge amount of Spiritual Pawns, as well as the Spiritual Knight that was hidden in the

depths, this would undoubtedly be really exhausting for them.

And it was, naturally, unwise for them to exhaust a huge amount of their strength.

“Furthermore…” Luo Li’s pupils glanced around the surrounding mountains and lightly added, “We aren’t the only one that had our eyes on here.”

She could vaguely sense some concealed auras. Clearly, they weren’t the only ones there. However, everyone that had noticed this place had the same thoughts as them, as they did not possess the ability to swallow this fat lamb.

Mu Chen nodded as he had also sensed some of the concealed undulated Spiritual Energies.

His eyes flickered and glance towards the mountain. Shortly after, he lightly smiled as his robust voice echoed, “Everyone, why the need to hide? The amount of Spiritual Pawns here isn’t little and no individual party is capable of taking it all. Since that’s the case, why don’t we work together?”

His voice resounded throughout the mountains. However, there weren’t any movements from those Spiritual Pawns that had gathered in large numbers. They did not have any consciousness to the point that they could not even be called lifeforms. At best, they could only be considered relatively condensed Spiritual Energies. Therefore, Mu Chen wasn’t afraid that he would alarm them.

As Mu Chen’s words sounded out, the mountains were quiet for few minutes before a gale of wind broke out. Several figures came out of their hiding places, one after another, and were floating in the sky. The amount wasn’t small, roughly a few dozen. They formed separate circles to clearly differentiate that they were from different groups.

Mu Chen glanced pass those figures that were up in the sky as a trace of astonishment flashed through his eyes. He could clearly

sense that those teams had Heavenly Transformation Stage figures amongst them. Although their strengths were only at the Heavenly Transformation Stage Initial Phase, this could already prove their strengths.

'Indeed, worthy of being the Hunting War. The strength of many people has increased.' Mu Chen sighed in his heart. Generally speaking, those with strength at the Heavenly Transformation Stage could compete with the top 20 of the Heavenly Ranking. But, clearly, in this Hunting War, the amount of Heavenly Transformation Stage Initial Phase experts would have quite a huge change. Henceforth, the strength of a Heavenly Transformation Stage Initial Phase expert would be far from sufficient to enter into the top 20 of the Heavenly Ranking.

"My name is Mu Chen, I wonder how should I address everyone?" Mu Chen smiled as he cupped his hands towards the crowd.

Hearing that name, many people glanced at Mu Chen with astonishment as this name wasn't unfamiliar in the entire Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.

"Haha, so it was the famous Junior Apprentice Brother Mu Chen. I've long heard of your name, my name is Lin Feng." A youth also smiled as he cupped his hands in return. He was the leader of an estimated ten-man group.

"Liu Zhan." Another youthful leader cupped his hands and declared.

"Chen Peng." A skinny youth also nodded as his face was filled with arrogance.

Those three were the leaders of the three groups and their strengths were also the strongest amongst them with Heavenly Transformation Stage Initial Phase strengths. No wonder those people that followed them had faith in them.

Mu Chen lightly smiled, “I believe that everyone is clear that the amount of Spiritual Pawns gathered in this area is too much, to the point that no one could take them down by themselves. Why don’t we cooperate and work together. As for the distribution of Spiritual Light, it’d depend on our individual abilities, what do you say?”

When the three leaders heard Mu Chen’s suggestion, their eyes flickered with light. Lin Feng and Liu Zhan didn’t have any objections, whereas Chen Peng glanced at Mu Chen from up high before shaking his head, “We are the ones who discovered this place first. You want us to split some of it to you guys the instant you get here? This isn’t such a good thing.”

Among the three groups, Chen Peng’s group had the most people and was also the strongest in strength. They originally wanted to defeat the Spiritual Pawns that were here slowly, but who could have expected that this place would be found by two other groups. Henceforth, they hiddenly stood against the confrontation and, all of a sudden, Mu Chen suddenly appeared. Furthermore, from the looks of it, they also wanted to have a share of the Spiritual Pawns.

Although Chen Peng had heard of Mu Chen before, he wasn’t too afraid of him. With his strength at the Heavenly Transformation Stage Initial Phase, even in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, he could be considered as outstanding. Adding the formation behind him, he wasn’t too willing to split this cake with them.

Hearing the contempt in his words, An Ran and her group was a little furious. But due to the power that the other party possessed, they did not dare to say anything.

“Then, what does Brother Chen Peng want?” Mu Chen lightly smiled. No one could clearly see through the expression in his black pupils.

“How about this. It wasn’t easy for you guys to get here. If you

guys help us, when all of the Spiritual Pawns are eliminated, we'll give you guys a hundred Spiritual Lights, what do you say?" said Chen Peng.

"A hundred Spiritual Lights?" Mu Chen's brows twitched. Shortly after, he laughed, "It seems that Brother Chen Peng believes that we do not possess the strength to split this cake."

Chen Peng did not comment and quietly circulated the Spiritual Energy within his body. Although he was arrogant, he was also cautious. Although this Mu Chen that stood before him only had strength at the Quasi-Heavenly Transformation Stage, it was said that not even those of the Heavenly Transformation Stage Initial Phase could do a thing to him. But after all, they were superior in terms of numbers. So if a fight were to break out, they could absolutely suppress the other team.

Mu Chen lightly smiled as Luo Li stepped forth from his side.

When Chen Peng saw Luo Li's actions, his body tensed up. The dozens of people that stood behind him immediately turned cautious as they revealed considerable fighting experience and cooperation.

"If you can withstand a sword from me, then we'll become your cannon fodder for free." Luo Li's jade-like hands slightly tightened her grip on her sword hilt. Her pupils stared at Chen Peng as her voice was clear and calm.

"What an arrogant tone of voice!" Chen Peng smiled from extreme anger.

Rustle!

However, before his smile stopped, Luo Li had already thrown a stab forth as a torrential sword aura shot out. It was like a brilliant ray of light as it instantly rip the horizon apart.

A deep sword light burst forth ahead of Luo Li.

When that sword aura shot out, Chen Peng's face drastically

changed. However, he still had some ability, after all, as he unleashed a bark with his Spiritual Energy bursting out from his body and rapidly turned into a Spiritual Energy light barrier before him.

Shhhhh!

Just when the Spiritual Energy light barrier took form, a brilliant sword aura shot against it, causing the light barrier to waver. Thereafter, it was torn apart under Chen Peng's dumbstruck gaze.

A streak of blood appeared on Chen Peng's face and even several strands of his hair was severed. Making him appear to be in a sorry state.

When the dozen of people behind Chen Peng saw that he could not even withstand a move, their faces drastically changed. Their gazes were filled with shock as they looked at Luo Li, who was sheathing her sword as she stood behind Mu Chen.

Even Lin Feng and Liu Zhan's expressions were focused as they looked towards Luo Li with grave expressions. They never imagined that such a stunning lady would be so formidable.

"Does any of you still have any opinions?" Mu Chen once again, directed his eyes towards Chen Peng, who was frightened. His voice was light, but within his black pupils, there was already chill light gathering within. If Chen Peng still refused to be tactful, then he would have to take some trouble to chase them away.

Chen Peng lightly clenched his teeth. After all, he wasn't an idiot. Although Mu Chen's group was few in numbers, the strength that they showed was more than sufficient to keep them intimidated.

"Okay." He wasn't an effeminate person. Since Mu Chen and his group possessed the sufficient strength to have a share of this cake, he would be seeking trouble if he continued to obstruct them.

"Haha. Junior Apprentice Brother Mu Chen is, indeed, someone that even Li Xuantong could not do anything against." Lin Feng

laughed as he praised, “We have no opinions against your suggestion.”

“So are we.” Liu Zhan nodded his head as well.

Mu Chen lightly smiled. “Since that’s the case, then I hope that we’ll have a good time cooperating with each other.”

Mu Chen’s line-of-sight shifted towards the crater where the undulated Spiritual Energy was like the ocean. The sight of it raised a heat that flashed through his eyes. If they could dispose of all those Spiritual Pawns, then it would definitely be a huge harvest for them.

“Everyone, get ready to start. Otherwise, the longer we drag this on, the more people will gather towards this location.”

Mu Chen laughed. Shortly after, the Spiritual Energy within his body surged out in waves as it soared into the clouds like black smoke.

“Okay!”

Lin Feng, Liu Zhan and Chen Peng acknowledged as they circulated the Spiritual Energies within them and their Majestic Spiritual Energies instantly fluctuated, filling the void between the heavens and earth.

Just when Mu Chen and the rest were getting ready to destroy this gathering point, there were several concealed gazes that were fixed onto them somewhere in the depths of the mountain range.

“Haha, Big Brother, they’re about to start, are we still just going to observe them?” The voice sounded like a laughter.

“Lin Feng and the rest are just trivial matters. However, the two freshmen, Mu Chen and Luo Li are a little thorny. But no worries, the three of us have concealed ourselves for so long, and now, it’s time to reveal our strengths. After this Hunting War, there will definitely be a spot for us in the top 10 of the Heavenly Ranking.” Another voice sounded out, it was also a faint laughter.

Up ahead of them was a slender figure and his gaze was indifferently looking towards the crater's direction. His faint voice was ice-cold with mockery.

"Let them deal with those Spiritual Pawns and, at that time, all we have to do is conclude it, as well as leave a hundred Spiritual Lights to express our gratitude."

"Haha, Big Brother is so generous."

Chapter 294 – Eliminate

Onom!

Just when the group charged towards the sea of spiritual lights, the massive Spiritual Pawn army sensed their undulated Spiritual Energies as some buzzing and cries resounded. Those Spiritual Pawns light figures also burst out at this moment, and headed towards the direction of Mu Chen and the group.

Although all those Spiritual Pawns don't have any intellect, they possessed keen perception for Spiritual Energies. The instant there was any Spiritual Energy ripples that appeared from their perceptive range, they would instantly start their assault.

Mu Chen narrowed his eyes as he faced the huge army of Spiritual Pawns. The amount of that army surpassed hundreds and as the Spiritual Energies resounded, the fluctuations that were emitting from them could not be belittled.

"Let's go!"

Mu Chen issued a faint bark as his pitch black Spiritual Energy became similar to smoke that swept out. He threw a punch that was infused with his blazing black Spiritual Energy flames. The instant they came into contact with the Spiritual Pawns, the flames had instantly broke their way through.

As those Spiritual Pawns broke down, faint scarlet spiritual lights were formed from them and were seized by Mu Chen. This harvest made an uncontrollable joy surface from his eyes. Prior to this, they had worked so hard to just obtain a few dozen Spiritual Lights. But once they reached here, their harvest was already so huge after a short moment.

Searching for gathering points was, indeed, the best way to harvest Spiritual Lights in the Hunting War.

Furthermore, Mu Chen's Spiritual Energy had merged with the

Nine Netherflames, which would even set alight Spiritual Energy. Henceforth, it was simply the best weapon to deal with the Spiritual Pawns, which were formed from Spiritual Energy.

At the rear, when An Ran and her group saw the violently charging Spiritual Pawns being wrecked by Mu Chen, they had astonishment surfacing in their eyes. Although the strength of those Spiritual Pawns was comparable to Heavenly Fusion Stage experts and were also considered easy to deal with, it was simply impossible for them, if they wanted to have such destructive effects like Mu Chen.

They took a glance at Mu Chen, before shifting their eyes to Luo Li. That girl closely followed beside Mu Chen as she held onto her longsword. Her sword wasn't drawn but a powerful and sharp sword aura had already charged towards those Spiritual Pawns, instantly destroying them. Her speed of eliminating those Spiritual Pawns wasn't any inferior to Mu Chen.

"How formidable..."

An Ran and her group looked at each other. Their speeds were way too inferior to Mu Chen, which made them to shake their heads as they bitterly smiled uncontrollably. Those two freshmen were simply too frightening.

At this point, there was already a disturbance caused by Mu Chen's big group in the crater with ocean-like Spiritual Energy. Aside from Mu Chen's side, the other three groups were also like ferocious tigers that had descended from the mountains. Furthermore, the charge of those three parties broke up the massive amount of Spiritual Pawns.

Due to the fact that they had more numbers, their efficiency wasn't too bad, but compared to Mu Chen and Luo Li's group of five, they were slightly weaker.

Everyone was doing all they could as they charged into the depths of the spiritual light ocean. As they're well aware of the

existence of the Spiritual Knights. As long as you killed a Spiritual Knight, the amount of Spiritual Lights that they would obtain would be comparable to thousands of Spiritual Pawns.

As they gradually advanced deeper, they started to feel some pressure as an endless amount of Spiritual Pawns would continuously charge towards them. As Spiritual Energies clashed, this also meant a huge exhaustion for them.

The other three groups seemed to have experience in such battles as they formed an arrowhead formation, which they would constantly take turns to withstand the largest impacts. As for those that backed down, they would make some adjustments before going up again.

However, even with their teamwork, their speeds of eliminating those Spiritual Pawns could not be comparable to Mu Chen and Luo Li.

As time passed, the speed of Mu Chen and the rest suddenly slowed down as they realised that even those Spiritual Pawns had sensed that the greatest threat came from them. Henceforth, more Spiritual Pawns started to gather towards them.

“They’re loosening the pressure to let us attract those Spiritual Pawns.” Luo Li’s eyes flickered as she said softly.

She could sense that the other three groups had slowed down their speed in dealing with Spiritual Pawns and as their speed slowed down, the Spiritual Pawns would naturally gather in their direction, who were the greatest threat to them.

“Those fellows are despicable!” An Ran and the other two girls said in anger. They had never thought that those fellows would actually play such a method secretly.

Mu Chen however, lightly smiled in reply. They were originally in a competition. Their so-called ‘cooperation relationship’ was extremely frail. The instant the rest saw their powerful strength,

they would naturally play some tactics.

“Since they want to head to the depths so quickly, then let them be. We just have to eliminate all the Spiritual Pawns here.” Mu Chen said calmly.

In fact, he wasn’t in a rush to get to the Spiritual Knight as he could sense powerful Spiritual Energy fluctuations coming from the depths. Clearly, those Spiritual Knights weren’t ordinary existences, either. If those three other groups intended on abandoning them to take down those Spiritual Knights, it would definitely not be an easy task.

When An Ran saw that Mu Chen still maintained his calmness, she nodded as she spoke no more and closely followed his lead. Thereafter, she started to store the Spiritual Lights that were formed from Spiritual Pawns that were killed by Mu Chen and Luo Li.

When Mu Chen’s group attracted the greatest pressure, the other three groups were, indeed, searching for an opportunity and burst forth, directly ripping apart those layers of Spiritual Pawns before quickly charging towards the depths.

Mu Chen glanced at their back figures from a distance, before retracting his sight. Not paying the slightest attention at them trying to eat those huge “cakes” as he set his mind on going all out with Luo Li to slaughter those Spiritual Pawns.

As time passed, more and more Spiritual Pawns were being wrecked under their hands. Turning into Spiritual Lights that were formed from majestic Spiritual Energies. Those Spiritual Light lingered around them before being quickly kept away by the An Ran trio.

“Mu Chen, we’ve already accumulated more than 800 Spiritual Lights!” As more and more Spiritual Lights were being taken by them, dense joy started to surface on their faces. More than 800 Spiritual Lights, this could already be considered as an ample

harvest.

When Mu Chen heard her words, he also lightly smiled as he swept his sight. The Spiritual Pawns in their region had clearly become thinner and thinner. From the looks of it, a majority of them were slaughtered by them.

Boom! Boom!

Suddenly, there was abrupt bursts of Spiritual Energy fluctuations at the depths of this region. A ring of Spiritual Energy fluctuations that were visible to the naked eye rippled out and even caused cracks to appear on the ground.

“Ahhhh!”

A shriek resounded from the location of the Spiritual Energy ripples, along with waves of violent Spiritual Energy ripples rippling out. Clearly, there was a bitter confrontation.

“Let’s head to the deepest parts.” When Mu Chen saw the situation, he waved his hand and changed his direction as he flew towards the depths. From the looks of it, the three other groups had already started their battle with the Spiritual Knight.

After experiencing the massacre, the amount of Spiritual Pawns in this region had decreased by a lot. Henceforth, Mu Chen and his lot could easily pass through and, very quickly, the scene at the depths appeared before their eyes.

The deepest region was a leveled ground and, at this moment, the three other teams were encircled by the majestic spiritual lights. Within the spiritual lights, there were seven to eight tall, yet fuzzy, light figures.

Those light figures were several feet in height, being several folds more robust compared to ordinary Spiritual Pawns. The Spiritual Energy fluctuations within their bodies were comparable to Heavenly Transformation Stage experts. Especially one of the light figures amongst them, as it had a more condensed figure. The

Spiritual Energy fluctuation coming from it had already reached Heavenly Transformation Stage Middle Phase.

“Seven Heavenly Transformation Stage Initial Phase and one Heavenly Transformation Stage Middle Phase.”

Even Mu Chen couldn’t help narrowing his eyes upon this sight. No wonder the three other teams were forced to such sorry states, so it turned out that their opponents had such powerful formations.

An Ran and the other two also sensed how fearsome those Spiritual Knights were, and their faces also changed, before An Ran spoke with a low voice, “What should we do?”

“We’ll wait.” Mu Chen’s face was calm, without any sign of helping them out. Since the three other parties liked to be first, then they can be the cannon fodder. In any case, it would even be troublesome for them, if they were to deal with the formation of the seven Heavenly Transformation Stage Initial Phase and one Heavenly Transformation Stage Middle Phase Spiritual Knights. So why not let those teams exhaust those Spiritual Knights?

Originally, he had planned on cooperating together and mutually share the harvest. Since the other party had intended on using them as bait, then he would, naturally, not be polite to them as well.

The three other teams saw the arrival of Mu Chen’s team and they felt happy. However, when they saw that Mu Chen had no signs of helping them, their faces became unnatural. They understood that Mu Chen was disgusted with their actions earlier on.

“Mu Chen, didn’t we come to an agreement of cooperating? Why aren’t you helping?” Chen Peng clenched his teeth as he barked, thickening the skin of his face.

The people in the two other parties had their face slightly

flushed. After all, they did not have such thick skin like Chen Peng and could only brace themselves to deal with the Spiritual Knights without speaking a word.

“Tsk, you guys were the ones that dump us earlier and had us attract all the firepower.” An Ran rebuked.

Chen Peng clenched his teeth and he could not say anything else. After all, he was also prideful and since his intentions were seen though, he naturally did not have any face to bed Mu Chen, but could only rebuke her words, “If we lose, you guys can deal with those Spiritual Knights, instead.”

Mu Chen smiled, but he wasn’t bothered by his words and continued to wait quietly for their defeat.

Boom! Boom!

The Spiritual Energy fluctuations in the field turned even more violent as the Spiritual Knights started their violent offense. As Spiritual Energy swept about, the three groups constantly had people flying out.

Their original battle formation also started to crumble.

Bang!

The Spiritual Knight whose strength had reached Heavenly Transformation Stage Middle Phase burst out as it ferociously clashed against Chen Peng with a lump of violent Spiritual Energy. The ground cracked and the latter’s face turned pale as he spurted a mouthful of blood.

“Retreat!”

Chen Peng finally could not endure it anymore as he barked while climbing up in a sorry state.

Hearing his bark, his team started to rapidly retreat. They understood that it was probably impossible for them to take down those Spiritual Knights.

As they retreated, the two other teams also immediately withdrew. However, once they got out of the Spiritual Knights' attack range, they stopped. Clearly, they were unwilling to leave this place.

"Mu Chen, it was our fault earlier on. However, it's impossible for you to take down those Spiritual Knights and can only join hands with us in order for us to benefit mutually." Chen Peng unwillingly said to Mu Chen. However, his tone of voice this time around was a lot more softer.

Although the two other groups did not voice their opinions, they clearly had the same thoughts.

Mu Chen indifferently glanced at them and, shortly after, he smiled. However, there wasn't any warmth in his smile.

"Who says that we're incapable of taking them down?"

Chapter 295 – Taking them down by ourselves

"Who says that we can't take them down by ourselves?"

When Chen Peng and the rest heard Mu Chen's indifferent words, they were startled. But, shortly after, he couldn't help sounding out, "Only two of you possess the strength to deal with Spiritual Knights. Could it be that the two of you will take down seven Heavenly Transformation Stage Initial Phase and one Heavenly Transformation Stage Middle Phase Spiritual Knights by yourself?"

There was clearly mockery in his speech. Although he had witnessed how formidable Luo Li was earlier on, it was clearly impossible for Mu Chen and Luo Li to deal with the Spiritual Knights formation.

Mu Chen only cast a glance at them and did not speak anymore nonsense. He shifted his gaze towards the few Spiritual Knights in the depth as he narrowed his eyes.

Indeed, that formation wasn't weak.

"Mu Chen, can we really deal with them by ourselves?" An Ran's low voice sounded out. Although she had witnessed the strength displayed by Mu Chen and Luo Li along their way there, she still felt worried when faced with such a formation.

Furthermore, with those fellows glaring like tigers watching their prey, the slightest error they make would arouse the greed in others.

"Rest assured."

Mu Chen smiled as he looked at Luo Li, "Can you deal with them for some time?"

Luo Li's gem-like pupils looked at Mu Chen as she replied,

“You’re going to lay out a Spiritual Array?”

“Our minds are, indeed, in sync.” Mu Chen gave her a thumbs up, making Luo Li’s face turn red as she gave him a displeased look. Even at this time, this fellow still had the mood to tease her.

“Can it be done?”

Luo Li’s hands tightly gripped her slightly unsheathed black longsword as she smiled. Her graceful figure stood before Mu Chen and withstood all the attacks that were directed at him.

When Mu Chen saw her actions, he smiled. With Luo Li by his side, he felt particularly at ease as he had absolute trust in her. Even if he were to remove all of his defenses.

His sight gave a warning glance towards the three other teams with ice-cold intent. Thereafter, he slowly shut his eyes and both of his hands started to form Spiritual Seals. Shortly after, the Spiritual Seals brought along Spiritual Energy ripples as they constantly took form on his palm.

“Spiritual Seals? He’s going to set up a Spiritual Array?!”

When the three group saw the surrounding Spiritual Seals forming around Mu Chen, they were instantly startled. They abruptly recalled that the latter still had the identity of a Spiritual Array Master.

The Spiritual Seals started to form around Mu Chen and, shortly after, an astonishing amount of Spiritual Energy ripples started to spread out.

The Spiritual Knights at the depths immediately sensed the Spiritual Energy fluctuations. A Spiritual Energy gale was formed as they turned into light figures and charged towards Mu Chen’s direction, along with tyrannical Spiritual Energy that ripped the ground apart.

Luo Li’s pupils stared at those Spiritual Knights that were charging over as cold intent started to crawl out from the depth of

her eyes. Her hands tightly clenched onto her sword hilt without any retreat as she took a step forth under An Ran and the other two girls' uneasy gazes.

"She's trying to obstruct so many Spiritual Knights all by herself?!" When Chen Peng saw the scene before them, his eyes instantly narrowed. Trying to intercept one Heavenly Transformation Stage Middle Phase and seven Heavenly Transformation Stage Initial Phase Spiritual Knights all by herself, wasn't this something that only someone with Heavenly Transformation Stage Late Phase strength could accomplish? Could this breathtaking girl with delicate cheeks possess that fearsome strength?

"Shhhhuuu!"

Luo Li did not pay any attention to their astonishment as she gripped her longsword and slashed down.

"Buzz!"

The dazzling sword light was like the first ray of morning sun as it ripped apart the darkness that illuminated the world. Thereafter, it brought along an unformidable momentum as it hacked the body of several Spiritual Knights at lightning speed.

Bang!

There was a huge crack on the ground, causing several Spiritual Knights to be pushed back a few hundred feet, Aside from that Spiritual Knight with Heavenly Transformation Stage Middle Phase strength, the remaining Spiritual Knights had lightly dulled down.

Clearly, that attack from Luo Li had caused them to be exhausted.

"How is that possible?!" The remaining group's hearts were alarmed as their gazes became a little dumbstruck as they looked at the slender girl clothed in black with silvery long hair. How was

the latter's strength so powerful?

Buzz!

Those Spiritual Knights did not have any sensation of pain and, henceforth, they quickly charged back towards their direction again. However, Luo Li casually brandished her sword towards their assault as a sword light shot forth. It formed into a sword light defense that could not be torn apart, no matter how those Spiritual Knights attacked.

Just when Luo Li was obstructing those Spiritual Knights, there were a hundred Spiritual Seals formed around Mu Chen. With a flick of his finger, those Spiritual Seals merged into the sky.

Spiritual Energy fluctuations started to spread out as Spiritual Energy threads started to construct an outline, forming into a complicated Spiritual Array that could cause others to feel dizzy from looking at it.

Light rays started to spread out as a gigantic black lotus slowly took form. A ferocious Spiritual Energy fluctuation started to spread out on this horizon.

"The Spiritual Array that had once withstood an attack from Li Xuantong?" When An Ran and the rest saw that huge black lotus Spiritual Array, their eyes immediately lit up. Back then, when Mu Chen had the Pact of Three moves with Li Xuantong, they were also present and, naturally, they witnessed the Spiritual Array that Mu Chen used to deal with Li Xuantong.

Bang! Bang!

The Spiritual Knights seemed to have sensed the powerful ripples that were being emitted from the Spiritual Array up in the sky and their attacks instantly started to be even more frantic and managed to force back the defense formed by Luo Li's sword light.

There wasn't any fluctuation in Luo Li's eyes as she looked at the Spiritual Knights that were pushing her back. Her hands clenched

a little tighter on her longsword as she gave a light smear on her sword sheath. Instantly, there was an extremely cold light that was revealed under the sword sheath.

“It’s all done.”

However, just when she was about to move, Mu Chen’s voice suddenly sounded from her rear. Luo Li lightly smiled as she loosened her grip on the sword sheath.

Mu Chen’s figure slowly rose up as he looked at the impatient Spiritual Knights. Shortly after, his handsigns changed as he issued a bark, “Butchering Demonic Lotus Spiritual Array!”

Boom! Boom!

As he barked, the huge black lotus Spiritual Spiritual Array started to slowly revolve. Spiritual Energy ripples spread out that caused even the air to be twisted.

Rustle!

The eight Spiritual Knights burst forth towards the Spiritual Array. Although they did not possess any intellect, they could still feel the great threat coming from the Spiritual Array.

Mu Chen indifferently glared at the charging Spiritual Knights. Shortly after, he lightly made a tap with his finger in the air. The black lotus gradually bloomed as a frightening Spiritual Energy gathered towards the heart of the lotus.

Shhhhuuu!

When Spiritual Energy was gathered to the limits, the black lotus shook and a black light shot forth from the heart of the lotus. The black light beam that pierced through the heavens clashed against the bodies of the eight Spiritual Knights.

Bang!

The black light beam ultimately hit against the ground, causing even the mountain range to tremble and the ground to be torn

apart. Ravines started to extend from the depths of the crater.

When the three groups saw this scene, they were startled to the point that even their faces turned pale. They immediately steadied their figures before directing their gazes towards the central region. There was a bottomless huge hole of roughly a few hundred feet. The pitch black colour made their hearts turn cold.

As for those eight Spiritual Knights that were at top of the bottomless hole, there was only one light figure floating in the air. The seven Spiritual Knights with strength of Heavenly Transformation Stage Initial Phase cultivation were instantly killed, and turned into deep red light balls that seemed like blazing flames as they floated in the air.

These were the spiritual lights formed by Spiritual Knights!

Looking at the seven blazing lumps of light, those from the other three groups instantly had their eyes turn scarlet red. The Spiritual Energy contained in those seven lumps of light was probably stronger then all of the Spiritual Pawns combined!

“Huuuu. Huuuu.”

Their breaths were heavy as they couldn’t help taking a step forth. However, in that instant when they took a step forth, a cold gaze shot towards them that caused their heads to clear up.

Up in the sky, Mu Chen’s expression was indifferent as he stared at those three groups who had their eyes turn red. Hundreds of Spiritual Seals appeared in his surroundings again.

With his current strength, clearly there wasn’t any difficulty to set up a Rank 4 Spiritual Array.

If those fellows before him didn’t know how to be tactful, he wouldn’t mind giving them another ruthless lesson.

When the three groups saw the Spiritual Seals around Mu Chen, they immediately stepped back. Honestly, they had no confidence in withstanding that powerful Spiritual Array from Mu Chen.

Furthermore, there was also a girl here that could easily obstruct the eight Spiritual Knights.

They exchanged a glance and could see the bitterness within each other's eyes. If they knew Mu Chen was so frightening to begin with, then they would have just cooperated with them properly. At least they would still have had a share of the harvest.

But, right now, they had aroused Mu Chen's disgust for them and they could clearly not get any more harvests.

Mu Chen indifferently swept an eye at them before retracting it. Thereafter, he looked at the last remaining light figure. That Spiritual Knight possessed the strength of a Heavenly Transformation Stage Middle Phase and, therefore, it was able to withstand that earlier attack from him. But, clearly, it had also suffered heavy injuries.

Buzz!

The Spiritual Knight floated up into the sky as it dimmed down. There was a sudden burst of buzzing sounds coming from its body and the seven blazing light lumps had shot towards that Spiritual Knight.

The seven other Spiritual Lights were actually absorbed by it!

Boom!

When the other seven light balls charged into that Spiritual Knight's body, a surge of violent Spiritual Energy abruptly swept out. Under the impact of that Spiritual Energy, it caused the stones that were within a radius of a thousand feet to be reduced to dust.

"It's strength is surging!" An Ran exclaimed. After absorbing the seven other spiritual lights, the Spiritual Knight's strength was constantly pressing towards Heavenly Transformation Stage Late Phase.

When Mu Chen saw this unforeseen event, his face slightly changed. However, just when he was about to step forth, Luo Li,

who was ahead of him, took the lead instead.

Her exquisite figure turned into a graceful streak of light as her hand gripped the sword hilt. She placed her hand onto the cold sword sheath and suddenly drew her sword.

Buzz!

A sword cry soared into the heavens and everyone could sense a frightening sword light streaking across the horizon.

Rumble!

A mountain peak from far away was sliced and the region that it had sliced became as smooth as a mirror.

Tingling.

Luo Li appeared behind the Spiritual Knight as the longsword in her hand was quietly sheathed. A sharp and crisp sound rippled out and the Spiritual Knight, whose strength was surging, burst open. Eight brilliant and abnormal light lumps whistled out.

Luo Li swept her hand and the eight dazzling light lumps fell into her hand as they appeared like deep scarlet blazing flames.

With just one sword, she instantly killed the Spiritual Knight whose strength was about to reach Heavenly Transformation Stage Late Phase.

Chapter 296 – The Three Brothers of the Wang Family

Up in the sky, the swift and fierce sword aura had already dispersed. However, the broken mountain peak was as smooth as a mirror, clearly showing how fearsome that sword from before was.

Not only the three other group and the An Ran trio, even Mu Chen was startled as he looked at the black-clothed girl. The might of that sword before was simply too fast and it was an instant after the Spiritual Knight, who had absorbed the seven other spiritual lights and was pushing forth to Heavenly Transformation Stage Late Phase, was killed before they could see what was going on.

That sword was considerably frightening.

Mu Chen sighed inwardly. Luo Li was, indeed, worthy of being the most talented genius in the Luo God Clan for the past thousand years. No wonder the Luo God Clan would place such a huge burden on her.

Not a single word was issued from the three other parties for a long time as their faces were slightly pale. When they looked at Luo Li, their eyes contained astonishment. So it turned out that the girl standing beside Mu Chen was the most frightening existence there.

If they were a little stirred from the spiritual lights of the Spiritual Knights, they no longer dared to have any thoughts of obtaining them at this moment. Just Mu Chen and Luo Li, alone, were sufficient to suppress all of them.

They looked at each other and bitterly smiled as they quietly backed off and retreated. They would only feel unhappy if they remained in this area; therefore, it’s best if they left quickly.

Mu Chen took a glance at their back figures, but no longer bothered with them.

Luo Li flew down from the sky and passed the eight floating lumps of light towards Mu Chen and lightly smiled, “These eight spiritual lights could be comparable to all the Spiritual Pawns in this region.”

Mu Chen grabbed a spiritual light. The Spiritual Light was a deep red colour and as the light rippled, it was like a blazing flame as it endlessly fluctuated with a powerful Spiritual Energy.

This Spiritual Light was too robust, compared to the Spiritual Light formed by all the Spiritual Pawns that he had obtained earlier on.

Especially the Spiritual Light that was formed from that Heavenly Transformation Stage Middle Phase Spiritual Knight. Within the scarlet abyss, there were traces of a faint purple light. This gave a moist sensation to the Spiritual Light. That was the embodiment of Spiritual Energy being sensed to an extent.

The greatest treasure in this gathering point was probably those eight Spiritual Lights.

Mu Chen’s eyes surfaced with satisfaction. They had not made their trip here in vain and their harvest at this gathering point could be considered as ample.

“Let’s split the eight Spiritual Knight’s Spiritual Lights.” Mu Chen glanced at the An Ran trio before passing three Spiritual Lights over to them.

The An Ran trio stared at the blazing Spiritual Light. Their snow white necks lightly trembled. However, An Ran lightly shook her head in the end and replied, “We’d only guided you here. Along our way here, we did not provide much help. You can forget about sharing those Spiritual Lights. If you don’t mind, can we just take half of the eight hundred Spiritual Lights?”

Although they wanted to obtain the Spiritual Knights’ Spiritual Lights, they weren’t greedy. In this trip, Mu Chen and Luo Li were

the ones that did most of the work. If they were to accept the Spiritual Knights' Spiritual Lights, it would be a little too much.

Mu Chen looked at the firm expression on An Ran's face and went silent. He no longer spoke and stored all of the Spiritual Knights' Spiritual Lights. "Then split the eight hundred Spiritual Lights amongst yourselves. Don't reject my suggestion. This was, after all, our first time into the Spiritual Light Realm and, hence, we aren't familiar with this place. Therefore, still have to rely the three of you for leading the way."

An Ran hesitated for a brief moment, but no longer rejected Mu Chen's offer. Although the eight hundred Spiritual Lights were precious, compared to the three Spiritual Knights' Spiritual Lights, there was still some differences between them.

An Ran and the other two girls were a little excited as they had not expected Mu Chen to be so generous.

"Let's go. There's no longer any more meaning in staying here." Mu Chen smiled. There was only a thin amount of Spiritual Lights in this region with quite a number of Spiritual Pawns still pacing about. However, Mu Chen did not have any intention of going after them. Upon obtaining the eight Spiritual Knights' Spiritual Lights, it was equivalent to them slaughtering few thousand ordinary Spiritual Pawns.

An Ran and the two girls nodded. With a wave of his hand, Mu Chen took the lead as he brought along Luo Li and flew out of the mountain range.

However, his figure rapidly slowed down as he landed on a hillside. His brows were slightly furrowed together as he looked ahead, it was the exit to this mountain range.

However, at the exit of this region, there were dozens of people groaning on the ground as they emitted miserable shrieks. Every single one of them had bloody noses and swollen faces to the point that even Chen Peng and the other two party's leaders were lying

on the ground in a sorry state. Their faces were pale as they gnashed their teeth, looking before them.

There was a huge rock over there with one person seated on it and two people lazily standing beside him, carrying a crescent blade on their shoulders as they smiled while looking at Chen Peng and the rest.

When Mu Chen and his team appeared, the three people's gazes were directed towards them. The two people that were standing had ruminating expressions, while the one seated had his eyes narrowed.

Mu Chen's expression was calm as he looked at this scene before him.

"It's the Trio Blade Monarchs!" When An Ran and the other two saw those figures that were carrying crescent blades on their shoulders, their faces abruptly changed.

"Trio Blade Monarchs?" Mu Chen was startled. Clearly, he had not heard of this name in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy in the past.

"Those three are brothers of the Wang Family. The leader is Wang Tong, Wang Lei is the second eldest and the third being Wang Zhong. They're extremely versed in blades and, therefore, they were given the name: Trio Blade Monarchs."

An Ran's face was a little grave as she said softly, "Those three brothers had once challenged Li Xuantong. However, they ended up losing and disappeared for a period of time. Rumor has it that they were butterly training in the Lightning Territory, intending to clear their disgrace. Therefore, no one has seen them in action for a year, but their strength is something that cannot be underestimated."

"They had once challenged Li Xuantong?" Mu Chen was a little astonished. It seemed that those three were extremely confident in

their strengths. Otherwise, why would they dare challenge Li Xuantong?

“Those three fellows are biological brothers and, hence, their coordination is connected at an extremely deep level with each other. No matter what opponent they encounter, the three of them would act together. Hence, they’re extremely hard to deal with, so let's not get into any conflict with them.” An Ran said with concern.

Those three fellows had undergone a year of bitter training, so their strength must have increased by a lot. If they were to have any conflicts with those three, it would definitely by an extremely troublesome matter to deal with.

“But they’re probably coming for us.” Mu Chen smiled. He, naturally, didn’t want to provoke any trouble, but there were still some trouble that would come at them. These three before them had clearly come here with bad intentions and it wouldn’t be easy for them to evade it.

“Haha, you guys have finally come out?”

When Mu Chen and An Ran were conversing, a youth with pitch-black skin grinned as he revealed his snow-white teeth. His arm trembled as the massive crescent blade chopped down in a swift and ferocious way. He stared at Mu Chen as he smiled, “We’ve been waiting half a day for you guys.”

An Ran’s face turned ugly. Indeed, those fellows were here for them.

“Is there anything I can help you with?” Mu Chen said with his brows frowned.

“Haha, nothing much. The three of us have had our eyes on this location, but you people took the lead before us, which is a little too rude.”

That particular youth smiled as he pointed his crescent blade

towards the people that were in a sorry state as he continued, “Can you cooperate with us? Hand over all your Spiritual Lights to us. Haha, but if you’re unwilling, I believe that the state of these people will disperse some of that mood.”

Mu Chen stared at the youth and, only after a long time later, did he lightly nod his head. He did not speak as he marched forward. Luo Li lightly smiled and followed closely behind him. An Ran and the other two, however, had cautious expressions as they kept their guards up with Spiritual Energy circulating within their bodies.

“Haha, interesting.”

When that youth saw the situation, he was also startled but, shortly after, he couldn’t stop smiling. He looked at the approaching Mu Chen and sighed, “It seems that the three of us have been training for so long that we even lost some prestige.”

Although he was smiling, there was cold intent emitting from his smile.

Rustle!

The crescent blade slightly rose and on the body of the blade, there was a flow of cold light. A sharp light travelled along the edge of the blade and, in the next instant, that youth’s eyes instantly turned cold. The body of the blade trembled and he immediately threw out an enraged slash.

Boom!

The ground before him was instantly torn apart by the overbearing blade of light. A ferocious light could be visibly seen ripping the ground apart as it flew towards Mu Chen at lightning speed.

The blade of light was rapidly expanding in Mu Chen’s sight as he stomped his feet.

Pitch-black Spiritual Energy blazed with black flames surging out

of Mu Chen's body. It was like a waterfall as it heavily clashed against the blade of light.

Bang!

The ground was torn apart and as the black flames surged, it managed to withstand the overbearing blade of light.

"Wang Tong, what are you guys doing?!" When An Ran saw that the other party was attacking, she immediately barked furiously.

The youth that was seated on the huge stone slowly raised his head as his gaze gathered onto Mu Chen and lightly smiled, "Indeed, you are worthy of being someone that could withstand three moves from Li Xuantong."

From his tone of voice, he had clearly heard of Mu Chen's achievements.

"We don't want to attack you, but we probably will, if you're unwilling to hand over the Spiritual Lights." The boss, Wang Tong looked at Mu Chen, before he looked towards Luo Li, who was by his side. He extended his finger and tapped towards her.

"However, you also have to hand her over to us. Rest assured, we won't do anything to her. We heard that Li Xuantong is fond of her and, therefore, we will deal with him using her."

Hearing his words, An Ran and the other two had a drastic change on their faces. Shortly after, they saw Mu Chen's face gradually turning cold and a penetrating chill was emitting from his body.

They looked at Mu Chen, who did not speak but gave others a feeling of their scalps tingling. They understood, this youth, who wasn't angry even when Chen Peng and the rest had used betrayal tactics, was truly enraged at this moment.

A dragon had it's reverse scales and those who touched it would welcome its wrath. The three brothers of the Wang Family had touched something of Mu Chen's that should never be touched.

Chapter 297 – Price

When the three Wang Brothers saw Mu Chen's expression turn dark, they brought their guards up as they tightened their grips on their weapons.

The one that's seated on the rock was the boss, Wang Tong. His slightly frowned his brows as he looked at Mu Chen, whose gaze turned cold from his words. He never expected that the latter would have such a reaction from his words.

"No wonder you guys are still the defeated foes."

Mu Chen raised his head. There weren't any ripples as he stared at the three before him. The smile on the corner of his face turned harsh and offensive, "Having ambitions yet, no strength. Perhaps Li Xuantong won't even consider you guys as his opponents."

When Mu Chen said those words, the Wang Brothers' faces turned ugly as veins popped out from their arms. Their gazes were cold as they fixed onto Mu Chen. The latter's words had torn open the scar in their hearts.

Back then, when the three of them had come to the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, they were arrogant and prideful. So, naturally, they were unwilling to be ordinary and, hence, they joined hands and challenged Li Xuantong, who was already an influential figure in the academy. However, the outcome was that they miserably lost. On the contrary, Li Xuantong, from back then, didn't have the attitude of a winner and only lightly cast a glance at them before leaving.

His indifferent gaze left a deep impact the Wang Brothers. From then on, they kept a low-profile and bitterly cultivated. Right now, their strength had soared to the point that they could even try charging into the top 10 of the Heavenly Ranking. They believed that if they were to encounter Li Xuantong again, they would be able to wash their disgrace away.

“Aren’t you courting death?” Wang Lei, whose face was blackened, had the most furious temper as he roared while staring at Mu Chen viciously.

“A Quasi-Heavenly Transformation Stage newcomer actually dared to behave so impudently before we three brothers? It seems that you’ve gained quite a bit of confidence in receiving those three moves from Li Xuantong.” Wang Zhong sneered as he ridiculed.

“It seems like you have a huge repercussion to my words.” Wang Tong’s gaze was still as cold as before. Shortly after, his gaze dropped and added, “However, since you’ve already said those words, then you, naturally, have to pay the price for your words. I hope that you’ll be able to pay the price for it.”

Bang!

As he shouted, Wang Lei, whose temper was the most furious, grinned. His hands abruptly gripped onto that sharp crescent blade. He took a step forth as astonishing Spiritual Energy ripples soared out.

“Heavenly Transformation Stage Middle Phase!” The face of An Ran and the two other girls changed. No wonder the Wang Brothers were so arrogant, it turned out that their strengths had underwent such improvements!

With the three of them having Heavenly Transformation Stage Middle Phase’s strength, in addition to their well coordinated cooperation, they could even fight with Heavenly Transformation Stage Late Phase experts. No wonder they dared to seek trouble with Li Xuantong the moment they finished their training.

“Brat, as long as you’re willing to hand over all of your Spiritual Lights, as well as that girl, everything will be fine. However, since you’re unable to understand what’s best for you, don’t blame me for being too heavy with my moves!”

Wang Lei clenched his crescent blade as his figure moved. He was

like a streak of lightning as he appeared above Mu Chen. Both of his hands were holding the crescent blade as he issued a bark. Brilliant lightning flashes abruptly extended from the blade, along with the deep roars of resounding thunder.

“Roaring Thunder Slash!”

As he shouted, an overbearing lightning blade flew down like a violent light as it shrouded Mu Chen, along with a few feet in radius.

Mu Chen raised his head as the lightning light was reflected in his black pupils.

Boom!

The lightning blade viciously hit on the spot that Mu Chen was standing, causing the ground to tremble. Cracks that were like a spider’s web extended from the spot that the blade had landed.

“Mu Chen!” When An Ran and the other two saw Mu Chen being hit by that blade, they immediately exclaimed out.

Luo Li, who was close by, however, didn’t panic in the slightest. But even so, her hands had held onto her sword grip. Luo Li’s pupils were cold as she stared at Wang Tong and Wang Zhong.

“Collapsed after the first blow. I wonder, how did you withstand the three moves from Li Xuantong?” Up in the sky, Wang Lei’s hands held onto his crescent blade as he stood with pride. He looked at the ground that was covered in smoke and dust as he couldn’t help casting the corner of his mouth aside. That kid could not even avoid that one move of his, how did he get the courage to put on such an act before them?

“Really?”

An indifferent laugh, along with a chill, abruptly resounded from the rear of Wang Lei. His face instantly changed as the crescent blade in his hands slashed towards his rear with an overbearing blade of light.

Pitch-black Spiritual Energy was blazing with black flames as it surged like smoke while bringing along blazing ripples and swept out. It had directly clashed against the blade of light without dodging.

Clank!

The sound of metal colliding resounded as sparks flew. Wang Lei's hands, which were gripping his crescent blade, trembled. His blade that was covered with the lightning's blade of light had actually dulled under the attacks of the pitch-black Spiritual Energy.

Bang! Bang!

However, before he could feel astonished, the figure before him charged over. That figure was covered in pitch-black Spiritual Energy as his fists, elbows and legs turned into a fighting machine. The attacks were like tidal waves as they swept towards him in all directions.

Such ferocious attacks had instantly caused Wang Lei to be at a loss. As he defended, he clearly became in a little sorry state. Blazing and violent Spiritual Energy poured into his body on the spots that were attacked, causing massive destruction inside his body as pain was felt from his meridians and muscles.

Beneath him, the An Ran trio, along with all the teams that were disposed of by the Wang Brothers, had all widened their mouths as they looked at the scene up in the sky. In nearly an instant, that Wang Lei, who was still coldly smiling and proud of himself, had fallen into a disadvantageous position.

With this kind of face-to-face confrontation, Mu Chen, whose strength was just at the Quasi-Heavenly Transformation Stage, had actually suppressed Wang Lei, whose strength had reached Heavenly Transformation Stage Middle Phase, completely!

Dong!

Up in the sky, the black streak of light had viciously clashed with the flickering lightning light. The Spiritual Energy fluctuations were like ripples as they spread out. Shortly after, the figure that was shrouded in lightning light flew out in a sorry state. As the lightning light weakened, it revealed Wang Lei's face, which was filled with disbelief.

By relying on the robust strength of his Heavenly Transformation Stage Middle Phase's Spiritual Energy, he was actually unable to defeat Mu Chen?

Rustle!

As he was slightly absent-minded from the disbelief, that ghostly figure had, once again, appeared in the sky. Thereafter, that figure threw a fist down as pitch-black Spiritual Energy became similar to an erupting volcano as it brought forth a powerful mountain-crushing strength.

Dang!

As Wang Lei fluttered, he immediately used his crescent blade to withstand that strike. Thereafter, he felt a surge of overbearing and blazing Spiritual Energy violently invading it. Under the corrosion of the Spiritual Energy, the light on the crescent blade had instantly dulled down.

Spiritual Energy surged out as Wang Lei had turned into a meteor and fell down, and ferociously shot into the ground. In an instant, the ground trembled as smoke and dust surged out. The ground was cracked into a huge hole. Wang Lei was lying in the crater in a sorry state with a trace of blood at the corner of his mouth.

Pfffft.

He puffed out a mouthful of blood as his eyes were filled with disbelief.

"Do you now understand how I managed to withstand the three moves from Li Xuantong?" A voice without much emotional

ripples sounded out before him. When he raised his head, he saw Mu Chen, who was standing close by. On the surface of the latter's body, there was a faint silvery light as his black pupils became as cold as a couple of blades.

His face abruptly changed as his figure immediately retreated.

Rustle!

Mu Chen did not let him off easily and he took a step forth. A dragon roar seemed to resound out along with that step of his. In a flash, he had already appeared before Wang Lei.

"You dare?!"

When Wang Tong and Wang Zhong saw that Mu Chen was pressing hard, they did not hold back in the slightest and abruptly barked out. However, just when they were about to take a step out, a clear sword cry sounded out. A surge of sword aura that could even cause the heavens and earth to tremble had fixed onto them.

That sword aura was extremely sharp and made both of their faces change. When they turned around, they saw Luo Li staring at them. The black longsword in her hand was halfway unsheathed and the sword aura was being emitted from this.

Wang Tong and Wang Zhong's faces thoroughly turned grave. They finally understood that this young girl before them wasn't as easy to deal with as they had imagined.

Bang!

A solemnly groan had sounded out before them as a figure had sorrily flew back. Thereafter, it had ferociously shot into the huge rock beneath their feet, instantly causing the huge rock to crumble down.

Wang Lei was in a sorry state, puffing out a mouthful of blood. They looked at the youth that was slowly making his way over and there was finally some shock within their eyes.

They had stepped on the wrong spot this time!

Although they had never belittled Mu Chen before, they never expect that this freshman would be so hard to deal with.

“If this is the extent of your ability, then don’t go look for Li Xuantong and embarrass yourself.”

Mu Chen indifferently looked at the Wang Brothers as he looked down, “Bring out some capabilities. One has to pay the price for the words they speak. These words are from you, so I believe that you guys will understand this better.”

Wang Tong’s gaze was dark as he made a grip with his hand and a crescent blade had appeared with a flash. He stamped the blade into the ground as a blade of light soared out. Even the clouds were split apart by the sharpness of his blade of light.

“What a huge tone. I admit that I’ve misjudged you. However, you still do not possess the capability to make us three brothers admit defeat!”

Wang Tong’s gaze was sharp as he took a step forward. That soaring blade of light turned so ferocious that even the ground had scattered and smashed.

“I’ll have a look at what price you will make us three brothers pay today!”

“This was originally prepared to defeat Li Xuantong. But, right now, we’ll serve you with it. I’ll see if you have the ability to withstand it!”

He tightly gripped his crescent blade and, behind him, Wang Lei and Wang Zhong’s gazes turned vicious. The three of them held onto the huge blade as the overbearing sword light spread out. Vaguely, there was a deep and low thunderous rumble resounding between the heavens and earth.

Chapter 298 – Battling the Three Wangs

Boom!

At the entrance of the mountains, there seemed to be thunderclouds gathering up in the sky. Deep and low rumbles of thunder resounded between the heavens and earth as a violent blade light soared into the heavens. The momentum became more ferocious as if all of the lightning had been gathered together.

Even though the Wang brothers didn't have that much of a reputation in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, their strength was something that could not be underestimated. At the beginning, when they dared to challenge Li Xuantong, this was already sufficient to prove it.

If it was someone that had no foundation to be based on, why would they dare to challenge him? Wouldn't that be the same as asking to shame themselves?

And since the Wang brothers had hidden themselves in bitter cultivation, their strengths had undergone huge improvements. Their strengths could not be considered as being what it was a year ago. Likewise, this boosted their confidence in challenging Li Xuantong.

As long as they could defeat Li Xuantong, they would become the biggest black horse and become an influential figure in the academy. When that happened, all the time that they had spent on keeping themselves hidden would have been completely worth it.

But, right now, they had already met up with Mu Chen, who was also difficult to deal with, before they even met up with Li Xuantong. If they could not even resolve the former, how could they go and challenge Li Xuantong?

Therefore, they definitely had to truly defeat Mu Chen!

Therefore, they had to let everyone know that whoever dared to

challenge the three of them would only end up being defeated!

A chill surged out from the Wang brothers' eyes. The three of them were holding onto their crescent blades and the blades looked as though they were made from lightning. They flickered with lighting as the rampaging lightning energy was being emitted.

The current them looked as though they were thunderclouds from the sky as they resonated.

When the An Ran trio saw the battle formation of the Wang Brothers, their faces uncontrollably changed as they roared with anger, "Wang Tong, aren't the three of you too shameless? The three of you are acting together to deal with a freshman?!"

Wang Tong's face dulled as he rebutted, "It was known to everyone that the three of us are used to working together. It doesn't matter if we're dealing with someone stronger or weaker, the three of us will still go together."

"You!" An Ran clenched her teeth.

Wang Tong's gaze was cold as he looked at Mu Chen and slowly said, "As long as you comply with everything we demanded earlier, perhaps I won't haggle with you about how impudent you were before."

Mu Chen stared at Wang Tong as the corner of his lips rose. He slowly stepped forth and said with a light voice, "The truth is, I also wish to tell you that one can't act so impudently."

"Haha."

Wang Tong laughed from the anger as his gaze turned even colder. He no longer spoke to Mu Chen as he circulated all of the Spiritual Energy within his body. With their three strengths combined, their demeanor looked as though they had been condensed together as an astonishing Spiritual Energy pressure started to spread, enshrouding Mu Chen.

Luo Li said lightly, “Do you want the both of us to go together?”

“Support me, then.”

Mu Chen smiled. If he was, indeed, unable to contend with his opponents, then he wouldn’t put up a strong front and reject Luo Li’s help. But, clearly, the Wang brothers didn’t possess that qualification to force Mu Chen to that step.

“Okay.” Luo Li gently smiled. She did not insist as she was well aware that Mu Chen had always been calm and rational. He wouldn’t do anything like putting up a strong front on purpose. Since he would confront them, then he, naturally, had the confidence to do so.

Luo Li lightly retreated as she moved out of the battlefield. The An Ran trio immediately crowded around her and anxiously asked, “Can Mu Chen do it alone?”

“Senior Sister Apprentice An Ran can rest assured.” Luo Li lightly smiled as she said to comfort her. She directed her gaze towards that figure who didn’t look sturdy, but was able to make others feel at ease. The gentleness that was shown on her exquisite face immediately made the An Ran trio become absent-minded just from looking at her as they exclaimed in their hearts. ‘No wonder someone as talented as Li Xuantong would fall in love for her. Such elegance could not be seen on a second person in the entire Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.’

However, looking from the current situation, Luo Li clearly already had someone else in her heart and Li Xuantong probably could not have his wish fulfilled.

Rumble!

Powerful Spiritual Energy impacts constantly surged from the bodies of the Wang brothers as they reduced the huge rocks on the ground to dust. They tightly clenched their crescent blade as the lightning became even more dense.

Up in the sky, thunderclouds were wiggling about as a lightning bolt abruptly lit up the entire region.

Boom!

As the lightning illuminated the horizon, the gaze of the Wang brothers had instantly turned into the look of predators as each of them issued a deep and low roar. The three of them burst out in an instant with a semi-circle formation and flew towards Mu Chen.

Their bodies were shrouded in lightning as they moved with extremely fast speed. Looking from afar, it looked as though three lightning bolts had streak across the sky. Causing even the air to tremble as they let loose deep and low thunderous rumbles.

“Lightning Blade!”

As the three of them barked, they raised their blades simultaneously and threw a slash down. The ground was torn apart and a ravine was opening up. The three lightning crescent blades slammed towards Mu Chen without any mercy.

Those three blades of light were extremely tricky as they sealed a majority of Mu Chen’s escape routes, forcing him to fight them head on.

Mu Chen looked at the brilliant lightning as a cold light smeared across his black pupils. Spiritual Energy surged and he moved forward, turning into a soaring dragon image as a dragon’s roar resounded.

Rustle!

The dragon’s roar echoed as the three lightning blades fell on the spot that Mu Chen was standing before. The earth cracked, but Mu Chen’s figure had already disappeared.

“What fast speed!”

The Wang brothers’ eyes turned cold. Previously, when Mu Chen fought with Wang Lei, he used this abnormal speed to toy around

with the latter.

“Left side!”

Wang Tong narrowed his eyes as he abruptly issued a bark. When he barked, the three brothers displayed astonishing rapport. Blades of light with lightning instantly slashed towards the left direction.

Bang!

The earth cracked once again and a fuzzy figure had disappeared.

The lighting strike was, once again, dodged by Mu Chen.

“Be careful, he’s trying to defeat one of us by using his speed!”

Wang Tong barked. He seemed to have seen through Mu Chen’s intentions. The three brothers’ were extremely well-coordinated with one another. If any one of them were to be defeated, their coordination would also be affected. Among the three of them, the third brother, Wang Zhong was the weakest. When Mu Chen appeared on the left side, he should be targeting Wang Zhong.

Rustle!

However, when Wang Tong’s bark sounded out, his pupils shrank. A fuzzy shadow had already appeared on the right.

“He was actually targeting me!” Wang Tong’s gaze turned cold. Among the three of them, he was the most powerful. But Mu Chen was actually targeting him, how stupid!

Boom!

Just when Mu Chen’s figure had appeared, before Wang Tong could even speak, Wang Lei and Wang Zhong’s tricky blades of light had already come crashing down towards Mu Chen, who was moving at lightning speed.

Clank!

However, just when the blades of light were about to close in on

Mu Chen, the latter's body burst forth with a blade of light that instantly took the form of a black pagoda. As it flickered, a fluctuating black light was actually withstand the attack from the other two.

"Lighting Python Blade Art!"

Wang Tong's eyes were sharp as he yelled. The crescent blade shined with lightning. It was like a huge lightning python as it whistled towards Mu Chen.

"Break!"

Mu Chen coldly smiled. Faced with Wang Tong's ferocious attack, not only did he not retreat, his handsigns changed and he threw a palm out.

A majestic Spiritual Energy was sent out as it formed into a starry sky behind Mu Chen. A gigantic white tiger stood on the starry sky as it roared. Space was being ripped apart as it brought along a torrential killing aura and ruthlessly charged towards the lightning python blade.

With Mu Chen's current strength, it was, naturally, smooth and easy for him to execute the Divine Seal of the White Tiger without any difficulties.

Bang!

The white tiger roared as it heavily clashed against the lightning python. A killing aura surged forth and the lightning python, which contained lightning energy, was torn apart.

Wang Tong's face finally changed. His attack was something that not even Heavenly Transformation Stage Middle Phase experts could withstand. However, he never expected that it would collapse so easily under one of Mu Chen's attacks.

"That fellow had actually cultivated a Deity Tier Spiritual Art?!" Wang Tong's eyes turned dark.

Dang!

The white tiger tore the lightning python apart, but there wasn't any decrease in demeanor. It continued to exude a killing aura as it pounced towards Wang Tong. The white tiger heavily clashed against his crescent blade, which was flickering with lightning. The sound of metal clashing resounded. Both of Wang Tong's feet were on the ground, but he was knocked back a few hundred meters. The huge trees that were along the way crumbled.

"Big Brother!"

Wang Lei and Wang Zhong's faces changed as they witnessed Wang Tong losing to Mu Chen in face-to-face confrontation.

"How formidable!" The An Ran trio, as well as the three other groups, had their faces filled with fright. Chen Peng and the fellow leaders, however, had their faces filled with shock. Mu Chen was fighting three enemies all by himself; and yet, he could still grasp the loophole in their coordination, and send Wang Tong, the strongest brother, back. This kind of strength was a little frightening.

Dong!

Wang Tong stomped his feet on the ground, causing the earth to crack. He forcefully stabilised his body as fresh blood dripped from the hand that was used to hold his crescent blade. His eyes turned even colder.

"Don't think that only you have cultivated a Deity Tier Spiritual Art!"

Lightning flickered across his eyes as he took a step forward. His figure soared as a brilliant Spiritual Energy, containing lighting, surged from his body and linked with the thunderclouds up in the sky.

Shhhhhhuuu!

When Wang Lei and Wang Zhong saw that, they soared into the

sky, as well, as they circulated all the Spiritual Energy within their bodies. At the same time, a similar lightning shot from them and linked with the lump of thunderclouds.

Thunder roared between the heavens and earth, causing the sky to darken as a violent wind howled and lightning flashed.

Clearly, the Wang brothers were forced to the point that they had to reveal their trump card.

“Mu Chen, if you’re able to withstand this, then the three of us will concede!”

Wang Tong’s face was illuminated by the ferocious lightning. He coldly barked and, shortly after, the thunderclouds were torn apart as a huge lightning bolt shot down from the heavens, and landed on the huge blade in his hand.

As for the other two, they were both like lightning beasts as their bodies emitted lightning energy.

The three of them took a step forth, causing the heavens and earth to lose their colours. This was like the anger of a Thunder God. They dazzled with lightning as they formed into three huge lightning blades that were a few hundred feet in size. Thereafter, they ripped apart the heavens and earth as they shot towards Mu Chen with extremely fearsome might.

At the same time, the three brothers issued a bark that was like a thunderous rumble that resounded between the heavens and earth.

“Thunder God’s Nine Layers of Heaven!”

Chapter 299 – Might of the Thunder God Physique

The entire world seemed to turn dark and gloomy. Violent and wild sounds of thunder rippled throughout the skies, causing the might of thunder the fill the world.

Three resplendent and wild arcs of lightning ripped the skies with incomparable power, enveloping a thousand foot radius around Mu Chen.

They were simply undodgeable.

An Ran and the rest were startled by Wang Tong and his brothers till their faces turned slightly pale. It's no wonder why these three fellows dared to challenge Li Xuantong. With such a terrifying attack, the only thing a Heavenly Transformation Late Stage expert could do was dodge!

Not far away, Chen Peng and the other two squads climbed up and hurriedly fled the area, all afraid to be affected by such a terrifying attack. At the beginning of the hunting battle, they had some confidence in themselves. However, not long after it started, they had already met up with so many ferocious people.

They knew that the appearance of such a ferocious person was only just an omen. At the later stages, there might more and more of those kinds of people, black horses that had concealed their strengths this whole time and were biding their time to show a brilliant feat.

As for them, they would drown under the surging waves of black horses.

After looking at each other's astringent expressions, they could only bitterly shake their heads. They had assumed that they had pretty good strength. They never thought that once those hidden black horses truly showed up, they would become so normal and

plain.

Their gazes converged on the youth that was surrounded by thousands of lightning arcs. Facing such a terrifying attack, exactly what outcome would he end with...?

At this moment, it was obvious that Mu Chen did not have any spare energy left to care about their gazes. Raising his head, he looked towards the lightning arcs running across the skies. A sliver of icy graveness started to condense within those black pupils of his.

“Blade glows that contained the might of lightning?” he muttered to himself. It’s said that the trio had been bitterly training in the Lighting Territory for a very long period of time. This had resulted in their Spiritual Energy having the might of lightning mixed within. At the same time, the divine art that they trained in had connections with thunder and lightning. When fused and displayed, their might had turned even more wild and violent.

The glow from the lightning reflecting on his pupils, Mu Chen suddenly clenched his fists tightly. The next moment, a faint glowing layer of silver had, unexpectedly, started to gradually appear on the surface of his body.

Under the silvery glowing skin, there seemed to be the same lightning light sparkling within.

This was the “Thunder God Physique”, the reward that Mu Chen obtained from the mysterious bald old man after he successfully received a single strike from him. This “Thunder God’s Body” was obviously a part of an even stronger body refining Deity Tier Spiritual Art. Although it wasn't complete, Mu Chen could already feel how extraordinary it was.

Mu Chen’s mind sank as a ball of light, which appeared to be a lightning pearl, started to flow along his meridians. This lighting pearl was refined by Mu Chen within the Eighth Level of the

Lightning Territory.

Floating on the surface of the silver lightning pearl was a black-coloured lightning pearl about half the size of it. Compared to the silver lightning pearl, it appeared to be very plain, with its surface full of potholes. However, Mu Chen knew just how terrifying this black lightning pearl was. This black lightning pearl was the end result of the condensed might of lightning from the divine black lightning.

Naturally, while helping the Nine Netherbird resist the last remnant of the divine black lightning, he had also crazily displayed his Thunder God Physique to its limits. Absorbing the strength of that divine black lightning, it had condensed within his meridians into this small black lightning pearl.

However, after successfully condensing it, till now, Mu Chen did not dare to casually utilize it. He knew that once he displayed the strength of the divine black lighting contained within, he would incur some rather big troubles.

Forming a lighting pearl within one's body was a result of training the "Thunder God Physique". Yet, Mu Chen did not dare to casually utilize it.

Mu Chen scanned the black lightning pearl with his mind, before locking onto the silver lightning pearl. With a thought, the lightning pearl suddenly turned in a scorching sun as it released an resplendent lightning light.

Thump!

Within a seemingly deep and muffled bang, the silver lightning pearl violent shattered. When it shattered, the respondent might of thunder exploded like a raging tide, flowing wildly and crazily along Mu Chen's meridians.

Chi! Chi!

Mu Chen's body seemed to instantly sparkle with a silvery light.

The crack of thunder appeared within his black pupils.

“Thunder God Physique – Indestructible and Unextinguishable!”

A low roar resounded within Mu Chen’s mind as the lightning light around his body exploded outwards. He felt the wild frightening power that seemed to want to shatter him apart. Unable to bear it, he faced the sky and roared. His roar was akin to the thunder, going so far as to mask the peals of lightning striking in the skies.

Bang!

With a step forward, the entire world seemed to instantly shatter and collapse. Gigantic fissures rapidly extended from under his feet. Within a dozen short breaths, an area of three thousand metres in circumference was scattered and smashed apart.

Whoosh!

As the world fissured apart, Mu Chen had explosively shot forward, like a bolt of lightning. Under the astonished and shocked gazes from the surroundings, he dashed head-on towards the gigantic lightning light blades!

Instead of adopting any method of evasion, he had actually used the most visually impactful way and rushed straight towards the lightning light blades!

Seeing such a vicious attitude displayed by Mu Chen, the mouths of Chen Peng and many other people were slightly agape. Isn’t this slightly too overbearing?

“You’re looking to die!”

The furious cries of Wang Tong and the other two could seemingly be heard above the horizon. Mu Chen’s actions were simply the greatest insult towards them.

Therefore, the peals of lightning turned more violent and wild.

Bang!

The speed of the lighting light blades were too fast. Within a few breaths, they had already collided violently against the silvery glowing figure.

At the instant of the collision, the heavens seemed to tremble and shiver.

Roar!

The lightning light blades expanded in an earth-shattering manner as if they wanted to split the heavens and earth apart. Within the lightning light blades that blotted the skies, the glowing silvery figure appeared extremely tiny and insignificant, as if it was struggling just to survive.

Creak! Crack!

The sharp lightning light blades sliced at Mu Chen's body, however no slash wounds were formed. It was as if they were slicing against metal, only resulting in faint white lines.

Mu Chen looked at the wild lightning surrounding his entire body before slowly breathing in a deep breath of air. The glow surrounding him turned all the more resplendent and bright. As for the might of lightning that was sliced apart by the lightning light blades, all of them were sucked straight into his body with his utilization of the "Thunder God Physique".

The mysteries of the "Thunder God Physique" was obviously something that was too farfetched for the trio to be able to understand.

Chi! Chi!

At this time, Mu Chen had already utilized the "Thunder God Physique" to its maximum capability. One his arms became as bright as silver while the lightning that seemed to have substance arc acrossed it. An indescribably wild and explosive fluctuation started to ripple and oscillate.

"Bang!"

Within an indifferent expression, Mu Chen's arm suddenly vibrated. In the next instant, a fist rumbled towards the devastation-causing lightning light blades.

Boom!

The gigantic rumble of thunder cracking furiously resounded through the skies. Everyone could see the silvery glowing figure within the devastating lightning light blades suddenly turning extremely eye-blindingly bright.

This was followed by an exceptionally devastating fluctuation, which started to oscillate in ripples.

Seeing and feeling what had happened before them, the pupils of the brotherly trio suddenly contracted.

At this moment, the devastating lightning light blades suddenly froze. In the next instant, everyone was dumbfounded to see light waves, akin to cracks, completely running across each lightning light blade.

Ping!

A sound akin to glass breaking, a silvery light akin to the thunder god's spear piercing the heavens and earth; the lightning light blades were thoroughly destroyed, before the rumbling sounds of thunder crashing expanded out. Scattering about, they were, unexpectedly, thoroughly dissipating into thin air.

As the lightning light blades dissipated, a silvery light slowly started to converge and condense, before transforming into a tall and thin figure.

"How is this possible!?"

The trio had incredulous expressions as they looked at the figure that appeared. At this time, Mu Chen's clothing had already been ripped to shreds. His silvery skin had arcs of lightning travelling across it while a frightening power radiated from him, as if his body was encasted in lightning.

“Retreat!”

Wang Tong was the first to regain clarity. Suppressing the shock he felt in his heart, he loudly roared.

As his words rang out, the trio explosively retreated, seemingly, at the same time. The power that Mu Chen possessed had exceeded their expectations. They never thought that their combined attack was incapable of dealing with him. With their current strength, it was already not enough to threaten the power that he possessed.

Since that was the case, it was better to quickly leave this place.

The trio’s fast and direct actions made quite a few people feel somewhat shocked and astonished. This fellow was truly firm and decisive.

“Leaving without even paying any price? Don’t you think walking off like this would be too discourteous?”

Mu Chen looked at the rapidly retreating figures. As that ordinary voice that held the roars of thunder rang out, he took a step forward. With the roar of a dragon and thunder resounding out, his figure instantaneously disappeared.

“Careful!”

Wang Tong’s face violently warped as he noticed that Mu Chen’s speed had increased!

“Being careful is also useless!”

A cold voice rang out from behind Wang Tong. A startled expression flashed past his eyes, before the crescent blade in his hands instantly slashed out.

Bang!

A palm that seemed to be formed by lightning extended out and directly grabbed and held onto the sharp body of the blade. In the next instant, a foot kicked out, carrying along an arc of lightning, before violently striking Wang Tong’s chest without any mercy.

Puff!

Wang Tong spewed a mouthful of blood as his body rapidly shot down, before violently drilling into the ground with an enormous explosion.

“Big brother!” shouted Wang Lei and Wang anxiously.

“Since you two wish to accompany him, down you go!”

Lightning sparkled and flashed as Mu Chen’s figure appeared behind Wang Lei again like a spectre. Using the crescent blade in his hand like a stick, he violent swung down and furiously smashed it against the waists of the two men.

Bang! Bang!

Wang Lei and Wang Zhong sorrowfully shot down and created two new large holes in the ground.

Hiss!

Chen Peng and his group looked towards the three gigantic holes in the ground. There, the trio were lying down, spewing mouthfuls of blood. They were in extremely pitiful states, and there was not a trace of the previous brashness and arrogance from before.

“This fellow… is also too terrifying…”

All of them swallowed mouthfuls of saliva before raising their heads. In the air was the youth, sparkling with rays of lightning as he slowly descended. The lightning light dissipated, and his body started to regain its original colour.

This time, the gazes coming from them had an addition of respect and rejoice. Thank god they had not overly offended Mu Chen; if they did, their ending might have been the same as the trio.

Mu Chen ignored their gazes and remained indifferent as he descended. With a flick of his fingers, the crescent moon blade turned into a ray of light and violent impaled the ground before the trio, sinking over a metre deep.

The trio looked at the vibrating blade as their faces turned slightly pale.

Dusting off his hands, Mu Chen stared at them with a faint smile on his face. Except, that smile made the trio feel a chill all over their bodies.

“Next up, let’s have a nice talk about the so-called ‘price’.”

Chapter 300 – Extremely Dangerous Grade

The trio's faces turned deathly pale as they looked towards Mu Chen, who had a faint smile and was staring at them. They had a faint sensation of their scalp getting numb, as the scene they had witnessed caused them to feel slightly absent-minded. Even under the collaboration of the three, they were actually beaten by the youth whose strength was just at the Quasi-Heavenly Transformation Stage.

"How is he that strong!?"

Words of bitterness and pain spewed out of the mouths of the trio. They had bitterly trained for a year, and were certain that they would definitely be able to demonstrate their extraordinary talents after coming out of their isolated training. However, who would have thought that they would meet such a cruel and vicious character not long after the start of the hunt?

It was said that this fellow had just entered the Northern Heavens Spirit Academy half a year ago. However with the capabilities that he had demonstrated today, even all those outstanding seniors would be left eating his dust.

This fellow would absolutely have the strength to break into the top five rankings of the Heavenly Ranking!

What a monster!

The trio felt slightly disheartened, as the arrogance within their hearts was finally smashed and broken into bits. They once bragged about themselves being geniuses. However, when they were truly compared to a person like Mu Chen, they were tossed far far away.

"What do you want?" After all, Wang Tong was the eldest. Forcing himself to focus, he clenched his teeth and look towards Mu Chen and asked.

“Although I don’t truly want your pitiful lives in this place, I can beat you three till you’re half-dead. You three should automatically transfer out of this Spiritual Light World. If you three do so, you will lose the qualifications for the Spiritual Light Empowerment.” said Mu Chen with a smile as he sat down on the huge cliff before the trio; however, his voice did not have any warmth in it.

The trio’s faces’ turned white again, as they had chosen to unleash their abilities during the hunt all for the purpose of achieving the Spiritual Light Empowerment. It was able to grant them an improvement to their strength, allowing them to truly catch up to those influential figures at the top. If Mu Chen really forced them out of the Spiritual Light World, they would lose such an opportunity. To them, this was undoubtedly an enormous blow.

“However, you can hand over something that would make my heart move, if not…” said Mu Chen with a faint smile, his gaze swept over the trio with malicious intent.

“We’ve a thousand Spiritual Lights that we’ve snatched from those other fellows. We’ll give them to you. What do you say?” asked Wang Tong as he clenched his teeth.

Hearing those words, the three small groups of people that were starting to crowd around not too far away instantly became furious; however, they did not dare to say anything. Whether it was Mu Chen or the Wang trio, both of them were not people that they could deal with.

There wasn’t much of a fluctuation with Mu Chen’s complexion, as he only extended his palm.

A glow sparkled within Wang Tong’s hand, and a head-sized crystal ball appeared in a flash. The originally sparkling and translucent crystal was now emitting a fiery red glow, akin to a cluster of flaming suns burning with a blazing light within it.

Being filled with a thousand points of Spiritual Lights, it emitted a thick Spiritual Energy fluctuation, causing even the air to start emitting a humming noise.

The three small groups of people looked anxiously at the crystal ball. It was theirs...

However, Mu Chen did not care about them. He did not have any favorable impressions of the Wang brothers. He also did not have any favourable impressions of those narrow-minded fellows who tried to play tricks on him. Therefore, with a flip of his hand, he stored the crystal ball, without a slightest thought of returning it to Chen Peng and those groups.

Seeing his actions, Chen Peng and those groups could only squirm their lips, as they did not dare to criticise him. That was Mu Chen's spoils of war.

"You only have this? That's not enough." After storing the thousand points of Spiritual Lights, Mu Chen looked towards Wang Tong and said with an indifferent tone.

"You're still not satisfied with the Spiritual Lights! Mu Chen, don't be too much!" shouted the trio furiously as their complexions instantly changed.

Mu Chen start to walk towards them. With a clench of his fist, the crescent moon blade in front of the trio hummed and shot into his hand. With a casual shake of his hand, a swift and fierce blade light sliced a deep fissure into the ground in front of the three men, before staring at them with a slightly cold gaze.

Looking at Mu Chen's cold gaze, the trio's hearts felt slightly cold. Looking at each other, they finally sighed in dejection. Looked like they were truly unlucky this time. If they didn't offer something valuable, this fiend would not be willing to let them go.

"We have some information about the gathering points."

"I don't have that much interest in normal gathering points."

replied Mu Chen, while faintly wrinkling his brows.

“Hmph, the gathering point that we know about is being classified as an Extremely Dangerous Grade.” said Wang Tong furiously.

“An Extremely Dangerous Grade gathering point?” hearing Wang Tong’s words, An Ran and the two girls who had remained quiet for the entire time suddenly cried out in surprise. With a change of their expressions on their beautiful faces, they stared at Wang Tong and asked, “You guys actually knew of a gathering point of that grade?”

Mu Chen was slightly surprised as he stared at the trio. The current him had some understanding of this hunt, for example gathering points can be differentiate into strong and weak. The gathering points they had found till now were only Ordinary Grade gathering points. Above the Ordinary Grade, there was the Dangerous Grade and the Extremely Dangerous Grade.

Generally speaking, Dangerous Grade gathering points would have an existence equivalent to a Heavenly Transformation Late Stage, the Spirit General. Furthermore, the variance was not small. As for the Extremely Dangerous Grade, there was a high possibility of a Spirit King appearing.

Spirit King, one that possessed the terrifying strength of a Heavenly Completion Stage. Within the past few years, there had yet to be any news about a student being able to hunt a Spirit King.

“This information is indeed enough; however, one might not be able to put it to good use.”

Mu Chen faintly frowned. If he could get his hands on the Spiritual Light from a Spirit King, he would absolutely achieve the maximum benefit from this hunt. At that time, the result of the Spiritual Light Empowerment would definitely be described as perfect. However, he wasn’t a person to let a few good benefits get to his head. Although the Spiritual Light from a Spirit King was

extremely alluring, one must possess the capability to be able to enjoy the rewards. Mu Chen's current strength could be considered as having a great improvement; however, he knew that if he truly faced against a Heavenly Completion Stage, he would still be in danger.

"You're guts are too small. Without that little bit of courage, you still wish to shine in this hunt?" sneered Wang Lei.

Mu Chen shot a look at him. With an expression on his face, the crescent moon blade in his hand started to vibrate, before he pointed the sharp edge of the blade at Wang Lei. Upon seeing this, the latter immediately shut his mouth up.

"Explain this Extremely Dangerous Grade gathering point to me. With your capabilities, you three don't have to qualifications to enter that sort of place. There should be some things that you've yet to say, right?"asked Mu Chen as he looked towards Wang Tong.

Hearing those words, the corner of Wang Tong's mouth twitched. He never thought that Mu Chen's foresight would be that sharp. After hesitating for short period of time, he replied, "The number of Extremely Dangerous Grade gathering points in this Spiritual Light World can be counted with our fingers, as there were simply no students that dared to go near those kinds of places in the past few years."

Mu Chen nodded his head. Even if it was Shen Cangsheng, and Li Xuantong, that level of influential figures would be cautious, even fear a Spirit King. Not to even mention the normal students.

Due to that, there was no one who dared to take action against those Spirit Kings. This resulted in their followers increasing over time and getting stronger and stronger. So much so that even though the students' strength had increased, no one dared to make any plans to go against those high grade gathering points.

"The gathering point we're talking about isn't within those few

examples. This is because it was just graded as Extremely Dangerous this year."

Licking his lips, Wang Tong continued speaking while his eyes turned fiery, "The Spirit King at that gathering point was born only recently!"

"A newly born Spirit King?"

Shock appeared on the faces of An Ran and the two other girls. This kind of information truly had some importance. Although the current students did not have the means to deal with those Spirit Kings who had taken shape for many years, if it was only a newly born Spirit King, they would be able to have some level of possibility.

If this information was circulated, there would be no telling how many people would turn feverish over the Spiritual Light that the Spirit King would become at such a gathering point. This would be enough for them to take the risk.

Mu Chen faintly narrowed his eyes. A newly born Spirit King? No wonder why Wang Tong and his brothers would dare to take the risk to head to a gathering point of that grade. Mu Chen knew that even with the strength of the three brothers, it would not end smoothly if they faced a newly born Spirit King. Regardless of that, there was a slight possibility for success, after all.

For the sake of the Spiritual Light of a Spirit King's Level, it was worthwhile for the trio to risk a chance.

"How many people know about this information?" asked Mu Chen in a slightly deep voice.

Wang Tong faintly frowned and shook his head, as he replied, "How would I know? This bit of information was placed within the Spiritual Value Hall by the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Although the people who purchased it was extremely small, there would still be some people who would have an inclination to such

information.”

“That is to say that you guys aren’t the only ones who know about this information, right?”

Wang Tong nodded his head and replied, “ You should not wish to have exclusive information within this Spiritual Light World, as the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy wants everyone to compete over it. As if it would that easy to find such exclusively convenient information by yourself.”

Mu Chen smiled and extend his hands, “Hand me the location.”

Clenching his teeth and feeling incomparably painful, Wang Tong took out a red scroll and handed it over to Mu Chen. After he received it, he opened it up to find a more complex map. On the northeastern portion there was a region that was marked out with a blood red colour. On the side of that region were the words ‘Extremely Dangerous Grade’ written in a scarlet colour, sparkling with a chilling glint.

It was obviously impossible for the trio to create a counterfeit of such a thing. Furthermore, there should not be any mistake with the information that was circulated by the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Therefore, Mu Chen did not suspect anything and stored it in his Mustard Seed Bracelet.

“Thank you.” grinned Mu Chen as he waved his hands, throwing the crescent moon blade, which pierced the ground before the trio once again. After rearranging himself, he proceeded to turn around and leave.

“Wait!” Seeing that Mu Chen was about to leave, Wang Tong hurriedly shouted out.

Faintly tilting his head, Mu Chen looked at him and asked, “What? What else do you want?”

Seeing the look coming from Mu Chen, Wang Tong promptly shook his head and replied with a bitter laugh, “Just thinking

about discussing something with you. Since we're planning to head to the gathering point, why don't we collaborate? Since this information isn't exclusive, there will definitely be other strong groups eyeing it. I feel that, if we collaborate, the possibility to get our hands on it would greatly increase."

"You should trust us more; after all, we are still students of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. It's alright to play some some tricks; however, all of us know about what level we should not go to."

"If everyone works together, and if we were to get it in our hands, we can discuss how to split it then, what do you say?"

Mu Chen looked at the Wang Tong, who was earnestly staring at himself. Behind the latter, Wang Lei and Wang Zhong twitched their mouths, but did not say anything, as it was obvious that Wang Tong was in charge.

After faintly muttering to himself for quite a while, he nodded his head. The Wang brothers' strengths were not bad. If they hadn't tried to pull some strings in the dark, they would, indeed, be some pretty good helpers.

"If you guys want to come along, I won't reject it. However, I will be the one in charge of things from now on. If you guys aren't willing, you can leave by yourselves. On a side note, do not do anything that will cross me. If not, this won't end with something as simple as me squeezing an information report out of you guys."

Mu Chen shot a deep look at Wang Tong before signalling Luo Li, An Ran and the girls with his hand. Turning around, he proceeded to leave.

Looking at each other, the trio gave a bitter laugh before hurriedly following him from behind.

Table of Contents

- The Great Ruler
  - Synopsis
  - Acknowledgement
  - Chapter 201 – Breakthrough
  - Chapter 202 – Heavenly Fusion Stage
  - Chapter 203 – Huo Feng
  - Chapter 204 – Confrontation
  - Chapter 205 – Celestial Spirit Lotus
  - Chapter 206 – Xu Qingqing
  - Chapter 207 – Nine-layered Pagoda
  - Chapter 208 – Seizing of the lotus seed
  - Chapter 209 – Experts of the Heavenly Ranking
  - Chapter 210 – Training in the Deity Tier Spiritual Art
  - Chapter 211 – Comprehend
  - Chapter 212 – Two Slaps
  - Chapter 213 – Two Powerful Figures
  - Chapter 214 – Requesting a Battle
  - Chapter 215 – Spirit Battle Stage
  - Chapter 216 – Pact of Three Moves
  - Chapter 217 – Freshmens Number 1 vs. Heavenly Rankings Rank 2
  - Chapter 218 – Four Gods Constellation Scripture VS Profound Sky Divine Technique
  - Chapter 219 – My Turn to Attack
  - Chapter 220 – Reappearance of the Demonic Lotus
  - Chapter 221 – The Luo God Clan
  - Chapter 222 – Eastern Heavens Realm
  - Chapter 223 – Flame Emperor
  - Chapter 224 – Heaven Rank Mission
  - Chapter 225 – Spirit Treasury Hunting
  - Chapter 226 – Northern Heavens Continent
  - Chapter 227 – White Dragon City
  - Chapter 228 – Spiritual Array Seed
  - Chapter 229 – White Dragon Jade Pillar
  - Chapter 230 – Competition
  - Chapter 231 – Bai Xuan

Chapter 232 – White Dragon Hillock
Chapter 233 – Night Attack
Chapter 234 – Reverse Killing
Chapter 235 – None Left
Chapter 236 – Demonic Dragon Palace
Chapter 237 – Lion Tiger Regiment
Chapter 238 – Emergence of the Spirit Treasury
Chapter 239 – Fire Spirit Lotus
Chapter 240 – Encounter
Chapter 241 – Fire Celestial Lotus
Chapter 242 – Refining the Lotus Seed
Chapter 243 – Breakthrough
Chapter 244 – Draconic Spirit Bracelets
Chapter 245 – Twin Dragon Suppression
Chapter 246 – Exchange
Chapter 247 – Stone Guardian
Chapter 248 – Black Basin
Chapter 249 – The Power of the Stone Statue
Chapter 250 – Forced Out
Chapter 251 – Sovereign Appears
Chapter 252 – Black Dragon, White Dragon
Chapter 253 – Dense Water Spiritual Pearl
Chapter 254 – Black Demonic Pillar
Chapter 255 – Bai Xuans True Strength
Chapter 256 – Space Shattered
Chapter 257 – Primordial Ominous Artifact
Chapter 258 – Suppressed
Chapter 259 – Wont Die
Chapter 260 – Power of the Ominous
Chapter 261 – Bitter Blood Battle
Chapter 262 – Reinforcements
Chapter 263 – Shen Cangsheng
Chapter 264 – Returning
Chapter 265 – Handing Over the Mission Report
Chapter 266 – Wheel
Chapter 267 – Preparation
Chapter 268 – The Visit
Chapter 269 – Ten Spiritual Arrays
Chapter 270 – Spiritual Lotus Surrounds Demons Gate

Chapter 271 – Taking the Arrays
Chapter 272 – The Might of Ten Spiritual Arrays
Chapter 273 – Hidden
Chapter 274 – Entering the Lightning Territory Once Again
Chapter 275 – Seventh Level of the Lightning Territory
Chapter 276 – Breaking the Seal
Chapter 277 – Foreign Fiends
Chapter 278 – Quasi-Heavenly Transformation Stage
Chapter 279 – Dragon Soaring Art
Chapter 280 – Eighth Level
Chapter 281 – Bald Old Man
Chapter 282 – One Move
Chapter 283 – 13,000 beads
Chapter 284 – Blood Essence is obtained!
Chapter 285 – Divine Black Thunder Tribulation Appears Again!
Chapter 286 – Tribulation Succeeded
Chapter 287 – Slumber
Chapter 288 – Boiling
Chapter 289 – Dean Tai Cang
Chapter 290 – Begin
Chapter 291 – Spiritual Light Realm
Chapter 292 – Gathering Point
Chapter 293 – Join Hands
Chapter 294 – Eliminate
Chapter 295 – Taking them down by ourselves
Chapter 296 – The Three Brothers of the Wang Family
Chapter 297 – Price
Chapter 298 – Battling the Three Wangs
Chapter 299 – Might of the Thunder God Physique
Chapter 300 – Extremely Dangerous Grade